



# DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 04

*Su Yue Xi*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

**Su Yue Xi**

(火星引力)

# Synopsis

---

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301 – The Great Ocean Surge

---

Rumble...

The sound of the waves became more and more violent, as if something massive was going to happen in the ocean. With the continuous rolling of the ocean waves, the ocean's temperature was constantly dropping.

Actually, the ocean's temperature was always changing. For example, the temperature in the morning, noon, evening, and night were all different, but the difference wasn't big. There had never been such a significant drop in temperature before. Also, the temperature was constantly dropping, and it didn't seem to stop.

“Master Blissful, it's late in the afternoon now, and the temperature is much lower than usual, and it's constantly dropping. This has never happened before.”

Xu Neng said with a shocked expression.

“I have never experienced this either. Brother Chen Jiang, since there is an abnormality in the ocean, I'm going to find out what actually happened. As for you, take advantage of this chaotic situation and leave this place.”

After Master Blissful said that, he immediately disappeared from the scene. At the same time, Xu Neng cupped his fist toward Jiang Chen, and disappeared from the auction hall.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan exchanged glances; they could both find the same shocked look in each other's eyes.

“Little Chen, what should we do? Are we really going to leave now?”

Han Yan looked at Jiang Chen and asked.

“No, we can't leave yet, something big is going to happen here, and we might be able to find a stroke of luck.”

Big Yellow said.

“We've offended so many people, we will face a lot of trouble if we remain here.”

Han Yan said.

“Don't worry. With me and Big Yellow's current strength, we will be able to protect ourselves. It's impossible for Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong to kill us. Come, let's go check out what is happening in the ocean.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. With his and Big Yellow's strength right now, they had no fear of any Early Combat Soul warriors. Since something unusual was happening within the ocean, something big might happen soon. Therefore, there was no way they could

leave at this point of time.

Within the isolated room in the auction hall, Master Blissful suddenly appeared in a ghostly manner. The man in black was still sitting on the rattan chair with a smile on his face. He was still thinking about the funny scene caused by Big Yellow.

“Young master Nangong, here are three Nine Soul Restoration Pills. According to our deal, you’ll pay me three drops of Nine Solar Holy Water.”

Master Blissful handed the Nine Soul Restoration Pills to the man in black.

“Don’t worry. I, Nangong Wentian honor my own words, I naturally won’t deny our deal.”

Nangong Wentian casually waved his hand and retrieved a golden colored jade bottle. The contents within were exactly the same as the one that appeared in the auction; three drops of Nine Solar Holy Water.

Master Blissful’s eyes lit up, and he quickly took the Nine Solar Holy Water. He would never auction away this kind of treasure him. All he did was provide a place for Nangong Wentian to auction it, exchange it for three Nine Soul Restoration Pills. A deal like this was insanely valuable.

“Young master Nangong, since there is an abnormality in the

ocean, where are you going next?”

Master Blissful asked.

“Daddy was hurt by a Soul Devouring Barbaric Beast, and there is barbaric poison within my body right now, and it’s constantly devouring my soul. What I need to do now is heal my soul as quickly as possible and get rid of the barbaric poison. The abnormality in the ocean has nothing to do with me, I only need to enter secluded cultivation here and absorb the Nine Soul Restoration Pills.”

Nangong Wentian said. When he mentioned the Soul Devouring Barbaric Beast, he couldn’t help but gnash his teeth in anger.

“It’s better that way. This place is a forbidden place within the manor, and besides me, no one else is allowed to come here and disturb. You can just stay here and cultivate in peace.”

Master Blissful had learned about Nangong Wentian’s condition before this, so he wasn’t surprised about Nangong Wentian’s decision. This was also the reason why Nangong Wentian wanted to exchange his Nine Solar Holy Water for the Nine Soul Restoration Pills. If he couldn’t find the pills in time, the wound on his soul wouldn’t be able to heal, and that would be a deadly threat to him.

After Master Blissful left, Nangong Wentian took off his bamboo hat and revealed a handsome face. He had a pair of straight eyebrows than slanted upwards, and a pair of clear eyes. Together



with his sharp face and strong body, he gave off a manly aura.

He looked like he was in his mid-twenties, but the aura leaking from his body wasn't any weak. Although he wasn't a Combat Soul warrior, he was a peak Divine Core warrior.

“Fuck! That damn Soul Devouring Barbaric Beast; it's killing daddy!”

Nangong Wentian cursed. His words instantly ruined his perfect image.

Right at this moment, everyone stood on top of a place with an open view of the entire Blissful Island. They all look out at the rocking ocean, and each of them wore the same shocked expressions.

In the far distance, the border between the ocean and the sky, the crowds could see the heavy ocean surges soaring into the sky. It covered a huge area, and it looked like a massive, long dragon. The ocean waves slammed into each other, constantly producing deafening explosive sounds.

The entire scene resembled a coming doomsday. The Blissful Island was floating on the ocean, and it was violently shaking. It looked like it could be destroyed at any time by this incredible disaster.

“Oh heavens! Is the ocean's doomsday coming? What is

happening?”

“Why are there such large waves in the ocean? Is something big going to happen? I’ve never seen anything like this before!”

“I’m sure something big is going to happen. Otherwise, such abnormality wouldn’t be happening. But, I am wondering, will there be any danger?”

.....

Everyone were shocked, no one here had every experience such an abnormal scene before. Feeling the ground underneath their feet constantly trembling, many warriors started feeling insecure.

Soon, violent storms covered all paths to the Blissful Island; all the return paths were shut. The ocean was rocking even more violently now, and countless dragon like waterspouts could be seen absolutely everywhere. These waterspouts were extremely powerful! In just an instant, many pitiful ocean creatures were pulled out from the bottom of the ocean, and all of them were instantly killed by the waterspouts. It was a frightening scene.

“We’re dead, all return paths are blocked off! With such a great ocean surge, any Divine Core warriors will be instantly killed!”

“We can’t leave now, only Combat Soul warriors have the ability to travel through such a great surge! For the Late Divine Core warriors, even if they aren’t killed by the waterspouts, they will

lose their orientation within!”

“What’s going on? Why is the temperature getting lower and lower? And why doesn’t it seem like it’s about to stop dropping any time soon?”

.....

Everyone’s expressions changed, this great surge was simply too devastating. In all directions, all return paths had been sealed shut by the chaotic ocean.

“Abnormality is always accompanied by something strange. With such a great ocean turmoil, something big is bound to happen, something extraordinary is definitely going to appear!”

Jiang Chen said with a serious expression.

“There might be a mighty treasure!”

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up. When he mentioned treasures, his spirit was immediately boosted.

Rumble...

It was as if heaven and earth was spinning around. The entire sky was filled with ocean waves, and the endless waves kept slamming into the Blissful Island like huge mountains. Some of the people

with good eyesight even saw an island not far away from the Blissful Island collapsing because of the gigantic waves.

Right at this moment, countless enormous ocean waves were rolling toward the Blissful Island, and it seemed like the island was soon going to be destroyed.

“Not good! The waves are too powerful, if all of them hit the island at the same time, it will be completely destroyed!”

Someone exclaimed.

“Haa!”

Right at this critical moment, Master Blissful let out a loud shout. He leapt into the sky, and started floating in mid-air. After that, he immediately transformed into a huge golden fish. The entire body was covered with golden colored scales, it was 30 meters long, and it looked like a gigantic golden mountain. A pair of mighty wings could also be seen on its back.

This was the Golden Glory Fish, Master Blissful's true form! It was a terrifying creature!

Under the crowds' terrified eyes, countless golden beams shout out from Master Blissful's body. In an instant, these golden beams weaved together into a massive golden net which covered the entire Blissful Island.

At the same time, the great ocean waves started slamming into the island from all directions, causing the gigantic golden net to violently shake. But even so, the oceans couldn't destroy the golden net at all.

“What incredible strength! Master Blissful alone blocked off all the great ocean waves!”

“This is Master Blissful's true form, it's truly the most powerful existence in the ocean! Very terrifying!”

“Master Blissful is a Mid Combat Soul warrior, no ordinary men can compare with him. He alone is more than enough to block off all these gigantic ocean waves! We'll be safe on this island!”

.....

Master Blissful had shown his mightiness, shocking every single person who witnessed it. The overbearing reputation of this strong existence from the ocean was not just for show.

“All my friends who came from far, since there's an unusual happening in the ocean, and since no one has any idea what is going on, for now, the Blissful Island will be your temporary shelter. I'm going to enter the ocean and find out what's happening, so I need all of your help. Please keep injecting your Yuan energy into this net, it will help block the gigantic waves. Also, because the temperature is constantly dropping, I'm sure these waves won't last for long, as the ocean will be frozen when the temperature drops to a freezing point.”

Master Blissful's voice was loud like the roaring thunder as it swept across the entire island, and was heard by everyone.

After saying that, Master Blissful moved his gigantic body and flew through the gigantic golden net, catapulting himself into the massive ocean waves. As a Golden Glory Fish, water was his natural habitat, and with his Combat Soul cultivation base, nothing could hurt him while he swam across the massive waves.

But what everyone really respected was his courage. No one had any idea what caused the abnormality in the ocean. Entering the ocean and trying to figure out what was happening was a tremendous risk. There were quite a number of Combat Soul warriors here, but only Master Blissful had the courage to do so.

“Everyone, let's block these gigantic waves together!”

The Golden Lion shouted. He became the first one to inject Yuan energy into the gigantic net.

After that, all the other Combat Soul warriors started contributing as well. Currently, there were rogue warriors, strange cultivators, and great warriors from different powers in the Eastern Continent gathered on the Blissful Island, and more than thirty of them were Combat Soul warriors. With these Combat Soul warriors' cooperation, the Blissful Island's defense would be rock solid.

“Let us contribute as well!”

A Divine Core warrior shouted as he started injecting his Yuan energy into the gigantic golden net. Right at this moment, the safety of the Blissful Island was the responsibility of every single person present, so no one dared hesitate. If the gigantic golden net was broken, the Blissful Island would definitely be destroyed by the devastating ocean waves, and all of them would be dragged into the waterspouts. Countless people would then die, and nobody wanted to see that happen. Therefore, everyone worked together with all their strength.

# Chapter 302 – Fighting Combat Soul Warriors

---

The huge ocean waves were getting more and more violent, and they carried a devastating force that destroyed everything that got in their way. Many weak ocean demons were torn to pieces by the tremendous force. For every single creature living in the ocean, this was a disaster that came without any alarm.

The Blissful Island's atmosphere was extremely panicked. Everyone were fully unleashing their Yuan energy, and injecting it into the gigantic golden net, trying to block the gigantic waves that were repeatedly slamming into the island.

Superpowers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan had gotten themselves involved as well. Because of the critical moment, the temporarily put aside their killing intent toward Jiang Chen. Of course, this didn't mean they had forgotten the hatred. Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong looked at Jiang Chen, and they even locked onto on his aura completely. But, this wasn't the time to strike.

Everyone were unified in fighting against the gigantic waves. If they attacked now, it would definitely disturb everyone's effort, and make every single person on this island throw their hatred at them. Although the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan were both superpowers, they didn't want to become targeted by everyone, as that would simply do them no good. What everyone were facing right now concerned all their lives.

“Little Chen, looks like those two old fools don't want to let us go



easily.”

Han Yan clearly felt the hostile gazes from Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong. Besides these two men, there was another pair of eyes filled with hostility looking at them; it was Mao Sheng from the Qingyi Sect.

“Don’t worry, they won’t dare strike now.”

Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulders with a carefree expression on his face.

“Kaka, I’ll treat them some fresh stock later.”

Big Yellow burst into laughter.

Recalling Big Yellow’s previous actions, Jiang Chen and Han Yan’s expressions changed. They realized they had been underestimating Big Yellow after what happened in the auction.

“Big Yellow, how did you do that? It was so loud and stinky, simply invincible.”

Han Yan gave Big Yellow a thumbs up.

“This master dog has a lot of special abilities; you’ll learn about them when time comes.”

Big Yellow said while holding his head up high, as if letting out a stinking fart was something to be really proud about.

“Big Yellow, if your abilities are similar to the one you just showed us, I don’t think we want to know.”

Jiang Chen quickly replied, Big Yellow’s special abilities really made him speechless.

Bang, bang, bang...

The raging waves repeatedly slammed into the island. All the warriors stood on the island, looking out into the ocean. But, because of the endless waves, none of them could clearly see what was going on outside.

There was one thing they could clearly feel though, and that was the sky which had become completely dark. The ocean breeze was extremely shivering, and the temperature was still dropping at a significant rate.

Three hours later, the power of the raging waves had reached their maximum level. Master Blissful had left three hours ago, and still hadn’t come back. The sky was completely dark, but the gigantic waves still gave light to the Blissful Island.

Papapa...

As the time passed by, hard ice cubes started forming into ocean

and mixing in together with the waves.

“Look, there are ice cubes in the water! The ocean temperature has dropped to the level where ice has begun forming! If the temperature keeps dropping, the entire ocean is going to be frozen, and the waves will stop coming!”

Someone shouted out.

“The ocean has never frozen before, and not once in history has the temperature experienced such a big fluctuation! The gigantic waves have struck repeatedly for the longest time in history, seemingly without end. I wonder what’s going to happen.”

The people’s expressions were real ugly right now. The most frightening thing was the unknown; it simply caused these people to feel restless and uneasy.

Midnight had come, and the gigantic waves were slowly beginning to settle down. A thick layer of ice was formed on top of the ocean outside the Blissful Island, and the temperature was still dropping. Some warriors with weaker bodies were forced to resist the cold with their Yuan Energy. If they didn’t, they would feel the chill go straight into their marrows. The cold ocean breeze blew in their faces, and it was so freezing that it felt like someone was using a knife to cut their faces.

The second morning, the ocean had finally settle down, and the giant waves were gone. The ocean had become a pure white world; the entire ocean surface was frozen.

“Oh heavens! The entire ocean is frozen! The temperature has dropped to such a low level!

“This has never happened before! Let me find out how thick the ice is.”

Someone flew toward the ocean and punched the ice. Since the giant waves were gone, the atmosphere around the island had become much better, and the golden net had been retracted.

Pop!

It was an Early Divine Core warrior who punched the ice. His punched caused a huge crater to appear on the surface of the option. Shocking, this powerful punch didn't reveal any water underneath the ice. On the bottom of the crater, there was still only ice.

“The ice is incredibly thick! Don't tell me the entire ocean is frozen?”

The man was shocked by the result.

“What caused all this? Master Blissful has yet to return... I wonder if something bad happened to him?”

Someone said. Many people started worrying about Master

Blissful as they recalled how dreadful the raging ocean was last night.

“Master Blissful’s cultivation base is mighty, and his true form is a formidable Golden Glory Fish; he will be alright. The priority now is; what are we going to do? Since the giant waves are gone, we could just leave the Blissful Island and return to the continent.”

“Precisely. Although everything seems to have settled down, the entire ocean is still frozen. This is a great mystery, and I’m sure something big is going to happen.”

“This might be caused by the appearance of a precious treasure. If I left just like that, it would be a great pity.”

.....

Everyone’s tongues were wagging. The storm was now gone, and this meant there was no longer any danger. Under normal circumstances, everyone would be leaving right now and return to where they came from. But, it didn’t seem like anyone were leaving.

As long as the person wasn’t an idiot, he would be able to relate the ocean’s abnormality to something great. If the abnormality was caused by the appearance of a precious treasure, leaving now would mean missing the opportunity to get it.

“Little bastard Chen Jiang, come here and face your death!”

A furious shout as loud as a clap of thunder suddenly sounded out. Within a split second, Shangguan Chong, like a wild tiger, dashed toward Jiang Chen.

“He’s done for! Shangguan Chong and Ye Xiao are going to attack, this Chen Jiang is done for! Since Master Blissful isn’t here, no one will be able to protect him!”

“It’s finally happening! I really want to know if this Chen Jiang has the ability to fight a Combat Soul warrior!”

Everyone were focused on Shangguan Chong’s attack. During the auction, the main focus had been on the conflict between Jiang Chen and the Myriad Sword Sect, Shangguan Clan, and Qingyi Sect.

Especially Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong. Both of them had suffered from the most disgusting insult. When thinking back at what happened in the auction hall, the crowds still felt an urge to throw up. That’s why it wasn’t hard to imagine how Shangguan Chong and Ye Xiao felt right now.

Shangguan Chong’s attack contained a lot of hatred. In just the blink of an eye, he arrived in front of Jiang Chen. A very large phantom like hand carrying a devastating force was unleashed toward Jiang Chen.

“Humph! Want to kill me? Do you really think you have the ability to do so?”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He didn't feel any fear toward the incoming attack. In an instant, he countered with the True Dragon Palm, unleashing it toward Shangguan Chong's attack. Jiang Chen wouldn't be Shangguan Chong's match if he was as he was when he first arrived at the Blissful Island, but during his stay in the Blissful Manor, he had absorbed all the souls he had, giving him another 600 Dragon Marks, for a total of 2,200 Dragon Marks. His current cultivation base was more than enough to fight an Early Combat Soul warrior. Although it was difficult for Jiang Chen to kill Shangguan Chong, he wouldn't have any problems defending himself. Also, with Shangguan Chong's ability, it was impossible for him to kill Jiang Chen.

Bang!

Devastating energies swept across the scene, and a huge amount of sparks exploded out from the center of the collision. Jiang Chen's body only swayed a little; he still stood in the same spot.

“What?!”

Shangguan Chong cried out in disbelief. It was as if he had just seen a ghost in front of him. Although he didn't use a powerful combat skill just now, the force of a Combat Soul warrior was not something a Mid Divine Core junior could defend against. However, this young man in front of him had just block his attack, and it didn't seem he like was injured at all!

“Amazing! Just what is Chen Jiang's actual background? With

just a mere Mid Divine Core cultivation base, he actually blocked a Combat Soul warrior's attack? I wouldn't believe it had I not seen it with my own eyes!"

"Can you guys feel that? Chen Jiang is much stronger than he was when he first arrived here! When Mao Sheng attacked him, Chen Jiang was no match for him at all, and he needed help from Old Man Ling Shan! But only a few days later, he became able to defend himself from Shangguan Chong's attack!"

"He really is a monster from the younger generation! It doesn't look like Shangguan Chong will easily be able to kill him!"

"But the situation is still very dangerous. You see, it isn't only Shangguan Chong who wants to kill Chen Jian, Ye Xiao and Mao Sheng are both eyeing him as well. If the three of them attacks together, Chen Jiang will be killed for sure!"

.....

There was no man here who wasn't shocked by Jiang Chen's incredible strength! With just a Mid Divine Core cultivation base, he was able to fight a Combat Soul warrior! This was simply something completely beyond their common sense. Under normal circumstances, the gap between a Divine Core warrior and a Combat Soul warriors was simply too gigantic. There was simply no way a Divine Core warrior could compare with a Combat Soul warrior!

There was a huge gap between the realms, and there was no way



anyone could step across this gap. But not only had this young man stepped across this huge gap, he did it with just a Mid Divine Core cultivation base! This also posted a question in the minds of the ones watching; if this young man was a Late Divine Core warrior, would he be able to kill a Combat Soul warrior?

“Old fool, want to kill me with such a weak attack? Are you dreaming?”

Jiang Chen said, his voice loud and clear.

“Arrogant and ignorant junior, don’t be so proud of yourself just because you have some talent! I’ll teach you the difference between the Divine Core realm and the Combat Soul realm, and I’ll let you know how frightening my true strength is!”

Shangguan Chong finally stopped underestimating Jiang Chen. He unleashed the energy of a Combat Soul warrior without any restraints.

“His life doesn’t belong to you alone, he is mine as well!”

Right at this moment, Ye Xiao shouted out as well. He flew over from another direction. There was now a Mid Divine Core junior versus two Combat Soul warriors. They would lose all face if this was heard by the public. However, this wasn’t all; Mao Sheng from the Qingyi Sect suddenly flew over from another direction as well.

## Chapter 303 – Nangong Wentian

---

Three Combat Soul warriors, and all of them were Sect Elders from superpowers in the Eastern Continent. All of them attacking a Mid Divine Core junior at the same time was indeed an act that would cause them to lose a lot of face, but none of them care about that at all. Their hatred of Jiang Chen had reached a level where they couldn't care less about their face.

In Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong's minds, losing face meant nothing at all, because they had already suffered huge blows to their faces. In fact, in order to regain some of the face, they had to kill Jiang Chen and tear that dog into a thousand pieces!

“Damn it, these three old fools are really shameless, they really want to attack us together!”

Big Yellow cursed.

“Brother Yan, stand back, let me and Big Yellow fight them.”

Jiang Chen told Han Yan.

Han Yan was really angry at the Combat Soul trio, but he still moved aside. He was only a peak Mid Divine Core warrior, he had yet to reach the Late Divine Core realm. Although he had the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline, there was no way he could be as formidable as Jiang Chen was. If he was a Late Divine Core warrior, he might be able to fight a Combat Soul warrior, but for now, he was completely no match for them. Therefore, there was

no room for him in this fight.

But Big Yellow was different. After he devoured the Flaming Stallion's demon soul, he broke through to the Late Divine Core realm. With his mighty Dragon Horse bloodline, he now possessed the ability to fight ordinary Combat Soul warriors.

Three powerful Combat Soul warriors attacked at the same time; three formidable attacks charged at them from three different directions. It looked like they were trying to crush Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in an instant.

“Despicable!”

On the other side, Old Man Ling Shan also cursed. Even the Golden Lion felt shame for the trio. But, Old Man Ling Shan didn't help directly. After all, there was no one from the Eastern Continent who really wanted to offend superpowers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, and Old Man Ling Shan was just a rogue cultivator.

Boom!

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's auras connected to each other, and both attacked at the same time. The duo unleashed incredibly powerful energy. Jiang Chen attacked Mao Sheng using the Nine Murdering Flood Dragon, unleashing three lively Flood Dragons towards him. At the same time, Jiang Chen also unleashed the True Dragon Palm, which grabbed toward Ye Xiao. On the other side, Big Yellow was also dauntless. A golden beam rushed out

from his head, and he charged toward Shangguan Chong.

“That’s my grandson’s combat skill! Little bastard, I’m going to cut you into pieces!”

Mao Sheng’s eyes both turned red. He recognized the skill unleashed by Jiang Chen, it was Mao Fang’s, his grandson’s combat skill. This really pissed him off and made him feel an urge to vomit blood. He could only release his fury after killing Jiang Chen.

Bang!

Three Combat Soul warriors attacking two Divine Core warriors! Facing these combined attacks, even Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who had monstrous abilities couldn’t defend themselves at all. Their attacks were destroyed in an instant. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were both knocked at least 30 meters away before they could regain their control. Under such massive power, they had suffered quite a huge shock, causing their qi and blood to roll over and over.

“Damn it, these three old fools are so ridiculous! How can they attack us together?!”

Big Yellow gnashed his teeth in anger.

“We don’t have any reason to a fight a one versus one fight, but with all three of them attacking us together, it’ll be really difficult

to win this fight.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow felt gloomy, but they had no idea how shocked the trio was, especially Mao Sheng. Mao Sheng had fought Jiang Chen a few days ago, and Jiang Chen was absolutely no match for him at that time. But now, Jiang Chen’s incredible cultivation progress had really shocked him.

“Damn it, I never thought this despicable puppy would be so strong as well! I wonder what species this dog is, he already has the strength to fight Combat Soul warriors! I’ve underestimated him.”

“This is insane! Not only was that man and dog not killed in an instant while fighting three Combat Soul warriors at the same time, they also look like they still have the strength to fight back!”

“We’ve witnessed Chen Jiang’s incredible strength, but I never thought this dog would be so frightening as well! But, the man and dog duo... why is this giving me a familiar feeling?”

.....

A lot of people were shocked by what they saw. This duo was incredibly formidable, even three Combat Soul warriors couldn’t kill them! Such an insane duo was extremely rare, and some even began feeling like they knew this duo from somewhere, but they just couldn’t relate them to anything.

“That guy and dog aren’t easy to deal with. Let’s attack together with full force and kill them as soon as possible.”

Ye Xiao said in a cold tone.

“Fine!”

Mao Shen shouted. He became the first one to dash toward Jiang Chen. At the same time, Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong unleashed their mighty energy and followed behind.

The trio’s current attack was much fiercer than the previous one. This caused Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s faces to darken.

Right at this moment, a dazzling beam shot out from the Blissful Manor. It was a beam unleashed by a combat weapon, and it looked like a giant ruler.

When the beam appeared, a man dashed out from the manor at the same time. Under the eyes of the crowds, a young man dressed in black flew towards the scene while holding a nearly 3 meter long gigantic azure ruler in his hand.

The young man in black didn’t say anything. He raised the gigantic ruler in his hand into the air, and forcefully swung it at Mao Sheng, who was the first one to dash toward Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

A swooshing sound was heard from the gigantic ruler. Mao Sheng didn't dare neglect this attack, he quickly blocked.

Boom!

The ruler carried a formidable force, and Mao Sheng was knocked back a few dozen steps before he could stabilize his body.

After knocking Mao Sheng back with a single attack, the man arrived next to Jiang Chen. Right at this moment, everyone were staring at him as his dark hair and clothes danced in the wind. He was about 2.6 meters tall, his face was pure like jade, and he had two bright tiger-like eyes; he was exceedingly handsome.

“Where did this young man come from? He looks so overbearing!”

“He has such formidable energy! Although he is only a Peak Divine Core warrior, he just knocked back an Early Combat Soul warrior! He's a rare genius!”

“What's going on today? Why are there suddenly so many geniuses? This man looks like he is helping Chen Jiang! What a daring man, he actually dares fight three superpowers!”

.....

The sudden appearance of the man in black gave rise to yet another uproar. Everyone stared at the man in black, admiring his overbearing energy.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were also looking at the man in black. They didn't know this guy, but since he was helping them at a critical moment, he had left a good impression on Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

This man in black looked incomparably upright, and he wore a resolute expression. He was like a genius who came from a sect following the [righteous path](#).

The man in black swept his eyes over the scene. After that, with a loud and clear voice, he said, "Fuck your mothers! Three old farts bullying a junior? This is ridiculous!"

Oh heavens!

The crowds immediately felt a dizzying sensation. Before the man in black talked, he had actually given them an impression that he was an overbearing peerless genius; a man who walked the righteous path! But after he talked, the impression he had given them was immediately shattered.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes as well. The words that came out from this guy's mouth completely reversed his image.



“The fuck? He’s actually a man similar to us!”

Big Yellow staggered and nearly fell down from the sky.

“Who are you? I advise you, you better not put your hand in the Myriad Sword Sect’s matters!”

Ye Xiao stared at the man in black and said. He could tell how extraordinary this young was. In the entire Eastern Continent, there was only a handful of geniuses who could knock a Combat Soul warrior back with mere Divine Core cultivation bases.

“Daddy’s name is Nangong Wentian! I don’t know who the Myriad Sword Sect is, but this Chen Jiang is my friend, and I won’t let you kill my friend!”

Nangong Wentian replied in an imposing manner. The giant ruler in his hand was dazzling like the stars, giving an impression that there was no one who could pass him.

After saying that, Nangong Wentian turned to Jiang Chen and cupped his fist, “Brother Chen Jiang, thank you for the Nine Soul Restoration Pills, you’ve saved my life! From now onwards; you are my friend!”

Nangong Wentian said with a voice that was loud and clear. After he had witnessed Jiang Chen’s performance in the auction hall through the crystal ball, he had decided to befriend Jiang Chen. It wasn’t only because Jiang Chen had concocted the Nine Soul

Restoration Pills and saved his life, but also because Jiang Chen's style really suited his taste.

Hearing what he said, everyone finally understood. This young man was the man who took out the three Nine Solar Holy Water drops and exchanged them for three Nine Soul Restoration Pills.

“Where did this Nangong Wentian come from? Why have I never heard of him?”

“I too have never heard of him in the Eastern Continent before. Supposedly, a genius like him should be pretty well-known.”

“The Nangong name is pretty rare in the Eastern Continent. I've never heard of him before, but this guy sure has amazing strength!”

.....

Nangong Wentian immediately became the center of attention upon appearing. This also mean Jiang Chen got another helper. With this, it wouldn't be easy for Ye Xiao and the other two Combat Soul warriors to kill Jiang Chen.

“Humph! Another reckless guy! Since you insist, we'll kill you as well!”

Shangguan Chong coldly harrumphed. He was consumed by extreme killing intent and even the strongest person wouldn't be

able to stop him. Furthermore, Nangong Wentian might have more Nine Solar Holy Water! If Shangguan Chong could kill him, not only would he be able to obtain three drops of Nine Solar Holy Water from Jiang Chen, he might even be able to get more of them from Nangong Wentian.

“Kill them!”

Ye Xiao furiously shouted. He waved both his hands and attacked Jiang Chen. At the same time, Shangguan Chong and Mao Sheng attacked as well.

“Big Yellow, don’t hide anymore, let’s fight them with all our strength!”

Jiang Chen was already angry because of the attack. Since he had Nangong Wentian’s help, he could finally fight them one at the time.

Roar!

Big Yellow let out a wild roar toward the skies. His tiny puppy body suddenly expanded into a big majestic golden dog, making him look like a mighty adult bull. With his head pointed toward Shangguan Chong, he immediately rammed toward him.

Big Yellow’s transformation stunned a lot of people. But soon after, someone finally managed to relate the duo in front of them to that legendary group!

## Chapter 304 – A Certain Death Situation

---

The more these crowds looked at Big Yellow, the more they felt something familiar about him. Even if they hadn't met him before, then they must have heard about him somewhere before. After all, a majestic dog like this was extremely rare!

“You idiot! Daddy asked you not to hide your power, not to reveal your real identity!”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes. He really wished he could give this stupid dog a big slap right now, this dog was definitely inviting trouble! They were in a really dangerous situation where they had to fight three Combat Soul warriors, and Big Yellow just revealed his true identity. They were for sure going to attract more enemies.

“What a majestic big yellow dog! But, why does he seem so familiar? Is he the one from Inferno Hell?”

“Not long ago, someone returned from Inferno Hell and brought news about what happened in there. A young man whose name is Jiang Chen killed a lot of people in Inferno Hell. Countless Divine Core warriors died because of him, and even the genius Yang Shuo from the Myriad Sword Sect, and Shangguan Wei from the Shangguan Clan were killed by him! There is also a majestic big yellow dog who always follows that Jiang Chen!”

“Chen Jiang, Jiang Chen, I knew it! This Chen Jiang is that Jiang Chen from Inferno Hell. A young man and a big yellow dog, it's an

absolutely unique duo!”

“That’s right! They said Jiang Chen was about 17 years old, and that matches with this Chen Jiang in front of us! Furthermore, it’s incredibly rare for a young man to have such formidable combat strength, and there’s also an iconic big yellow dog next to him!”

.....

Many people cried out in surprise. Jiang Chen’s name had spread across the entire Eastern Continent, he was so famous that most warriors had heard about him. But, because many of them hadn’t met him in person, and the fact that most warriors who had returned from Inferno Hell were currently injured or resting, they first thing they did after returning was healing themselves. Therefore, they didn’t participate in the trade fair. Those were the reasons why Jiang Chen hadn’t been discovered until now.

But when Big Yellow revealed his true identity, as well as the fact that Jiang Chen had only reversed his real name, many people correctly guessed their real identity.

“Oh heavens, he is the young devil king who caused that great disturbance in Inferno Hell! No wonder he is so strong!”

“No wonder he dared fight the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, it’s because he already killed the Myriad Sword Sect’s genius Yang Shuo, and the Shangguan Clan’s elder Shangguan Wei back in Inferno Hell! Both superpowers have sworn to kill him, and the enmity between them had already

reached an unresolvable stage! That's why Jiang Chen didn't show any politeness to the two superpowers!"

"This young man is simply a legend of this era! He could even thrive in a place such as Inferno Hell! But, he is extremely reckless... it looks like today's matters won't be resolved easily."

.....

There was not a single person at the scene who wasn't shaken by Jiang Chen's real identity. Everyone threw examining looks at Jiang Chen, trying to figure out what was so special about this ruthless young man.

"You're not Chen Jiang, you are Jiang Chen!"

Shangguan Chong who was getting ready to attack temporarily stopped moving and shouted at Jiang Chen.

"That's right, I'm Jiang Chen; I'm the one who killed Shangguan Wei."

Jiang Chen replied in an incomparably imposing manner. Since he had been identified, there was no point in hiding any longer.

"Good, perfect! I don't care if you're Jiang Chen or Chen Jiang, you're certainly going to die today! None of those who challenges the Shangguan Clan ends up well!"

Shangguan Chong gnashed his teeth in anger. The death of Shangguan Wei had already made the Shangguan Clan decide to kill Jiang Chen. Shangguan Chong didn't expect to see him here, and he had also insulted him. Therefore, he had to settle everything with Jiang Chen today. If he couldn't kill him today, his face would be completely gone. Not only would he be able to face the public, he wouldn't even be able to hold his head up high within the Shangguan Clan.

“Bastard! Yang Shuo was the genius with the most promising future in the Myriad Sword Sect, but he died in Inferno Hell Because of you? Damn it, you're not going to escape death today!”

Ye Xiao's killing intent had completely locked down Jiang Chen. After learning Jiang Chen's real identity, he had absolutely no more reason to let him off today. The Myriad Sword Sect's dignity was similar to the Shangguan Clan's dignity; it wasn't something people could challenge!

“Jiang Chen, you killed my brother; I'm going to avenge him today! I'll tear you into a thousand pieces!”

An old man in his fifties furiously roared out. Although he was only a Late Divine Core warrior, he too wanted to kill Jiang Chen. After learning that his brother was killed by Jiang Chen some time ago, he promised himself he would avenge his brother. Although his brother was a sinful man, which was the reason why he was cast into Inferno Hell, no matter what, he was still the old man's brother. The old man wanted to look for Jiang Chen in the Black Sect, but when he heard that the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang

were killed by Jiang Chen, he actually cancelled his plans out of fear. But, since Jiang Chen was being attacked by so many strong warriors at the same time, today was his best opportunity for revenge.

“Jiang Chen, my junior disciple was killed by you! I’m going to make you pay today!”

“Jiang Chen, you’ve killed my blood brother! Today, I’m going to avenge him!”

At the moment, many people became violent, and some of them had taken out their combat weapons. They were gnashing their teeth in anger while emitting intense killing intent, they behaved like they were going to rip Jiang Chen’s skin off. In just the blink of an eye, there were over a hundred Divine Core warriors who stood out and swore they wanted to kill Jiang Chen. The situation escalated quickly to a point where it went out of control.

“So you are that Jiang Chen! I was watching your fight without any intentions of getting involved, but, three disciples of my Yellow Arcane Sect were killed by you in Inferno Hell! I have to avenge them no matter what!”

Right at this moment, a Combat Soul warrior stood up and said. This was a respectful Sect Elder of the Yellow Arcane Sect. This sect was from the Eastern Continent’s Liang Province, and it was ranked tenth in the entire Eastern Continent. It was considered a superpower.



“Jiang Chen, daddy had a disciple before this, and although he did a lot of wrong, causing him to be expelled to the Inferno Hell; he was still my disciple! Since I am here today, daddy will avenge my disciple!”

“Youngster Jiang Chen, you indiscriminately slaughtered innocent people in Inferno Hell, even our Sect Elders were killed by you! I’m going to chop off your head today!”

“Jiang Chen, surrender yourself and let us kill you now!”

“Youngster Jiang Chen, I’m going to get revenge as well!”

.....

The situation had gone completely out of control. In just the blink of an eye, 10 Combat Soul warriors had appeared, and all of them were emitting killing intent. All of them surrounded Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

Now, Big Yellow finally understood how much trouble he had brought just by changing back to his true form. He simply didn’t expect any of this.

“Damn it! Why are there so many people who wants to kill us?”

Big Yellow nearly fainted. Since they were surrounded by so many strong warriors, there was no way they could run away from the fight.

“Don’t forget how many people were killed by us in Inferno Hell, idiot!”

Jiang Chen glared at Big Yellow and scolded him hopelessly. Although Big Yellow didn’t expect to face such a situation, Jiang Chen had long ago predicted it might happen, which was why he insisted on Big Yellow maintaining his puppy form. If he hadn’t been in his puppy form, they might not even have been able to reach the Blissful Island.

However, the most depressed person wasn’t Jiang Chen or Big Yellow, it was Nangong Wentian. Currently, he was completely baffled regarding what was happening, and his incomparably domineering aura slowly faded away. With a sad face, he turned to Jiang Chen and asked, “Brother, can you tell me what’s going on? What monstrous crime did you commit to make so many people want to kill you?”

After absorbing the three Nine Soul Restoration Pills, Nangong Wentian’s cultivation base had been completely restored. He was feeling good about himself, so he wanted to fight the three Combat Soul warriors alongside Jiang Chen. But, before the fight could begin, enemies suddenly sprung up like mushrooms after the rain. How were they going to fight so many enemies? Although they could ignore those Divine Core warriors, but with so many Combat Soul warriors standing right in front of them, there was simply no way they could win the fight.

“Brother Nangong, this has nothing to do with you, please stand aside. I, Jiang Chen appreciate your help.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Nangong Wentian. He really appreciated Nangong Wentian's help, but with the current situation; him helping would only bring harm to himself.

Jiang Chen's expression didn't change even when facing all these Combat Soul warriors at the same time. In his past life, he had actually experience situations much more dangerous than this one, and he survived in the end. With both his and Big Yellow's movement skills and speed, escaping shouldn't be too much of a problem.

“Fuck! You think daddy is made of sugar? I won't become soft so easily! I would be ashamed if I stood out then backed off! Oh right, your name isn't Chen Jiang, but Jiang Chen? Never mind that, I don't care what your real name is, you're still my brother!”

Nangong Wentian clapped his own chest as he spoke. Although he behaved like a rude person, he was a man who would stay loyal to his friends. Furthermore, without Jiang Chen, he might not have been able to stay alive for much longer.

“He's done for, Jiang Chen is a dead man! In this situation, he won't be able to escape even if he had a pair of wings!”

“Precisely! He has killed too many people in Inferno Hell, and those who wants to get revenge for those he killed are everywhere!”

“That Nangong Wentian is an idiot as well! He knows that this is

a situation where death is certain, but he still wants to get involved! There must be something wrong with his mind...”

.....

Many people commented on the situation. The sudden change had brought Jiang Chen into a situation where death was certain. Unless some mighty gods descended from the heavens to rescue him, no one would be able to save him now.

“Jiang Chen, prepare to face your death!”

“Jiang Chen, I’ll give you an opportunity! Kneel down in front of me and beg for my forgiveness! After that, kill yourself!”

Someone said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“Hahaha...”

Jiang Chen suddenly started laughing, “All of you are so innocent; do you honestly believe you can kill me today? Let me tell you this, you do not understand the survival rules of Inferno Hell! The reason I killed your friends and family was because they were trying to kill me! In order to survive, I have to fight back, it’s the heaven’s law and earth’s principle! Just like now, you guys are trying to kill me, and you might just end up dying by my hands!”

Jiang Chen still had the same incomparable quality to him. There were no signs of fear on his face. Putting aside everything else, just

his courage alone is something that few people could compare with. If an ordinary warriors was in his position right now, he might be pissing his pants out of fear.

“Amazing courage! I like it, haha, so what if we’re outnumbered?! Let’s kill them and make them cry for their mothers!”

The giant ruler in Nangong Wentian’s hand started glowing. It wasn’t hard to tell that this guy was a battle manic as well.

# Chapter 305 – The Reappearance Of The Century Old Island Of Ice

---

Over a hundred people surrounded Jiang Chen, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow. Han Yan stood outside the surrounding circle, scratching his head in worry. But, there was nothing he could do.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's energies was rising to the peak. Nangong Wentian's black robe was violently fluttering in the wind, and he was portraying a domineering image. On the other side, their opponent were constantly emitting extreme killing intent, and were preparing to kill Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

It was freezing cold, but because of the Yuan energy unleashed by all these great warriors, the ice on the Blissful Island started melting.

The atmosphere was tense. It was a situation where death was certain, and nothing could stop it. It was difficult to imagine how Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could possibly escape from the surrounding Combat Soul warriors. Perhaps escaping was just a wishful dream.

“Little bastard, face your death!”

Ye Xiao took the lead, he became the first one to dash toward Jiang Chen and attack him.

Boom!

Right at this moment, an incredibly loud explosive sound could be heard everywhere on the Blissful Island. Followed by the loud noise, the island started violently shaking. The shaking got more and more violent with each passing moment, and some hills on the island even collapsed. The thick ice surrounding the Blissful Island was also beginning to crack, as if something terrifying was about to emerged from underneath.

“What’s happening? Is something big going to happen?”

“Look, something is emerging from the ocean far into the distance!”

Everyone cried out in alarm, causing the people to look far into the distance. The sudden change had calmed the tense atmosphere on the island. Those who were getting ready to attack Jiang Chen had stopped their attacks, and threw their sights far into the distance.

Even Ye Xiao, Shangguan Chong, and Mao Sheng who hated Jiang Chen the most had stopped their attacks. In their opinion, Jiang Chen would certainly die, so they started paying close attention to the change that was happening in the ocean.

Yesterday’s raging ocean waves signified that something extraordinary was going to happen, something big was coming. And now, the entire Blissful Island was shaking. The thick ice on the ocean was cracking and falling apart, and the appearance of

something unknown far into the distance had attracted the crowds' attention.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow also looked into the distance. What they saw was a gigantic object emerging from the ocean. It had already broken through the surface of the ocean, giving them a small glimpse of what it was.

The object was at least 100 kilometers away from them. But, because of its appearance, the entire Blissful Island, which was located 100 kilometers away from it, was violently shaking.

“Look, what is that?”

“It’s so dazzling! It looks like a glacier!”

“No, it’s an island, an island of ice! Oh heavens, an island of ice emerging from the bottom of the ocean, this is amazing!”

“Looks like the storm last night was caused by this island of ice! I wonder what it actually is, though.”

.....

Half of the island had emerged above the ocean’s surface. Many people could easily tell that it was an island, an island covered with ice.



“The Island of Ice! It is the Island of Ice! It has finally reappeared again!”

Ye Xiao from the Myriad Sword Sect suddenly yelled out. He completely lost his cool upon finding out it was the Island of Ice. As a Combat Soul warrior, he had actually lost control of emotions because of the island!

“What?! It’s Island of Ice?! How can that be possible?!”

“The Island of Ice has reappeared after a century! Haha, what luck, this is a great stroke of luck for us!”

“Oh heavens, the Island of Ice has reappeared! It has been one hundred years, and it has finally come back! I can’t miss such a huge opportunity!”

.....

Everyone present were astonished! The Island of Ice had now fully emerged, and it was floating on the ocean, bathing in the bright sunlight. It was incredibly dazzling!

“So, a huge treasure really did appear!”

Big Yellow’s ears stood up, and his eyes lit up. With his eyesight, he could easily tell that this Island of Ice was a mighty treasure!

“It looks like this Island of Ice appeared a hundred years ago.”

A doubtful light emerged in Jiang Chen's eyes. He was very sensitive regarding the time 100 years ago. Anything that suddenly appeared 100 years ago were perhaps all related to him.

“Haha, the Island of Ice has reappeared! This is an incomparable opportunity!”

Shangguan Chong burst into laughter. He was the first one to start flying toward the Island of Ice. Those who hated Jiang Chen to the core had completely forgotten about him; they simply dumped him aside, then they immediately started flying toward the Island of Ice.

“Little Chen, the Island of Ice is more attractive than kill you; they just dumped you behind!”

Han Yan flew up to Jiang Chen, a look of amazement could be found on his face.

“Haha, didn't think we'd bump into a treasure this time!”

Nangong Wentian laughed. He arrived next to Jiang Chen and said, “Brother Jiang, thank you for the Nine Soul Restoration Pills, they saved my life.”

“Brother Nangong, your words are too king, I am the one who needs to thank you for helping me this time. Let me introduce you;

these two are my brothers, Han Yan and Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“Alright, we will all be brothers from now on! Also, no need to call me Brother Nangong, just Brother Nan will do.”

Nangong Wentian was a bold and forthright man. He had a good impression of both Jiang Chen and Han Yan, that’s why he was willing to befriend them.

“Alright. Brother Nan, let’s go check out that Island of Ice.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen’s body transformed into a trail of light as he started flying toward the Island of Ice.

A Combat Soul warrior was extremely fast, they traveled the 100 kilometers distance in the blink of an eye.

“Haha, this Island of Ice has reappeared! I, Shangguan Chong am going to get my ultimate opportunity! With this, I’ll be able to break through to the Combat King realm in no time!”

Shangguan Chong was the first person who got close to the Island of Ice. While laughing out loudly, he immediately dashed onto the island. At the same time, all the other Combat Soul warriors were flying toward the Island of Ice as well. In the Eastern Continent, the legend about the Island of Ice was dated back to a hundred years ago, and its reappearance after a hundred years made all the

warriors restless.

Bang, bang, bang! ...

But too bad, when the Combat Soul warriors got close to the Island of Ice, a silver white barrier suddenly appeared and knocked all of them back. Some person even let out a painful cry, as he was flying too quickly, and suffered a great backlash after colliding with the barrier.

“What happened? Why can’t I go in?”

Feeling the numbness on his arm because of the backlash, Shangguan Chong was startled.

“The Island of Ice hasn’t fully opened yet, we can’t enter right now.”

The Golden Lion said.

“Looks like we have to wait for it.”

Someone helplessly shook his head. There was nothing they could do. Seeing that even the Combat Soul warriors were knocked back, those Divine Core warriors who were excitedly flying over to the Island of Ice immediately stopped flying.

At the moment, the Island of Ice was surrounded by many

warriors who were floating in the sky. Each of them stared at the Island of Ice passionately, as if they were looking at a magnificent beauty.

“What is this Island of Ice, actually? Why are all of them so crazy about it?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“I’ve heard about the Island of Ice. It appeared once about 100 years ago, and it caused a great commotion. But, since I grew up in the Black Sect, I don’t really know much about anything in the Eastern Continent aside from the Qi Province.”

Han Yan said.

“I didn’t expect Brother Jiang Chen would not know about the legend of the Island of Ice.”

Right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded out. Following that, a man suddenly appeared next to Jiang Chen in a ghostly manner. Jiang Chen turned around and saw a skinny old man. It was Old Man Ling Shan.

“Please enlighten us.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Old Man Ling Shan. His impression of this old man was quite good, as the old man did help him previously.

“A hundred years ago, also on the ocean, an Island of Ice suddenly appeared and raised a great commotion. Many warriors from the Eastern Continent entered the island, and according to the legend, those who entered the island, as long as their luck wasn’t too bad, most of them obtain great benefits. The current emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty is one of the men who entered the Island of Ice a hundred years ago. He was only in his youth at that time, but when he came back from the island, his cultivation surged, and he is no an incredible Combat King warrior.”

Old Man Ling Shan said.

“What? The emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty broke through to the Combat King realm after he returned from the Island of Ice? No wonder the appearance of the island made them all go crazy! But I do wonder, what’s on the island? Has senior entered the island before?”

Han Yan asked.

“I’m only 80 years old this year, I wasn’t even born a hundred years ago. Therefore, I’ve never been on that island before. But, I didn’t think I would see the Island of Ice reappear while I was still alive!”

Old Man Ling Shan said with a laugh. “But, the reappearance of the Island of Ice will definitely give rise to a great commotion in the entire Eastern Continent. I believe, not long after this, many

superpowers from the Eastern Continent will send their men here, including the Martial Saint Dynasty and Martial Palace.”

“Suddenly appeared a hundred years ago, is it be related to me? Why is this Island of Ice giving me a familiar feeling? I can feel something on that island beckoning me.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. For an unknown reason, this Island of Ice had a mysterious attractiveness to him. Therefore, he made up his mind, and decided to find out what was on the island.

“Looks like it’s a gigantic treasure island; I’ll have to check it out for sure! I possess great luck, I’ll definitely obtain some unimaginable benefits if I enter the island!”

With a wicked smile on his face, Nangong Wentian said in a narcissistic manner.

“Master Blissful is still missing since last night. Will there be any danger for him?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Don’t worry, he’s a Golden Glory Fish. Furthermore, with his strength, no accidents will happen to him within the ocean.”

Old Man Ling Shan said. He was very confident in Master Blissful.

Bang!

Right at this moment, a deep explosive sound came from the Island of Ice. Following that, a trail of light shout out from the island extremely quickly.

A Divine Core warrior with quick hands caught the trail of light. When he found out what was in his palm, he immediately cried out in alarm, “Oh heavens! It’s an Earth Restoration Pill! A 100% effectiveness Earth Restoration Pill!”

His cry brought a great commotion to the crowds. An Earth Restoration Pill had just shot out from the Island of ice! This was like money falling down from the sky!”

Bang! Bang! Bang! ...

After that, numerous deep explosive sounded came from the Island of Ice, and trails of lights filled the sky in an instant! No one could remain calm after witnessing this!



## Chapter 306 – Insane Looting

---

The crowds went crazy, all of them immediately dashed toward those trails of light. These were real Earth Restoration Pills, and they were the root of these warriors' cultivations. It could be said that Earth Restoration Pills was the Divine Core and Combat Soul warriors' lifeline.

A warrior caught an Earth Restoration Pill, and he instantly burst into laughter, "Wahaha, it really is an Earth Restoration Pill! Money is raining down from the sky!"

Bang! Bang! Bang! ...

Trails of light unceasingly shot out from the island, and the countless trails of lights filled the entire sky above the island, causing the crowds to go crazy. They flew around everywhere in order to catch the treasures. It was a rare occurrence, and none of them could restrain their excitement.

"I got an Earth Restoration Pill too!"

"This isn't an Earth Restoration Pill, it's a Mid-Ranked Combat Weapon! Oh heavens, the Island of Ice is shooting out Combat Weapons!"

"Another Combat Weapon! Treasure, the Island of Ice is a massive treasure island!"

“Go for them! Unique treasures are shooting spurting out of the island! This is a rare opportunity, daddy is going to be rich!”

.....

Everyone present were incredibly excited, and the Island of Ice didn't seem to stop shooting out treasures. It started shooting out Earth Restoration Pills at first, then Combat Weapons, and then, golden scrolls started appearing. On these scrolls, there were all kinds of cultivation and combat skills.

This was a scene beyond anyone's wildest imagination. Many people were yelling as they forcibly took the treasures raining down upon them like crazy. A situation like this was usually accompanied by conflict. Soon, someone started fighting. The energy ripples caused by these fights swept across the scene.

“Fuck, what a lively scene! I feel sorry for these treasures if I don't get them!”

Nangong Wentian started rushing toward the trails of light.

Old Man Ling Shan also followed. When facing so many treasures, no one could remain calm. Every being had the same greedy nature.

“Little Chen, what are you waiting for?”

Han Yan was no longer capable of enduring. If he still hesitated,

all those treasures would be obtained by someone else. On the other side, Big Yellow also rushed forward toward those trails of light.

“Get lost! This treasure belongs to me! Ah, you’re young master Nangong! This treasure belongs to you...”

A Divine Core warrior’s eyes turned red as he rushed over to a treasure. But, when he saw his opponent was Nangong Wentian, he immediately woke up, and dared not show any disrespect.

“The fuck?! This is a Heavenly Restoration Pill! Daddy just got a Heavenly Restoration Pill, what the fuck?!”

The Golden Lion caught a Heavenly Restoration Pill. Even with his Combat Soul cultivation, he still lost his cool for a moment.

“What? There are Heavenly Restoration Pills?”

“This is crazy, even Heavenly Restoration Pills have appeared! Can’t the Island of Ice let us live?”

“I need to fast! If I can get just one Heavenly Restoration Pill, I’ll be rich!”

Everyone’s eyes turned red. Hearing that Heavenly Restoration Pills were appearing, it was like a dream to them. As warriors, all of them knew how valuable a Heavenly Restoration Pill was! An Earth Restoration Pill was equal to 10,000 Mortal Restoration Pills,

and a Heavenly Restoration Pill was equal to 10,000 Earth Restoration Pills! In other words, a Heavenly Restoration Pill was equal to 100,000,000 Mortal Restoration Pills! This was a massive amount of wealth!

Furthermore, ordinary Divine Core and Combat Soul warriors all used Earth Restoration Pills for their cultivation, it was incredibly rare even for a Combat Soul warrior to use Heavenly Restoration Pills when cultivating.

Only the mighty Combat King warriors could leisurely absorb Heavenly Restoration Pills. Even the supreme Combat Emperor warriors were using Heavenly Restoration Pills. In the Eastern Continent, Heavenly Restoration Pills were extremely precious treasures, but now, the Island of Ice was shooting them out! How could they not become a little crazy?

Swoosh!

A trail of light shot right toward Jiang Chen, and arrived in front of him in just the blink of an eye. Jiang Chen quickly caught it with his hand, and to his surprise; it was a Heavenly Restoration Pill!

“This luck definitely goes against heavens will...”

Jiang Chen laughed. He comfortably stored the Heavenly Restoration Pill into his storage ring. This was an item he really needed in order to cultivate the Dragon Transformation skill, and he clearly knew the actual value of the Heavenly Restoration Pill.

“That Heavenly Restoration Pill is mine!”

Someone shouted out. A few warriors arrived in front of Jiang Chen, and all of them had red eyes, as if they were sick.

“What?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows and gave the warriors an ice-cold stare. The warriors who had lost their minds because of the treasure immediately woke up, and it wasn't until now that they realized who the young man in front of them was.

“Ah! It's young master Jiang Chen! I don't want that Heavenly Restoration Pill anymore, I'll go get some other treasure.”

“Right, I don't want it either! Young master Jiang Chen should keep it!”

.....

These few warriors immediately flew away much faster than they came here. They knew Jiang Chen's approach really well, Jiang Chen was the number one robber back in Inferno Hell, and they actually tried robbing something from him? That was no different than courting death!

“So many treasures! Restoration Pills, cultivation skills, combat

skill, combat weapons... This Island of Ice is incredible!”

The people were constantly shouting and yelling. Following the continuous trails of light shooting out from the Island of Ice, their emotions had undergone a constant simulation. Many people’s eyes turned red because of this insane looting, and they simply ignored everything around them, as each trail of light was a treasure.

Jiang Chen wasn’t interested in those cultivation and combat skills, none of them were advanced ones. His primary target was Earth Restoration Pills. Of course, he would be happier if he could get more Heavenly Restoration Pills, but those incredibly rare, and it took great luck just to get one.

“All the Heavenly Restoration Pills belongs to the Myriad Sword Sect, none of you are allowed to catch them!”

Ye Xiao sent this statement into the ears of all warriors like a sudden clap of thunder.

“Damn you! Since when have the items from the Island of Ice belonged to the Myriad Sword Sect? Do you still want face?”

“They belong to those who catches it! There are so many treasures here; can the Myriad Sword Sect take them all?”

“Look, more good stuff is shooting out, let’s go for it!”

.....

Right at this moment, the Myriad Sword Sect's name had become worthless. This was a magnificent scene; more than 10,000 warriors were rushing for treasures! None of the treasures belong to any one, but the Myriad Sword Sect was actually trying to get them all! This was such a ridiculous idea! Everyone's eyes had already turned red, and none of them were bothered by this.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Three trails of light shot toward Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen threw his glance at them, and found out the three trails of light were three Heavenly Restoration Pills! Without any hesitation, he immediately grabbed toward them.

Two Divine Core warriors were flying toward them from the side, trying to snatch the Heavenly Restoration Pills.

“Get lost!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold shout and unleashed a powerful energy from his body. In an instant, he knocked both Divine Core warriors away from his target, then, he stretched his arm and grabbed all three Heavenly Restoration Pills.

“Jiang Chen brat, hand over the Heavenly Restoration Pills, then I'll send you to hell afterwards!”

A cruel voice sounded out from behind Jiang Chen. He turned around and saw a Combat Soul warrior about to attack him. Jiang Chen knew this guy; he was from the Yellow Arcane Sect, one of the men who surrounded him back on the Blissful Island.

“You might be wrong about who is going to hell.”

With a cruel expression, Jiang Chen unleashed the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons, sending three frightening Flood Dragons toward the Combat Soul warrior, blocking him from coming further.

Humph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He didn't bother with this man, he turned around and flew in another direction. While flying, he grabbed all treasures along his path like a massive whale sucking in water. His actions immediately attracted hatred from the crowds.

The Island of Ice was simply a mighty treasure island! The eruption of treasures lasted for nearly half an hour, and after that, less treasures erupted from the island, and the fights were getting more violent.

The scene had become pretty miserable. Many people had died during the insane looting. Their bodies were scattered around the frozen ocean, and their blood was smeared all over the ice.

Buzz...



Right at this moment, an even more dazzling beam shot out from the Island of Ice. The beam made an extremely loud noise as it erupted from the island, and instantly attracted everyone's attention.

“Look, it's a spear!”

“It's a Superior Weapon! Oh heavens, even a Superior Weapon has appeared!”

“Quickly, grab it!”

The appearance of the Superior Weapon made all these warriors even crazier.

“It's mine! Who dares snatch it from me?!”

Shangguan Chong roared out. With a sway of his body, he started rushing toward the Superior Weapon and tried to grab it. None of the other Combat Soul warriors showed any hesitation, they all moved at the same time and tried grabbing the weapon. All of them knew very well how valuable a Superior Weapon was, an ordinary Combat Soul warrior owning a Superior Weapon was very rare.

Swoosh!

They were certainly were fast, but someone was even faster than them! Under the eyes of everyone, a young man dressed in white with a pair of blood red wings on his back appeared next to the spear. Without any hesitation, he grabbed the spear.

“Jiang Chen brat! Let go of the Combat Weapon!”

Fury erupted from Shangguan Chong; he truly hated Jiang Chen to the core! He was about to get the Combat Weapon, but Jiang Chen was faster than him, which really pissed him off!

With endless killing intent, Shangguan Chong unleashed a golden beam toward Jiang Chen.

“Old fool, trying to kill me? Try measuring your own abilities first!”

Jiang Chen never showed any fear. With the Superior Weapon in hand, he shook it with his Yuan energy. The spear produced a buzzing sound as it pierced toward Shangguan Chong.

Bang!

Shangguan Chong's attack was instantly shattered by the Superior Weapon, and the tremendous power behind it and forced him back three steps.

“What?!”

Shangguan Chong let out a cry of disbelief as he stared at Jiang Chen. He was a Combat Soul warrior, but Jiang Chen, who was only a Mid Divine Core warrior had knocked him back with a single counter attack! This was something that didn't even happen in his wildest dreams!

“I told you before; you're not capable of killing me. Take my spear again!”

With an extremely overbearing aura, and seemingly endless Yuan energy, Jiang Chen raised the spear high up into the air. Aimed at Shangguan Chong, he smashed it down from top to bottom.

Swoosh!

The spear caused the air to violently vibrate. The friction between the spear and the air produced a lot of fire sparks. In just an instant, the spear arrived in front of Shangguan Chong.

Shangguan Chong knew how insane and formidable Jiang Chen was, so without any hesitation, he moved his arm and retrieved a razor sharp longsword. He raised it toward the skies, in an attempt to block Jiang Chen's spear.

Clang!

This was an incredible collision between two tremendous forces! The devastating energy ripples immediately swept across the

entire area.

# Chapter 307 – Frightening Kettle

---

Two Superior Weapons violently collided! The energy ripples were incredibly devastating, and they frightened everyone nearby. Some warriors who stood close to the battlefield were even injured by the massive force! A warrior let out a blood-curdling screech, as one of his arms had shattered because of the devastating force!

Jiang Chen's strength was incredibly mighty. With the Superior Weapon in his hand, he had no disadvantage when fighting Shanguan Chong who was a Combat Soul warrior. It was really difficult to imagine how a Mid Divine Core warrior's combat strength could be so powerful.

“This brat is really strong, let's kill him together!”

Ye Xiao roared. At this moment, four Combat Soul warriors attacked Jiang Chen at the same time. The Combat Soul warriors were all elders from different powers in the Eastern Continent, and each of them had vast experience; that's the reason why they were so shocked. They had seen countless geniuses in their lives, but not once had they met someone like Jiang Chen.

It wasn't hard to imagine, if this young man was allowed to grow, sooner or later, they wouldn't be able to defeat him even with the strength of their entire sect. And, the best way to limit his growth was to kill him before he could grow.

Jiang Chen's performance frightened a lot of people! It wasn't the present Jiang Chen they were scared of, it was the future Jiang

Chen they feared! Therefore, they had to kill Jiang Chen here no matter what!

Rumble...

The simultaneous attacks from four Combat Soul warriors shook both heaven and earth. The energy ripples shattered the frozen ice, sending it flying all over the place. At the same time, there were still treasures shooting out from the Island of Ice. Therefore, the group who were trying to kill Jiang Chen on the Blissful Island didn't gather again. But, these four Combat Soul warriors were still a frightening combination.

The energies at the scene were simply too strong! Many people were watching, trying to figure out how Jiang Chen was going to survive after the combined attack of four Combat Soul warriors.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen only replied with a cold harrumph. No signs of panic could be found on his face. Actually, his fighting intent was incredibly powerful. 2,200 Dragon Marks had given him huge confidence, so even when he was facing the combined attacks of four Combat Soul warriors, Jiang Chen still wanted to counter them face to face; he wanted to figure out just how powerful his current combat strength was!

Buzz...

The spear in his hand was producing a frightening buzzing sound. Under Jiang Chen's control, the violently shaking spear looked like a poisonous snake. Endless amounts of Yuan energy was constantly flowing into the spear from Jiang Chen's hand, and there were even some blood red Dragon Marks that started appearing on the surface of the spear, giving it a mystical aura.

Boom!

The Combat Spear produced a loud explosive noise. With Jiang Chen's control, it pierced forwards with a tremendous force. There were energy storms in all directions. These energy storms were born from the combined attacks of the four Combat Soul warriors, and most ordinary people would die horrible deaths just by getting close to these storms.

Rumble...

The Combat Spear produced a dazzling light. It looked like a gigantic pillar the held the heavens up as it collided with the energy storms. Violent and destructive energy ripples started rolling around. With just this collision, the scene immediately started looking like a doomsday. The devastating energy ripples made a bottomless hole appear in the frozen ocean, causing ocean water to shoot out from the hole. But, in just a split second, the hole was frozen once again.

Because of the Island of Ice, the ocean's temperature had dropped far below the freezing level. Water would instantly freeze upon emerging.

Boom! Boom! Boom! ...

Because of the massive collision, Jiang Chen was forced back a dozen steps before he regained control of his body. While stepping back within the skies, each step he took would produce a loud boom sound, which sounded like the sound that came when once hit a drum.

Cracking sounds could be heard from the Combat Spear in his hand, and Jiang Chen's face looked pale for a moment. But soon after, he returned to normal. Currently, Jiang Chen still couldn't fight four Combat Soul warriors alone, but since his body was really strong, he could actually withstand such a massive backlash! Therefore, even with the combined attack of four Combat Soul warriors, he wasn't hurt.

“How can this be possible? Is this guy made from iron?”

“He has a strong body, the combined attacks didn't hurt him at all!”

“Let's take out our Combat Weapons and attack together, we have to kill this guy today, don't let him survive!”

“That's right! Leaving him alive would be a disaster for us!”

.....



All those Combat Soul warriors who wanted to kill Jiang Chen gnashed their teeth in anger. The more strength Jiang Chen showed, the more they wanted to kill him! Jiang Chen's potential was frightening them a lot! With just a Mid Divine Core cultivation base, he was able to fight them like this! Didn't that mean he would be able to kill them if he broke through to the Late Divine Core realm?

In a split second, a few more Combat Soul warriors joined the battlefield. Once again, they surrounded Jiang Chen. Each of them had drawn their most powerful Combat Weapons, and most of those were Superior Weapons. Some rogue warriors didn't have a lot of resources, so they could only use High-Ranked Combat Weapons. But, each of them were peak High-Ranked Combat Weapons, so they were still quite powerful.

“Oh heavens! I think Jiang Chen is doomed this time! With so many Combat Soul warriors surrounding him, and all of them carrying Combat Weapons; how is he going to fight them?”

“Sigh! Jiang Chen should've just ran away from here during the chaotic situation just now, but he actually stayed back because of his greed for treasures. Now, he's going to pay with his mistake with his own life... truly not worth it.”

“So many great warriors are trying to kill him, and Master Blissful isn't here, so no one will be able to protect him anymore. He's in a certain death situation right now. The appearance of the Island of Ice attracted everyone's attention, and since the eruption of treasures has almost ended, it's time for all these great warriors to kill him.”

.....

Many people felt pity for Jiang Chen. In their minds, Jiang Chen was an amazing man. No matter where it was, Inferno Hell of the Blissful Island, what he did was incredible! Just his courage alone made many people admire him. If Jiang Chen could survive this, he would definitely become a mighty hero in the future; a supreme person!

“So many of you are attacking one person, do you really put your face in your pants?”

Nangong Wentian was really pissed off. With the gigantic ruler in hand, he flew toward Jiang Chen. But, two Combat Soul warriors blocked his path, and the two immediately engaged in a fierce fight with Nangong Wentian. On the other side, Big Yellow was also blocked off by a Combat Soul warrior.

Luckily, there was only one Combat Soul warrior fighting Big Yellow. These Combat Soul warriors still valued their face, so they didn't attack a dog with multiple people.

“Jiang Chen, you're dead!”

Mao Sheng roared.

Bang!

Right after Mao Sheng finished roaring, something happened once again. A deep explosive sound could be heard from the Island of Ice once again, and in the next second, a flaming object erupted from the island.

Everyone knew about the legend of the Island of Ice. Therefore, anything that came from the Island of Ice would immediately attract their attention. Right at this moment, when the object shot out, it instantly attracted everyone's attention.

Big Yellow was the first to see what this object was, and his eyes immediately lit up. In an instant, he shouted, "Little Chen, go get that thing!!

Jiang Chen's expression changed upon hearing Big Yellow's words. Without any hesitation, he started flying toward the object with speed great as lightning. Any item worthy of Big Yellow's attention must be something extraordinary, Jiang Chen had no doubts about that.

"That thing belongs to me!"

Shangguan Chong also flew toward the item with great speed. He swung his sword at Jiang Chen as he flew toward the item, and all the other Combat Soul warriors started moving as well; trying to snatch the item before anyone else.

"Get lost!"

Jiang Chen roared as he ferociously thrust his Combat Spear at Shangguan Chong. At the same time, a pair of blood red wings appeared on his back, and his feet trembled as he unleashed the Dimensional Shift skill! He didn't stop there, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared in a split second, the Nine Phantom Wolves! He used it to distract his opponents' visions. Even if it only delayed them for just a split second, with his current speed, it was more than enough.

Jiang Chen was extremely fast! When all the phantom Jiang Chens disappeared, the treasure that had erupted from the Island of Ice fell into his hand.

The item was scorching hot, as if it was hot steel that just came out from a fire pit. Ordinary warriors wouldn't be able to touch it, only Jiang Chen who had such an incredible body could grab it with his hand.

Jiang Chen took a look at the item in his hand; it was actually a kettle! That's right, this item looked exactly like a kettle! There was a handle on its side, and a fist sized mouth on top of it. The mouth was sealed shut with a lid. The high temperature came from the content within the kettle.

Jiang Chen knew it wasn't water in this kettle, because no water could reach such a high temperature. With this temperature, the water would be vaporized in less than a second! But, with Jiang Chen's experience, he actually couldn't tell what this item was! The kettle had a rough surface, and some symbols were carved onto it.

“These are symbols of the ancient era, don’t tell me this kettle is from the ancient era?”

Jiang Chen was startled.

“Jiang Chen, hand over the treasure!”

Right at this moment, two Combat Soul warriors flew toward Jiang Chen from another direction. At the same time, the kettle in Jiang Chen’s hand started violently trembling, as if it was going to explode at any time.

Jiang Chen had no time to think, he simply pulled the lid off the kettle’s mouth. Right as he pulled off the lid, an extremely dangerous aura leaked out from the kettle, as if a tremendous devastating energy was hidden within the kettle.

Buzz...

The kettle was agitated when the lid was pulled off, and its entire body’s color changed into a fiery one. Red smoke erupted from the kettle, and countless wild roars sounded out from within the kettle, as if there were numerous ancient barbaric beasts roaring at the same time. Jiang Chen could clearly feel that something was going to shoot out from the kettle. But, time wasn’t on his side, so he just aimed the kettle toward the two Combat Soul warriors who were flying toward him.

Bang!

A frightening scene played out. A Fiery Dragon formed entirely from magma rushed out from the kettle. The extremely high temperature instantly burned the air. However, compared to this high temperature, what was even more dreadful was the devastating energy that came from the Magma Dragon.

“Not good!”

Both Combat Soul warriors felt their hearts tremble. They could clearly feel the dangerous aura coming from the Fiery Magma Dragon, and the danger was life threatening. Without any hesitation, both of them immediately fled far away from it.

But too bad, the Fiery Magma Dragon was too fast. In just an instant, it completely engulfed both men.

Ahh!!

Two blood-curdling screeches sounded out within the Fiery Magma Dragon, and just a split second afterwards, the screams came to a complete stop. With great speed, the Fiery Magma Dragon passed both men and continued flying forward, leaving bits of ashes in the air. Both Combat Soul warriors had completely vanished!

# Chapter 308 – Ancient Force

---

Roar~

After burning both Combat Soul warriors to a crisp, the Fiery Magma Dragon let out a wild roar, and continued flying across the ocean. Its energy was only depleted after flying nearly 500 kilometers. Finally, it fell down from the sky and crashed onto the ocean surface, instantly melting the frozen ice. A huge explosion was seen where it crashed, and ice was sent all over the place, as well as a huge amount of smoke. The terrifying vibrations caused the hearts of all those who watched it to tremble.

Gasp...

Many people gasped after witnessing what just happened. Everyone stared at the worn down kettle in Jiang Chen's hand as if they looking at the most dreadful item underneath the heavens. Two Combat Soul warriors were just burned to ashes by it, it was incredibly terrifying!

“Oh heavens, what exactly is that item? It's incredibly powerful, two Combat Soul warriors just vanished because of it!”

“Extremely frightening, it just killed two Combat Soul warriors in an instant!”

“With this treasure in Jiang Chen's hand, who can kill him now?”

.....

Everyone were shocked by it, and no one could control their emotions any longer. What happened was extremely frightening! A worn down kettle just made two Combat Soul warriors vanish! A scene like this, if one didn't see it for himself, he wouldn't believe it even if he was beaten to death!

“Damn it! So brutal!”

Han Yan's eyeballs nearly popped out of their sockets.

“Damn it! What exactly is that item? Don't you think it's too brutal?”

Nangong Wentian was terrified by it as well! Actually, not only he, even Jiang Chen was stunned by it! He lowered his head and looked at the worn down kettle in his hand; a bright glow suddenly emerged in his eyes.

“Good treasure!”

Jiang Chen sighed. With his experience, he could tell it was only a magma flame that shot out from the kettle. Furthermore, it was just some ordinary magma. Although it was high temperature, it was from enough to make two Combat Soul warriors vanish. Its mystical power came from the kettle itself! It was the kettle that had given the magma such devastating power!



Shangguan Chong and the others were startled by this terrifying scene. Those Combat Soul warriors who gnashed their teeth in anger and swore to kill Jiang Chen now only had frightened expressions on their faces, and they had started falling back, scared that Jiang Chen would point the kettle toward them. Fear lingered within them after witnessing the scene.

Ye Xiao and the others were both scared and angry. At the same time, they regretted being so slow. If not, this treasure would belong to them right now, and Jiang Chen would be the one killed by the fiery magma.

“Haha, come!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter as he waved the worn down kettle at his opponents, causing those Combat Soul warriors to fall back out of fear. After witnessing the kettle’s terrifying ability, who would stand out and fight Jiang Chen now?

“Come! Weren’t you all trying to kill me just now?”

Jiang Chen was challenging multiple Combat Soul warriors by himself, portraying an overbearing image from his entire body. The way he challenged them all made the crowds admire him even more than previously.

“Jiang Chen, don’t be so arrogant! I don’t believe that worn down kettle can be used to attack once again!”

Ye Xiao shouted. His words made the frightened Combat Soul warriors' eyes light up.

That's right! The flaming magma erupted from the worn down kettle itself, it wasn't controlled by Jiang Chen! And the kettle seemed quiet now, didn't that mean it couldn't unleash a second attack?

The smile on Jiang Chen's face became thicker; he was pretending to be calm. But in his mind, he had started cursing. Aside from the few hundred kilos of weight, which was the actual weight of the kettle itself, there was nothing else in the kettle. After the flaming magma erupted from the kettle, the temperature of the kettle started dropping. Or, perhaps it was because of the Island of Ice, but Jiang Chen could start feeling the cold even though he was holding the kettle.

"Haha, my guess is correct! The worn down kettle can only be used once! Everyone, we don't have to be afraid of him now!"

Ye Xiao burst into laughter.

"Precisely! If it could be used multiple times, with this guy's approach, he would have already killed us!"

Shangguan Chong added.

Finally, everyone realized what was going on after being

reminded by Ye Xiao, and they also discovered the changes to the kettle. The worn down kettle now looked ordinary with a rough surface, as if it was an unwanted kettle left on the street side. The formidable energy it carried when it shot out from the Island of Ice was long gone! This told them one thing; Jiang Chen was just pretending!

“What the fuck...”

Jiang Chen was speechless, then he simply tossed the worn down kettle away. Since his opponents had found out the truth, there was no need for him to continue pretending.

Swoosh!

Right as Jiang Chen threw the worn down kettle away, a figure suddenly appeared underneath him and caught it; it was Big Yellow!

“Damn you, what a spoiled kid! This thing is a real treasure!”

Big Yellow held onto the worn down kettle tightly, as if it was a rare treasure.

Now, Jiang Chen had lost his mighty weapon. Just when everyone thought Jiang Chen was dead meat, another sudden change occurred.

A dazzling light rushed out from the Island of Ice, lighting up all

directions. After that, a huge hole appeared on one side of the Island of Ice. Although the hole looked illusory, it was actually an entrance to the island!

“Look, the Island of Ice has opened up!”

“Haha, the Island of Ice has finally opened! Let’s enter it quickly; there must be some good stuff on the island!”

“Let’s go! I have to find an opportunity on the island!”

.....

The people went crazy once again. The Island of Ice was too attractive! So many valuable treasures had appeared before the island was opened, so it wasn’t difficult to imagine that there would be more treasures on the island itself!

“Little Chen, let’s enter the Island of Ice!”

Nangong Wentian shouted at Jiang Chen. Without any hesitation, he immediately flew toward the entrance. On the other side, Han Yan and Big Yellow also flew toward the entrance together with the crowds.

Swoosh!

Of course, Jiang Chen wouldn't hesitate either. There were too many enemies outside, and only by entering the island would he have the opportunity to escape from these Combat Soul warriors! Furthermore, after the Island of Ice opened, the mysterious beckoning became even clearer!

With a flap of his blood wings, together with the Dimensional Shift skill's help, Jiang Chen moved incredibly quickly. He was much closer to the entrance than Ye Xiao and the others were, so it was impossible for Ye Xiao and all other opponents to stop Jiang Chen from entering the Island of Ice.

“Jiang Chen, don't you run away from us!”

“Hurry up and enter the Island of Ice, we have to kill Jiang Chen!”

Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong both shouted out loudly. Dozens of Combat Soul warriors were rushing toward the entrance as well. For them, entering the island and killing Jiang Chen were both equally important.

At this moment, the scene within the Island of Ice was completely different from what they had imagined.

Plop... plop...

Ouch... ouch...

After passing through the entrance and entering the Island of Ice, every single warrior immediately fell down from the sky, and were lying on the ground. They were all caught off guard, and felt dizzy because of the hard fall.

Jiang Chen rushed through the entrance, entering the Island of Ice's boundary. But, in an instant, a tremendous pressure pushed him down from above. Jiang Chen couldn't control his body at all, and just like all the other warriors, he was knocked down onto the ground, creating a huge crater where he landed. None of the warriors were spared from this fate, all of them were thrown downwards by the tremendous force, and no one could fly like they used to do.

“What happened? Why can't I fly now? Something's wrong here, my cultivation is limited! Oh heavens, I'm only an Early Mortal Core warrior now! What happened?!”

“Me too, I'm also an Early Mortal Core warrior just like you; I can't fly at all, and I can't even use my combat skill! It seems like I've returned to the early stages of my cultivation, and my Yuan energy is limited as well!”

“What's going on? I thought there were precious treasures on this island, a once in a lifetime opportunity? So why are our cultivation bases limited here?”

.....

Many people became panicked! Something really frightening just

happened; a mysterious force had completely limited their cultivation bases! No matter what cultivation realm and stage they previously were at, all of them were now at the Early Mortal Core realm!

Many faces turned pale! For mighty Divine Core warriors, they had long ago forgotten what being an Early Mortal Core warrior was like! When they were forced back to this realm, they immediately felt how weak they were right now.

The crowds found out they were in the middle of a desert, and there were no plants around them; a truly desolate area. Perhaps it was because of that mysterious force, but there wasn't even any wind in this area! It was a ghastly silent place!

Plop... plop...

“What happened?”

“Why did I fall down from the sky? I am a Combat Soul warrior, I can fly whenever I want, so why can't I fly here?! My cultivation?! What?! Mortal Core realm?! What's wrong with this place?!”

“My Yuan energy is quickly reducing, and I'm only at the Early Mortal Core realm right now?! Just what is this place? Where are the treasures? Why is there only a desert here?”

Everyone who entered the island felt shocked. The treasures they expected to see was nowhere to be found, and they were in the

middle of a desert. Every single warrior's cultivation was limited, and no matter what their previous cultivation was, they were now all at the same cultivation; Early Mortal Core realm! And that included the Combat Soul warriors, none were spared from this fate!

Big Yellow walked up to Jiang Chen. Nangong Wentian and Han Yan walked up to him as well. All of them wore the same startled expressions.

“Little Chen, do you know why our cultivations are limited here?”

Han Yan asked.

“The Island of Ice has its own dimension, and the scenery in here is completely different from that in the outside world. This place is a parallel dimension, a world different from the one we came from. I can sense a mysterious force here; it's an ancient force that can suppress our cultivations, and it's also the reason why we're suppressed to the Early Mortal Core realm.”

Jiang Chen explained.

“This is a boundless desert, where is the treasure?”

Nangong Wentian felt speechless.

“Brother Nan, this Island of Ice appeared once a hundred years



ago, and although the scene might be different from then, I'm sure there are treasures on this island. I can feel that the mysterious force only works in this desert, so as long as we leave this desert, we won't be affected by it anymore, and our cultivation bases will be restored to their original form."

Jiang Chen said.

"If that is the case, let's leave this desert as soon as possible."

Nangong Wentian said.

"Why the rush? The show has just begun! Don't you want to see a bunch of Combat Soul warriors crying for their grandpas while getting beaten?"

Jiang Chen's lips curved upwards, and a bright smile blossomed on Jiang Chen's face. He threw his glance over at Shangguan Chong, Ye Xiao, and all the other Combat Soul warriors who came with them.

Big Yellow's ears instantly stood up, and an evil smile emerged onto his face. A good show was going to play out soon!

## Chapter 309 – Killed One By One

---

Soon, all the warriors had entered the desert from the entrance outside the Island of Ice. More than ten thousand people filled the land, causing it to look like a grand event was underway. However, all of them looked deeply depressed as they looked across the stretching desert. Feeling the restriction to their cultivation bases, none of these warriors felt secure at all. Usually, they would feel safe with their strong cultivation bases, but when a majestic elephant was transformed into a weak, tiny mouse... it was a feeling that no one could describe.

“Let’s walk toward the inner parts of this desert, this place should just be a small piece of the entire island. Once we leave this desert, our cultivation bases will be restored to normal.”

Ye Xiao said with a loud voice. As the Myriad Sword Sect’s elder, his experience was quite rich. Therefore, he was able to sense the mysterious force that only affected those within this desert. Once they left, they would be able to escape the restriction. The real treasure was also definitely hidden within the inner area of the Island of Ice.

“Precisely, this desert is just a small part of the Island of Ice.”

Mao Sheng nodded his head in agreement.

After saying that, all the Combat Soul warriors started walking toward the inner parts of the desert. Suddenly, four figures appeared in front of them, stopping them from going any further.

These four figures were none other than Jiang Chen and his group. Right at this moment, Jiang Chen's arms were folded on his chest, and he wore a bright smile as he shrugged his shoulders. He stared at Ye Xiao and the other Combat Soul warriors with an evil expression.

“Guys, guys, I thought you want to kill me? In my opinion, why don't you guys kill me first, before proceeding any further?”

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent manner.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, don't tell me you're really that naïve, thinking we can't kill you after our cultivation bases were weakened? Let me tell you this; even though we're just Mortal Core warriors, our foundations are still much stronger than yours! Killing you is just a piece of cake!”

Shangguan Chong coldly harrumphed.

“Why don't you try and kill me now?”

Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulder, and his expression basically said he didn't care. Next to him, Han Yan and Big Yellow wore bright smiles on their faces. These people might not understand Jiang Chen, but these two knew him very well! When it came to battles with warriors in the same real and stage as himself, Jiang Chen was an absolutely invincible existence!

Right now, everyone's cultivations were restricted to the Early Mortal Core realm, and all of them had the same amount of Yuan energy. Once they fought, the main deciding factor would be bodily strength! And, regardless if it was Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, or even Han Yan, they were all superior to everyone else here!

Jiang Chen was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, and his body was as sturdy as pure steel. This group of Combat Soul warriors were like ants to him; he could easily crush them with his fingers.

Shangguan Chong furrowed his brows; he really wished he could leap forward and kill Jiang Chen immediately. But, since their cultivations were restricted to the same level, as well as Jiang Chen's previous demonstration of his might, he had no confidence in killing him right now. That's the reason why he didn't attack Jiang Chen after coming to this place.

Ye Xiao, Mao Sheng and the other Combat Soul warriors all wore ugly expressions as well. After losing their Combat Soul cultivation base, they lost all their confidence.

“What's wrong? No one wants to kill me now? I thought you were all very arrogant just now? Fine, since you've all lost your confidence, I'll be the arrogant one! Today, without my permission, no one is allowed to leave this desert! As for you, the old fools who has repeatedly tried to kill me, if you kneel down now and kowtow three times to me, I might show some mercy and spare your lives!”

Jiang Chen behaved incredibly arrogantly right now, and he was

very excited. The ancient mysterious force in this desert was really amazing! In such an environment, he, Jiang Chen was the absolute king! Even a Combat King warrior would have to kneel down in front of him in here!

“What?! You want us to kneel down?!”

“Ridiculous! Little bastard, how dare you talk to us like that?! You’re just courting death!”

“This little bastard is too arrogant, he really think we can’t kill him not that our cultivations are restricted! He has no idea how powerful the foundation of a Combat Soul warrior is, our abilities are not something he can comprehend!”

“The impudence if this guy is beyond all imagination! Let me teach him a lesson! Although my cultivation is restricted right now, I have spent all my life tempering my body; my bones are strong as steel, and skin is hard like bronze, I’ll be able to tear him to pieces just with my bodily strength alone! Jiang Chen bastard, come here and meet your death!”

.....

These Combat Soul warriors were furious! They were all formidable Combat Soul warriors, elders from superpowers! They were highly revered existences no matter where they went, and their words were like the ultimate orders that no one dared disobey! But, this young man in front of them just asked them to kneel down; this was simply ridiculous!

One of the Combat Soul warriors who had a majestic body leapt toward Jiang Chen like a fierce tiger.

The turmoil immediately attracted everyone's attention, once again. The warriors who were getting ready to proceed to the inner parts of the desert stopped moving. The conflict between Jiang Chen and the Combat Soul warriors was going to resume once again. From the Blissful Island to the Island of Ice, and until this desert, it had yet to stop!

Slap!

The man's fist was glowing, and he punched toward Jiang Chen's face. But too bad, Jiang Chen grabbed his fist in an instant!

Ha!

A shout emerged from the man's mouth as he began circulating his force in order to smash Jiang Chen, but to his surprise, his opponent's palm was like an iron clamp, and no matter how hard he tried, he just couldn't get his fist out from the grip.

"You dare say your bones are strong as iron and skin hard as copper with this weak strength?"

With a mocking expression, Jiang Chen forcefully squeezed his palm. In an instant, a bone cracking sound was heard, accompanied by a blood-curdling screech. The Combat Soul

warrior's arm was broken by Jiang Chen, and the broken bone pierced through his skin, shocking all those who watched.

Slap!

The Combat Soul warrior's face was slapped, and all his teeth were sent flying out from his mouth. The man simply had no way to resist Jiang Chen's attack, and was thrown onto the ground.

Jiang Chen didn't show any mercy! With tremendous force, he stepped onto the warrior's face and pushed it into the ground. Blood immediately shot out from the ground like a water foundation. The great warrior's body trembled and struggled, but in just a few breaths of time, he completely stopped struggling, and no motion could be seen.

Haa....

The scene made everyone gasp from shock. Ye Xiao, Shanguan Chong and the other Combat Soul warriors all stared at Jiang Chen, frightened. At this moment, none of them acted in the same overbearing manner as before, and their arrogance had been completely replaced by fear.

“Oh heavens, so strong! Now that their cultivation bases are being suppressed, those Combat Soul warriors are absolutely no match for Jiang Chen!”

“Yes, he's extremely fierce! He just killed a Combat Soul warriors

as if he was stepping on a tiny ant! Jiang Chen's body strength is too powerful, I don't think there anyone in the same real as him who can fight him! Those Combat Soul warriors are done for!"

"I don't think so. No matter how daring Jiang Chen is, he won't have the courage to kill all those Combat Soul warriors! Many of them are elders from respectable superpowers. Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong are also from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan."

.....

Everyone were stunned by what they just saw. The table between Jiang Chen and those Combat Soul warriors had completely turned! Jiang Chen was the one being chased and hunted down just now, but now, he was the one who could easily kill them!

Kaka!

Big Yellow burst into laughter. He immediately sprinted forward and arrived next to the dead Combat Soul warrior's body, then he took away his storage ring without any hesitation. This man and dog duo were experts at killing people and robbing them of all their belongings.

Jiang Chen gave Big Yellow a praising look. A Combat Soul warrior's storage ring was bound to have a lot of wealth, and since he had kill the man, he couldn't just let his wealth go to waste.



Tap... tap...

After killing the man, Jiang Chen didn't stop. He continued walking step by step toward the group of Combat Soul warriors. Although he was facing the group alone, his expression was a calm one. On the other side, the group of Combat Soul warriors were repeatedly stepping backwards. Their fear of Jiang Chen grew larger and larger with each passing step.

“Jiang Chen, do you know what you're doing right now?!”

Shangguan Chong pointed his finger at Jiang Chen while fiercely shouting at him.

Swoosh!

With great speed, Jiang Chen dashed forwards and grabbed Shangguan Chong's finger. He squeezed his palm with a tremendous force, causing Shangguan Chong's finger to explode and turn into a frightening blood mist.

“Arghh! Jiang Chen, little bastard!”

Shangguan Chong let out a horrifying cry.

“Old son of a bitch, even at this point of time, you're still yelling like a mad man? Do you really think daddy doesn't dare kill you? Fine, I'll kill you right now!”

Without saying anything else, Jiang Chen forcefully kicked Shangguan Chong's stomach. Although Shangguan Chong defended himself with his Yuan energy, he just couldn't resist Jiang Chen's attack. The powerful kick shattered the Yuan energy barrier, and knocked him away. He slammed into the ground nearly 40 meters from where he was kicked, and he started vomiting blood.

Before Shangguan Chong could stand up, Jiang Chen arrived in front of him. Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen raised his hand and threw a powerful punch at Shangguan Chong's head.

“No...”

The angry voice carrying a hint of unwillingness stopped abruptly. With Jiang Chen's powerful punch, even the hardest rocks would be shattered; let alone Shangguan Chong's head.

Shangguan Chong's exploded from Jiang Chen's powerful punch, and he died on the spot. After killing him, Jiang Chen didn't even take a second look at this dead body, he just turned around and continued walking toward the other Combat Soul warriors who previously tried killing him. On the other side, Big Yellow immediately jumped next to Shangguan Chong's dead body and began looting. Many people really hated what he was doing, but none of them dared speak a single word.

Jiang Chen's action once again caused a storm to sweep across the minds of the ones watching. Shangguan Chong's head just

exploded; this was going to be huge!

Who dared kill someone from the Shangguan Clan? Let alone a highly revered Elder! Jiang Chen just killed one without even blinking his eyes! His courage really made the crowds admire him.

Jiang Chen continued walked step by step toward Ye Xiao. Right at this moment, Ye Xiao had lost all his previous bearing. He was trembling all over as he repeatedly stepped backwards.

Terrifying!

Insanely terrifying!

This couldn't be considered a human anymore! Although the Combat Soul warriors' cultivation bases were being suppressed, their foundations were MUCH stronger than that of an ordinary Mortal Core warrior. But, in front of Jiang Chen, this powerful foundation was a joke! They felt like fragile babies facing a strong adult! Jiang Chen would easily be able to kill them with just a mere slap!

"Jiang... Jiang Chen, don't get yourself into trouble... you know you're going to be in deep shit if you offend the Myriad Sword Sect..."

Ye Xiao tried warning Jiang Chen, but clearly, he had no confidence in his words. As a formidable Combat Soul warrior, his voice was actually trembling!

“Ye Xiao, even now, you’re still talking trash? I just killed Shangguan Chong; do you really think I’m scared of you? If you had knelt down in front of me just now, your life might have been spared. But, it’s too late!”

Jiang Chen said with a grin on his face. He didn’t forget how Ye Xiao tried to kill him before this. When dealing with an enemy like this, he would never show any mercy!

# Chapter 310 – Controller Of Life And Death

---

Slap!

Without giving Ye Xiao any chance to respond, Jiang Chen simply slapped his fast. The mighty Combat Soul Elder from the Myriad Sword Sect couldn't even resist this slap, and he was instantly thrown onto the ground. All his teeth were knocked out by the slap's tremendous force.

Or put it this way, Ye Xiao did try to fight back, he had tried with all his effort, but Jiang Chen's strength was simply too much for him. His hard effort resembled an ant fighting against a human; absolutely useless!

Because of the ancient force's suppression, Jiang Chen was like the absolute ruler of this desert. All living beings had to kneel down before him, regardless if it was a formidable person in outside world; he had to coil down if he was a dragon, and he had to crouch if he was a tiger.

“Stop! You can't kill Sect Elder Ye!”

The genius from the Myriad Sword Sect, Lin Anying shouted out. With great speed, he took out a razor sharp longsword, and swung it at Jiang Chen like a poisonous snake.

Humph!

Although Lin Anying was quite fast, but in Jiang Chen's eyes, it was like he was moving in slow motion. Jiang Chen casually struck back. Nobody could see how he did it, but the longsword in Lin Anying's hand had mysteriously fallen into his hand. Without looking at Lin Anying, Jiang Chen swung the longsword and sliced off his head, causing blood to spout from his neck like a fountain. It was a truly magnificent scene!

“Senior disciple Lin!”

The female disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect cried out in fear. She covered her mouth while looking at Lin Anying's head, and her eyes were wide open, as if her eyeballs were going to jump out at any time.

“From the moment you wanted to kill me, you should have expected this to happen. Don't always wear such a superior expression on your face, don't think you can act regardless of the law and of natural morality just because you're from the Myriad Sword Sect. Only you are allowed to kill others, but not the other way around? That means bullshit to me! The Myriad Sword Sect is nothing but a fart in front of me!”

Jiang Chen spoke in a cruel tone, and gazed at all the disciples from the Myriad Sword Sect with a sharp gaze, causing them all to feel extremely frightened. Although they hated Jiang Chen to the core, none of them dared say a word.

Finally, they realized that this young man in front of them was not someone bound by the natural laws. He was a real mad man, and those who offended him; he would kill one by one, regardless

of their background. Some people even suspected, if the Emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty was here, and offended Jiang Chen; he would kill him as well!

The Myriad Sword Sect was but a fart! Underneath the heavens, perhaps only Jiang Chen was daring enough to give such a bold statement. But, no one found it laughable, Jiang Chen was quite fierce right now.

The crowds filled with over ten thousand people were completely silent, no one dared speak a word! Those warriors who claimed they wanted to kill Jiang Chen before this were extremely frightened right now. In this desert, since everyone's cultivations were suppressed to the same level, none of them were any match for Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen could kill them all if he wanted.

Wakaka...

A disharmonious laughter broke the silence. Big Yellow was bouncing around, excited. He had perfectly shown the crowds what someone without any restraints looked like.

In fact, Big Yellow, Han Yan, and Nangong Wentian; all of them felt extremely thrilled right now. Finally, they could finally get rid of the depression they felt earlier.

“Jiang Chen, you’re going to pay a serious price for what you did today!”

Underneath Jiang Chen's feet, Ye Xiao said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

"That's not something you need to worry about."

Without hesitation, Jiang Chen pushed the longsword in his hand forwards, impaling Ye Xiao's neck and killing him on the spot.

The pungent smell of blood started filling the desert. Three Combat Soul warriors were killed by Jiang Chen, as well as a genius from the Myriad Sword Sect. Such monstrous actions, perhaps only the ruthless Jiang Chen could do it.

"Extremely fierce! Even the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan couldn't scare him at all!"

"In my opinion, I don't think Jiang Chen went too far. Don't forget what these people did to Jiang Chen before this! If not for Jiang Chen being so abnormally strong, he might have been ripped into a thousand pieces by them by now. If their cultivations hadn't been suppressed within this desert, they wouldn't let Jiang Chen go so easily; this is their destiny."

"That's right, both sides have an unresolved debt. If one really wants to blame something, you can only blame their unlucky destiny for making them end up in this strange desert together with Jiang Chen. But, if Jiang Chen really kills all those Combat Soul warriors, he will be in huge trouble; the entire Eastern Continent will be in a huge uproar!"



.....

Mixed emotions filled the minds of the people in the crowds. No one could have predicted this, the table had turned in such a short amount of time. The game of cat and mouse, the sides had switch, Jiang Chen who was the mouse within the game had now turned into the formidable cat, and he was going to kill all the Combat Soul warriors, the mice.

After killing Ye Xiao, Jiang Chen immediately looked at Mao Sheng, then he said, “Since you wanted to avenge Mao Fang, I’ll give you a chance to attack me right now.”

Jiang Chen’s words caused Mao Sheng’s heart to sink into an abyss. Indeed, he really wished he could devour Jiang Chen alive, but the situation was clear; he was absolutely no match for Jiang Chen! If he attacked Jiang Chen, his destiny would be no better than that of Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong.

“Jiang Chen, I’ve just decided, I won’t look to avenge Mao Fang, and I’ve given up on getting revenge for the Qingyi Sect as well! I, Mao Sheng vow on my life, from now on, the Qingyi Sect won’t look for any trouble with you! What do you think?”

Mao Sheng’s words were like a subtle way of begging for forgiveness. He had no other choice right now. If he attacked, only certain death would await him; he would die in vain.

“A vow? Do you think I am a three year old kid? I know you’re

afraid of me, but that is pointless; I won't give you any chance to leave this desert! Three have died, you'll be fourth."

Jiang Chen raised the longsword in his hand, and pointed the cold steel toward Mao Sheng who stood opposite of him.

"Jiang Chen, don't go too far!"

Mao Sheng shouted.

"Haha, who is the one who has gone too far? You, a mighty Combat Soul warrior, publicly attacked me, a Divine Core warrior! Is this not considered going too far? Not only that, you did it with a dozen other Combat Soul warriors! All of you attacked me with the intent to kill me, did you ever think you were going too far while doing that? So, tell me, am I really going too far right now?"

Jiang Chen let out a belly laugh. He took a step forward, then he rushed forward like the wind. He arrived in front of Mao Sheng in just the blink of an eye, then he thrust his longsword forwards like a poisonous snake, impaling Mao Sheng's chest.

Bam!

A razor sharp sword energy exploded out within Mao Sheng's body, opening up a big hole on his chest.

"You-, you, Qingyi Sect... will definitely not... you go..."

Mao Sheng's body slowly fell onto the ground; the fourth Combat Soul warrior had fallen.

Once again, a massive storm swept through the minds of the people in the crowds. The remaining Combat Soul warriors who had offended Jiang Chen all had extremely pale faces, and all of them were clenching their fists tightly, and depression emerged within their hearts. As mighty Combat Soul warriors, their lives were in the palm of a young man, and none of them had any ability to do anything about it. Compared to what happened outside the Island of Ice, this was such an ironic scene.

“This group of men must be feeling extremely regretful right now.”

Old Man Ling Shan stood far away, and his arms were crossed in front of his chest as he spoke in an indifferent tone.

“They must be regretting becoming Jiang Chen's enemies.”

Golden Lion nodded his head in approval next to Old Man Ling Shan.

“No, they must be regretting not killing Jiang Chen with everything they got when they had the chance. Under that situation, if they hadn't been greedy for the Island of Ice's treasures, Jiang Chen would have been dead by now, and none of this would have happened.”

Old Man Ling Shan explained with a smile on his face. He had an expression of one who rejoiced in the misfortune of others. At the same time, he felt really lucky for not becoming Jiang Chen's enemy.

After killing Mao Sheng, Jiang Chen didn't stop. He turned around and continued walking toward the rest of the Combat Soul warriors. All of these mighty warriors were his enemies, the most formidable enemies, so leaving them behind would be a huge risk for Jiang Chen, and it would be a tremendous threat.

"You have lost the opportunity to kneel down and beg for forgiveness, and your destinies have been determined; no different from those four before you."

Jiang Chen said as he continued walking toward these great warriors. He looked like a Judge of Hell walking through the mortal realm, judging who gets to live and who gets to die with his words.

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, a man suddenly flew up into the skies. On his back there was a pair of golden colored wings. The wings were made entirely from Yuan energy, and they repeatedly flapped up and down. Clearly, it was a miraculous movement skill.

"Haha, Jiang Chen, I don't think you expected this! Even with a Mortal Core cultivation base, daddy can still fly! Once I leave this

desert, and my cultivation base is restored to its original state; death will rain down upon you!”

The man burst into laughter. With a flap of his wings, he turned into a trail of light and dashed toward the inner parts of the desert.

Looking at the man, Jiang Chen couldn't help but shake his head. He didn't even take a second look at the warrior who just flew away. He knew it was useless even if the warrior could fly; he was dead for sure!

“Showing off your flying ability in front of this master dog, you're really overconfident!”

Big Yellow let out a belly laugh. In an instant, a pair of wings appeared on his back, and his majestic body turned into a trail of light as well. In just the blink of an eye, he had caught up with the warrior who had flown far away, and blocked his path.

“With this speed you're trying to run away from us?”

Big Yellow said in an impolite manner.

The man's expression changed, he didn't expect that someone else could fly just like him as well, and this someone was actually a dog! But, his fear of Big Yellow came nowhere close to his fear of Jiang Chen.

“Damn dog, fuck off!”

The man raised the huge broadsword in his hand, and chopped it toward Big Yellow.

Swoosh!

Big Yellow's figure was chopped in half by the man. But, before the man could let out an excited laughter, he realized that what he just chopped was Big Yellow's shadow, and Big Yellow had appeared right in front of his face.

“Kaka, go to hell!”

With a tremendous force, Big Yellow slammed his head right into the man's chest. Underneath the terrified eyes of the crowds, the Combat Soul warrior let out a blood-curdling screech, and was knocked back to where he came from. He was slammed into where he original stood before he tried fleeing, and after effortlessly struggling for a bit, he completely stopped moving.

Many people gasped in fear. A large area of the Combat Soul warrior's chest had caved in, and all his viscera had shattered. This caused the crowds to feel even more fear of Big Yellow.

“The fuck!? How can this dog's head be so powerful?!”

Nangong Wentian stared at Big Yellow with eyes wide open, in shock. This was the first time in his entire life he had witnessed such a frightening dog head.

A shadow was cast in the hearts' of the remaining Combat Soul warriors. They tried fleeing from here by leaving the island, but the entrance to the Island of Ice was a one-way entrance. Once they entered, they couldn't see the illusionary entrance any longer; this land was a completely isolated realm.

## Chapter 311 – A Major Event Is Coming

---

There was a ferocious tiger in front of them, and there was no way to flee. This was a situation where only certain death awaited them. These mighty Combat Soul warriors had no way of escaping from Jiang Chen, the devil's clutch.

The crowds couldn't help but sigh. Before they came to the Island of Ice, Jiang Chen had been trapped in a situation where only certain death awaited... multiple times. But, in the end, he was able to survive the threat, and once they entered the Island of Ice, the tables had completely turned.

With Jiang Chen's character, he wouldn't give any opportunities for life to these Combat Soul warriors. The people in the crowds had all witnessed Jiang Chen's approaches; he was a fierce and brutal man. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had already proved his fierce reputation when he slaughtered the countless Divine Core warriors back in Inferno Hell.

Even the men from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan were killed, let alone the remaining Combat Soul warriors. When facing Jiang Chen, these mighty warriors simply had no ability to fight back.

“Let's attack him together! We're all Early Mortal Core warriors right now, I refuse to believe he can defy the Heavenly Order!”

“Precisely! Let's attack him all together! Since we're all at the same cultivation level, with so many of us attacking him alone, we



should be able to kill him!”

Two Combat Soul warriors shouted out as their eyes turned red. Their words touched the Divine Core warriors, especially the core disciples from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. All of them joined forces in order to kill Jiang Chen. In the blink of an eye, more than forty warriors had grouped together, and they stood opposite of Jiang Chen with killing intent spreading into every single direction.

These people finally realized the fact; only by unitedly attacking Jiang Chen would they have a chance to survive. Since all of them were Early Mortal Core warriors now, no matter how strong Jiang Chen’s abilities was; there was no way he could defeat so many united, mighty warriors.

Those core disciples from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan clearly hated Jiang Chen to their core. Furthermore, they knew one thing; once all these Combat Soul warriors were killed by Jiang Chen, with his character, they would become his next target. Every single Divine Core warrior who joined the force had the same thoughts. Before they entered the Island of Ice, they had grouped together and attacked Jiang Chen, and the enmity between them had been set. There was no way to return other than group together once again. Only through unity would they have a chance to survive!

“Jiang Chen, if you know what you’re going to face, there is still time for you to run away from here!”

A Combat Soul warrior shouted at Jiang Chen.

“Looks like you’ve truly wasted all the years you lived, why can you still not get a clear grip on the current situation? Why do you still wear that same superior expression on your face? Do you really think that with this group of people, you can kill me, Jiang Chen?”

With an indifferent expression, Jiang Chen threw his glance at the warriors. After that, he turned to the rest of the warriors who stood next to him and asked, “Are there any more who wants to kill me? I’ll give you a chance, stand out right now.”

Jiang Chen never showed those who tried to kill him any mercy. When the group of men in front of him made up their minds and decided to kill Jiang Chen, their destinies had been determined. Jiang Chen always behaved cruelly and brutally in front of his enemies, mainly because he didn’t want to leave behind any potential future threats.

Commotion erupted amongst the crowds, but no one dared stand out. Those warriors who wanted to kill Jiang Chen were all hiding within the crowds, and dared not speak a single word. Most of these warriors were actually quite smart, and they could easily tell how ruthless Jiang Chen was. Becoming Jiang Chen’s enemy was definitely not a wise decision! Therefore, it was better for them to just keep low, and not gamble their lives here.

“No one?”

Jiang Chen put his glance back onto the group standing opposite

of him. His eyes were so sharp that it caused the group to feel as if a blade was scraping their faces. Jiang Chen slowly raised the longsword in his hand. The cold reflection of the sword seemed so frightening, as if it could devour the souls of those who stared at it.

“Let’s kill him...!”

The leading Combat Soul warrior let loose a furious shout, and he became the first one to turn into a trail of light and dash toward Jiang Chen.

“All of you are going to die.”

The corners of Jiang Chen’s mouth rose upwards, causing an indifferent grin to emerge on his face. His body sway, then in an instant, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared, immediately confusing his opponents.

After that!

Argh...!

Sad and shrill screams resounded throughout the opponent’s group. Blood was spilled everywhere, and broken limbs were flying all over the place. Jiang Chen could be seen everywhere amongst the opponent’s group, and he was moving so fast that he looked like a ghost that could appear anywhere; anytime. His opponents didn’t even have the slightest opportunity to fight back. Or, put it this way, they simply couldn’t tell how Jiang Chen appeared in

front of them, before they died.

Puchi!

Argh...!

The longsword in Jiang Chen's hand was like a deadly poisonous snake, and death would claim life whenever it struck, including the lives of those Combat Soul warriors. None of them were able to withstand even just a single strike from Jiang Chen!

Blood and flesh flew around, and the crowds who were watching this from a spectator's standpoint couldn't restrain fear from engulfing their hearts. The slaughter made their faces turn pale. In just approximately thirty seconds, the scene became deadly silent.

It was completely silent. Although there was a crowd with more than ten thousand warriors here; not even the sound of breathing could be heard at this point of time; it was deadly silent! Everyone were just staring at the hellish scene in front of them.

In less than just one minute, over forty warriors had been completely slaughtered; none of them had survived. The place had turned into a blood pool, and the pungent smell of blood was constantly emitting, causing those who smelled it to feel like vomiting.

Eight Combat Soul warriors, all core disciples of the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, as well as the other Divine Core

warriors; they were all dead! Blood dripped down from Jiang Chen's longsword, and whenever a drop of blood hit the ground, it sound like a huge hammer slamming into the souls of all those watching.

Right at this moment, the way Jiang Chen was looked upon by the crowds had completely changed. The innocent looking young man was a truly ruthless devil king! He didn't even blink his eyes as he killed these warriors!

“Ruthless! Extremely ruthless!”

“He didn't even blink while killing the warriors! I think it's best if we keep a distance from him in the future!”

“I swear to the Heavens; I will NEVER offend this devil king, no matter what!”

.....

Every single person amongst the crowds made a decision; they would keep a safe distance from Jiang Chen, and under absolutely no circumstance would they become Jiang Chen's enemy! The scene they just witnessed what simply too brutal!

Those who previously joined forces to attack Jiang Chen, but didn't stand out just now felt incredibly lucky! If they didn't restrain themselves from jumping out just now, they would be lying on the ground, dead like the ones who had. None would be

alive right now.

There were still a dozen Combat Soul warriors in the desert, including Old Man Ling Shan and Golden Lion, and all of them wore the same shocked expression. They stared at Jiang Chen, and their hearts couldn't help but tremble in fear. At the same time, they felt lucky they didn't become Jiang Chen's enemy! If they had, their destinies would be no better than that of these men lying on the ground! Although Jiang Chen's cultivation was weaker than theirs, but while trapped in this desert, he was invincible!

“Big Yellow!”

Jiang Chen slowly put away the longsword in his hand, then he shouted at Big Yellow. Big Yellow immediately understood what Jiang Chen wanted to tell him, and he immediately dashed to the bodies on the ground with incredible speed, then he took away all their storage rings, as well as their Combat Weapons.

This once again made the crowds jealous. The combined wealth of all these dead warriors was enormous, it was an astronomical figure! Furthermore, many of the treasures seen in the auction were won by these warriors, and now, they all belonged to Jiang Chen!

For Jiang Chen, there was no reason to negotiate with his enemies, and the crowds were simply just jealous about the loot he got. If he didn't take away all this wealth, the crowds would do it for him; this was the cruel reality.

“Little Chen, our loot this time is huge! Much more than what we got back in Inferno Hell!”

Big Yellow’s smile was so big that he could barely open his eyes.

“Come, let’s proceed further into the Island of Ice.”

Jiang Chen smiled, and didn’t even pay any attention to the crowds. He started walking toward the inner parts of the desert. Since he actually didn’t want to fight these superpowers, he had hidden his real identity when he came to the Blissful Island, but fate had pushed him into all of this. However, Jiang Chen had no fear at all; different situations called for different measures. As the once greatest Saint underneath the heavens, Jiang Chen’s path towards the top would always be filled with powerful enemies and huge pressure.

Haa~

After Jiang Chen left, the crowds finally breathed out in relief. The pressure they felt when standing in the same area as a devil king like Jiang Chen was too huge! Those who wanted to kill Jiang Chen really desired to place their palms together and chant out Amitābha, as if their lives had just been saved.<sup>1</sup>

“So many people were killed, this matter is going to become huge!”

Someone said.

“True. Most of those Combat Soul warriors had significant backgrounds, especially the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan; they will definitely not let this matter go easily! Jiang Chen killed a lot of great warriors today, and the consequences for doing so will be much more serious compared to what he did in Inferno Hell.”

“The Island of Ice appearing has inevitably drawn a lot of attention, I’m sure those superpowers in the Eastern Continent have learned about this. Perhaps they’re in the middle of sending people over here right now? Even the Martial Saint Dynasty and Martial Palace might come here. If they see what we’re looking at right now, the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan will definitely become furious. Also, those superpowers from the other powerful provinces will most likely come here as well, and none of them are going to let Jiang Chen off the hook easily. This is going to be fun!”

“Precisely, Jiang Chen is going to face a situation where there are enemies in absolutely all directions! I wonder if he resist the fury of all these superpowers!”

.....

Everyone present had mixed emotions regarding this matter. Just one or two days later, all the superpowers will have sent their men to the island. According to the previous opening of the Island of Ice a hundred years ago, it took seven days before the entrance shut down completely, and those who entered would have to find a new exit by themselves. In the next days, more and more great



warriors would arrive at the Island of Ice, and at that point of time, the situation would truly become chaotic. In other words, the fight between Jiang Chen and the superpowers had just begun.

“Let’s go! We have to proceed further into this Island of Ice, let’s hurry up and leave this desert; daddy doesn’t feel safe at all when staying here.”

“You’re right. Our cultivations are restricted, I don’t feel safe either. Once we leave this desert, our cultivations will be restored to their original state.”

“Right! Also, we can’t move these dead bodies either, just leave them here. Once those great warriors from the various superpowers arrive, something huge is definitely going to happen!”

.....

Many people threw their glances at the dead bodies scattered all around. After that, they just turned around and continue running toward the inner parts of the desert. As warriors of the Heavenly Core and Divine Core realm, they had gotten used to flying around, and it had been a long time since they had to travel around on foot. The restriction to their cultivations made them panic, and they desired to leave this desert as quickly as possible, so that their cultivations could be restored.

[1\]](#) Chanting word for Buddhist's, similar to 'May god have mercy upon our souls'

# Chapter 312 – Fork In The Road, Nine Paths

---

Jian Province, Eastern Continent!

Above a mountain range, white fog could be seen hovering everywhere, causing it to somewhat resemble a paradise. On top of the mountain range, palaces and houses could be seen everywhere, and the natural Yuan energy here was extremely rich. If an ordinary warriors was allowed to cultivate here, his cultivation would definitely improve significantly.

Hers lies the heart of the Jian Province, a dream destination for numerous warriors, the base of a superpower; the Myriad Sword Sect!

Right at this moment, outside the Myriad Sword Sect, a couple of warriors carrying longswords on their backs came into sight.

“The Island of Ice has reappeared after a hundred years; this is our fortune. This time, I, the Sect Elder will bring you all to the island. As for how many benefits you can get; it all depends on yourself.”

The one standing in front of these warriors was an old white-bearded man with an incredibly strong cultivation base which was no weaker than that of Master Blissful. Amongst the group of warriors standing in front of him, aside from the two Combat Soul Sect Elders from the Myriad Sword Sect, the rest were all genius disciples. A man with a handsome face stood at the front, and he held a folding fan in his hand, and looked like he was in his

twenties. His aura, however, was extremely powerful; he was actually a Combat Soul warrior! A genius like this was incredibly rare in the entire Eastern Continent.

Soon after, the old white-bearded man took out a huge sword. In an instant, the sword expanded and became so big that the entire group of more than ten warriors could stand on top of it. After all the men stepped onto the sword, it immediately started flying at an incredible speed; towards the ocean.

When a Mid Combat Soul warrior controlled the sword, it would only take 2-3 days to reach the ocean from the Jian Province.

At the same time, a similar scene played out in the Shangguan Clan's base. When they found out about the reappearance of the Island of Ice, the Shangguan Clan immediately sent out their Sect Elders and some geniuses to try their luck.

Even the Martial Palace and Martial Saint Dynasty sent their men. The storm brought by the appearance of the Island of Ice was tremendous! No superpowers were willing to let go of this rare opportunity! And they weren't the only ones, all the superpowers, as well as rogue warriors started rushing toward the Island of Ice upon hearing the news.

At the moment, the ocean had become very crowded. Numerous powerful warriors were rushing towards the center of the ocean, and many warriors who lived closer to the ocean had already arrived.

The Island of Ice had attracted countless warriors, especially those geniuses from the younger generation. Because of their capabilities and genius status, they were all incredibly prideful, and all of them possessed great destinies. Therefore, they wanted to enter the Island of Ice with their destinies, and try to obtain an even greater destiny. Nonetheless, they might be the next rising star! Every single warrior could still remember, the Martial Saint Dynasty's current emperor had improved significantly upon returning from the Island of Ice, and he eventually became a Combat King warrior.

Right at this moment, within Island of Ice!

The desert covered a very large area. Jiang Chen and his group were the fastest amongst the warriors present, so they were in the leading position right now.

“Wahaha, what a pleasant day! Not only did we kill all those old sons of bitches, we also obtain an enormous amount of wealth!”

Big Yellow let out a belly laughter. He was in an extremely joyful mood.

“Little Chen, I never thought you were such a brutal guy, it looks like I truly underestimated you! But, what surprised me even more was, I never thought such a brilliant genius would exist in the Eastern Continent!”

Nangong Wentian said as he sighed.

“Little Chen has always behaved brutally in front of his enemies. You got to know this, all of them are our enemies, and if our positions were reversed, and we were the ones captured by them; I don’t think our destinies would be any better than theirs.”

Han Yan casually shrugged his shoulders with a carefree expression on his face. This was how the world of cultivation worked; the strong prey on the weak! And when the enemies are so determined to kill you, if you treated them with mercy; that would be no different than digging a hole for yourself!

“Brother Nan, just now you said you didn’t think such a brilliant genius would exist in the Eastern Continent... You aren’t from the Eastern Continent?”

Jiang Chen was a little startled. He turned and asked Nangong Wentian.

“That’s right. Little Chen, Brother Yan, although we haven’t known each other for long, I do feel we’re quite similar. Furthermore, Little Chen has saved my life, so I don’t want to hide anything from you. I actually come from the Southern Continent, and I was travelling around in order to see the world, but it seems like I went too far and reached the Eastern Continent. Damn it! I was pretty unlucky back then! Just after I arrived at the Eastern Continent, I bumped into a savage beast that can devour souls. Although daddy killed it by tearing it to pieces, I was still poisoned by it. The poison was constantly devouring my soul every single day, and I tried countless things to get rid of it, but I just couldn’t. In the end, I had no other options but to come to the Blissful Manor in search of pills that could heal my soul. Of course, those

ordinary soul pills are useless to me, there's no way they could get rid of the savage poison. But, Little Chen, you're really amazing! The Nine Soul Restoration Pills you concocted finally made me fully recover!"

Nangong Wentian explained.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan couldn't help but sigh. They didn't expect this guy to come from the Southern Continent! After listening to Nangong Wentian's explanation, Jiang Chen and Han Yan finally understood why he wanted to use the Nine Solar Holy Water in exchange for the Nine Soul Restoration Pills; it was all because he was poisoned!

The Soul Devouring Barbaric Beasts were frightening demon beasts! They lived in dark places, and were born with incredible stealth and sneak attack abilities. Their population was quite low, but all of them possessed incredible offensive abilities, and their attacks were mostly targeted at souls. By devouring souls, they could make themselves stronger. If any ordinary warrior was attacked by a Soul Devouring Beast, the consequences would be devastating!

To be frank, Nangong Wentian meeting Jiang Chen was all because of his good luck.

"Damn! The distance between the Southern Continent and Eastern Continent is not small! With your speed, you should have spent quite a lot of time traveling here, right?"

Big Yellow looked at Nangong Wentian and asked.

“I like adventures, it took me a bit more than one year to reach the Eastern Continent, from the Southern Continent. It wasn’t a boring journey, and I went through a lot. Once we have some free time, I’ll tell you about what I saw along the way! Also, let me tell you, when I left the Southern Continent, I was only an Early Divine Core warrior, but now, I’m a peak Divine Core warrior, and I’ll soon be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm, hehe!”

Nangong Wentian said in a narcissistic manner.

“The fuck?!”

Han Yan threw his glance at Nangong Wentian, unsure of what to say.

“With Brother Nan’s talent, that is perfectly normal.”

Jiang Chen said as he nodded his head. From the Southern Continent to the Eastern Continent, it was indeed a huge distance, as it involved two huge continents. It wasn’t difficult to imagine how many dangers Nangong Wentian had to face along his way. But, only by constantly facing challenges and risks while solving them would a warrior be able to grow quickly. Furthermore, Nangong Wentian’s talent was no less than that of anyone else. After constantly experiencing different situations for over a year, it was perfectly normal for him to have such progress.



“Brother Nan, where did you get so much Nine Solar Holy Water?”

Han Yan asked.

“So much my ass! Daddy only had 8 drops of Nine Solar Holy Water! I consumed one drop some time ago, three drops in exchange for the Nine Soul Restoration Pills, and another tree drops as a reward for Master Blissful... I only have one last drop now...”

Nangong Wentian said in a gloomy manner.

Nangong Wentian didn't tell them where he got the Nine Solar Holy Water, so Jiang Chen and Han Yan didn't pursue him for an answer. They didn't ask about Nangong Wentian's background in the Southern Continent either. For them, having a brother and a friend like this was more than enough. If he wanted, he would have told them. If not, it was pointless to push him for answers.

The group continued running forwards, and even with their speed, when they finally left the desert, two hours had passed.

The concept of day and night didn't exist within the Island of Ice, and there was no sun and moon either. The entire island looked quiet and calm, and it wasn't dangerous and brutal like the Inferno Hell was either. The environment was ordinary, the light was ordinary; everything seemed kind of... dull.

“Wahaha, my cultivation has finally been restored! It was true, once we left the desert, the mysterious force would disappear by itself!”

“My cultivation has been restored as well! The feeling of having my cultivation base is so nice! The restriction made it hard for me to breathe just now!”

“So we can now be considered to have entered the real parts of the Island of Ice! What awaits us now are endless amounts of treasures!”

.....

After leaving the desert, the crowds started excitedly yelling. Just as everyone had expected, the ancient and mysterious force only existed in the desert. Once they left the place, it would completely disappear, and their cultivations would be restored to normal.

After leaving the desert, a plain field appeared in front of them. It looked just like any other plain field, and there were no treasures in front of them now either.

“Let’s try flying towards the ends of this plain field, I’m sure we’ll find some treasures there!”

Someone said.

Right at this moment, many people threw their glances at Jiang

Chen who was flying in front of them. Before entering the Island of Ice, Jiang Chen was surrounded by enemies, and were in multiple certain death situations. But, Jiang Chen had personally killed all his enemies back in the desert. Therefore, he had no more worries about being attacked by his enemies.

As for the rest of the Combat Soul warriors, none of them had any problems with Jiang Chen. If they did, they would have attacked him previously. And as for those Divine Core warriors who previously desired to kill Jiang Chen, they didn't dare try that anymore. Their cultivations had indeed been restored, but, so had Jiang Chen's!

The more than ten thousand warriors were scattered around in different locations, and all of them were rushing toward the end of this plain field at the same time. But, this time, they were all flying; no more walking!

A few minutes, the crowds reached the end of the plain field. A white fog suddenly emerged in front of them, and when they came closer to the fog, they discovered there were nine paths in front of them! Each path had appeared out of nowhere, and they looked illusionary, and none of them seemed to be real.

“How come there are so many paths? How are we going to choose which to take?”

“We must be extra careful! Although this Island of Ice is a huge treasure, I'm sure it's also filled with great dangers. Some paths must lead to real treasures, and some must lead to great dangers.”

“Precisely. Let’s wait and see. It’s best not to be too impulsive. If we enter some dangerous situation, our lives would be thrown away in vain.”

.....

The crowds immediately stopped flying. Everyone stared at the fork in the road, the nine paths in front of them! They had no idea which path they should choose. The mysterious force that had suppressed their cultivations in the desert had told them one thing; this Island of Ice was an extraordinary place, and as always, risk and opportunity came together! When there was a great opportunity, great danger would usually lurk nearby. No one wanted to risk their lives for nothing. Therefore, they had to be really careful when picking which path they should take.

White fog hovered around all nine paths. Everything seemed quiet and calm, but the crowds felt an eerie feeling as they looked at the nine paths and the white fog.

# Chapter 313 – Selective Death

---

“Little Chen, there are nine paths in front of us, how are we going to choose?”

Han Yan turned to Jiang Chen and asked. Han Yan’s image of Jiang Chen’s omnipotence was deeply rooted in his mind, that’s why whenever they encountered a situation with a lot of variables, Han Yan would just turn to Jiang Chen for his opinion.

“Anything could happen in this kind of situation that has a lot of variables; each path can lead us to anything. Let’s just wait and see.”

Jiang Chen replied as he stared at all nine paths, carefully examining each of the. But, he couldn’t tell any of them apart.

“Why are you losing your head? I’m sure there are someone else who are more nervous than us, just let those impatient people enter first.”

Nangong Wentian crossed his arms in front of his chest. His expression was a calm one.

Time passed by, and crowds of people stood in front of the nine paths. None of them dared make the first move, but, it seemed like they were getting more and more relentless. It was just as Nangong Wentian had said; some people were starting to get impatient.

“I don’t see any difference in these nine paths, and since you’re all such cowards, I’ll be the first one to proceed! I choose the middle path!”

Right at this moment, a young man who looked to be in his twenties stood out. He was a genius disciple from the Eastern Continent, and he was an Early Divine Core warrior at this young age, which made him feel really proud of himself.

Newborn calves weren’t afraid of tigers; all youngsters liked adventuring! Therefore, this young man became the first one to walk one of the paths. He directly stepped onto the middle path with vigorous steps.

Swoosh!

In the blink of an eye, after the young man stepped onto the middle path, it seemed like he was impacted by some sort of dimensional force. His body trembled a little bit, but it soon stabilized. After that, he turned around to the crowds and started laughing, “Look, nothing bad happened! Daddy is going in now!”

The young man turned around and continued walking further into the path, then he just suddenly disappeared.

“Nothing happened to him. Alright, I’ll choose the middle path as well.”

Seeing that nothing happened to the young man, the rest of the

people didn't want to waste more time. Everyone understood one fact; the first person to enter might be the first one to get treasures!

At this moment, about eight people dashed toward the middle path, together.

In just a split second, these people reached the middle path. But, something suddenly happened!

Argh!!

A few miserable shrieks resounded. Under the frightened gazes from the crowd, six men from the group who just entered exploded like balloons, instantly turning into blood mists. After that, the bloody mist just disappeared into nowhere.

What?!

Many people cried out in alarm at the same time. Those who were right behind the group that just entered instantly stopped moving, stunned and frightened by what just happened.

The scene was extremely terrifying! The path still looked normal, and nothing weird had appeared, but those who entered the path just got killed for no reason.

What was even more puzzling was, there was a total of eight warriors who stepped onto the path, six of them died, but the two

young men weren't hurt at all.

Presently, the expressions of those two young men turned real ugly. Their bodies were covered in the blood of those warriors who just died. Six men had just died without any prior signs. But, nothing happened to either of them. This was a bizarre situation that really frightened them.

“How did that happen?”

“Why did 6 of them die, but those two didn't?”

“What's going on? This is terrifying!”

No one could remain calm any longer, the situation had stunned every single one present. Finally, the two young men woke up from their shock. Both of them looked at each other, then they both let out a belly laughter, “Hahaha, I knew it! The Island of Ice's treasures are prepare for those with great destinies! Those with weak destinies can't proceed any further! We are in, and still alive... this means we are men with great destinies, hahaha!”

Both men were extremely thrilled. They immediately turned around and continued walking forwards, soon disappeared from the eyes of the crowds.

“This is odd... I don't believe it, there must be something wrong with this path! Let me try another path... I pick the first path!”



An old man in his fifties started walking toward the first path, but stopped when he arrived in front of the path. From the sweat on his face, one could easily tell how panicked he was. After all, a few people had just died on another path, so he would be lying if he said he wasn't a bit panicked.

“Fuck it, I don't care anymore!”

The old man gritted his teeth. It wasn't easy for him to come here, so he couldn't just return empty handed. The old man took a step forward and stepped onto the first path.

“Haha, look, I told you, there was something wrong with that path, nothing bad happened, arggh!!”

The old man got very excited, but in the next second, a miserable shriek left his mouth, just like the previous men. In an instant, his body exploded and turned into a blood mist, then he disappeared into nowhere, just like the others.

With this, the crowds were greatly frightened. They looked at the nine paths in front of them as if they were looking at the paths of death. The way those people died was really bizarre; they just died for no reason at all!

“Damn it, this is really scary, how did this happen?”

“This horrifying, all nine paths have the same problem! We might just die at any time!”

.....

The crowds were terrified, and few could remain calm. Their desire to hunt for treasure has lessened. No matter how precious the treasure might be; nothing could compare to the importance of their own lives.

About ten Combat Soul warriors stood at the front with frowns on their faces. They too had many doubts regarding which path they should choose. Soon, one of the Combat Soul warrior's eyes lit up. In the end, he couldn't resist the temptation of treasure, so he finally picked a path and started walking toward it.

“Those who died were too weak.”

After saying that, he immediately stepped onto the path he had chosen. Right after he stepped onto the path, everyone could see a frightened expression emerge on his face, and he restlessly struggled to step off the path. But, he was done for.

Boom!

An explosion resounded. The Combat Soul warrior's body exploded in just a second, and turned into a bloody mist which hovered around the place.

“Even a Combat Soul warrior died, who else has the courage to step onto a path?”

“That’s it, this is a path to death, and we have no way of entering! Is it really like that young man said, they were able to enter because they’re men with great destinies?”

Panic struck almost everyone’s minds. Few were able to remain calm when facing such a situation.

The Golden Lion furrowed his brows, as if he had just thought of something. He threw his glance at a young man no far away from him. The young man was only at the peak Heavenly Core realm, and it looked like he was still frightened by what he had seen, as his face was pale.

Pat!

The Golden Lion grabbed the young man’s shoulder and said, “You go.”

“Senior, please spare my life, I don’t want to die now!”

The young man nearly pissed his pants, and he repeatedly cursed the Golden Lion inwardly. So many warriors had died, so sending him in was just like killing him. He also didn’t think he was a man with a great destiny either.

“Just go, you might be able to survive.”

With tremendous force, the Golden Lion threw the young man onto one of the paths as if he was throwing a kite. A pitiful shriek immediately left the young man's mouth, and his face turned red. The strength of a Combat Soul warrior was not something he could resist.

Plop!

The young man's butt collided with the entrance of the path. He was incredibly scared, and his body was violently trembling. His eyes were closed, and his pants were wet... he really pissed himself out of fear...

A minute passed by, and the young man didn't explode into a blood mist. Slowly, he opened his eyes and found out he was sitting on the path, and he wasn't dead! Without hesitating, he jumped up from where he sat, and stood up straightly.

“Wahaha, daddy is still alive, daddy is a man with a great destiny as well!”

The young man was very excited; he was still alive! Immediately, he turned to the Golden Lion and bowed. After that, he walked further along the path.

“What happened? Why did some men die, while others didn't?”

This was the biggest mystery that took place within the minds of those within the crowds, a mystery everyone were having a hard

time figuring out.

“Little Chen, do you know the reason behind this?”

Han Yan asked.

“I understand now. These paths are actually all the same, but they have a selective process. Have you realized by now? Those who survived are all young men, and those who died in an instant were all old. That means, only those within certain age range can enter without getting hurt. As for those who are older, once they step onto the path, they will immediately be killed.”

Jiang Chen didn't lower his voice, so everyone could hear what he said.

“What Brother Jiang Chen said is correct. If my guess is correct, those under 30 will be able to enter. As for those above 30... looks like we aren't destined to get any treasures...”

The Golden Lion said in a depressed tone. All the Combat Soul warriors felt slightly depressed at the moment. All of them were clearly older than 30.

“Haha, now I understand! This was made only for the young ones! All of you are too old, and don't have much potential, so the fortune of this Island of Ice isn't for you!”

A young man burst into laughter, then he flew toward one of the

paths, soon disappearing from everyone's eyes. Indeed, nothing bad had happened to him.

“It might not be limited to those under 30, I am 31 years old this year, so I might be able to enter as well.”

“Why don't you give it a try?”

“Alright, I'll give it a try right now!”

The man walked straight forward to one of the paths. He was really confident in himself, and thought he was still young, as he was only 30-one years old. But too bad, he only realized his mistake upon stepping onto the path.

After the man exploded into a blood mist, the crowds finally understood the rules. Many people became despondent. But, as for those youngsters, they were really excited! The Island of Ice didn't welcome anyone, it only welcomed those from the younger generation! With this, the competition immediately became less tense.

Looking at all those young men under 30 stepping onto the paths, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's lips curved upwards at the same time.

“Hehe, fighting the younger generation sure is fun! Little Chen, let's go together!”

Nangong Wentian turned to Jiang Chen and said.

However, Jiang Chen on the other side was frowning. According to his body's age, he was only 16 years old right now, not even 17. But, as for his soul, he was an old monster who had lived for millenniums. If this was counted as his actual age, he would exploded in an instant.

This situation caused Jiang Chen to be at a loss. It wouldn't be any fun if it actually judged by the age of one's soul.

# Chapter 314 – Stone Golem

---

“Fuck his granny! Looks like we indeed wasted our time by coming here.”

Old Man Ling Shan said in a gloomy manner.

“We, as rogue cultivators, don’t even have any talented juniors. If we did, we could still let out juniors enter and try their luck.”

Another Combat Soul warrior said.

“Daddy will find myself a genius disciple after leaving this place! This is too depressing...”

The Golden Lion was even more depressed than the others. The Island of Ice had reappeared, but all he could do was stare at it, nothing else. Those mighty warriors from the superpowers were better than him, and although they too couldn’t enter the place, they could still bring the ones from the younger generation along and let them enter.

At this moment, a man suddenly arrived in front of everyone. It was none other than Master Blissful!

“What’s going on? Why aren’t you proceeding further? Also, who killed all those people in the desert?”



Master Blissful looked at the Golden Lion and the rest of the warriors and asked.

“I killed them all.”

Jiang Chen responded to Master Blissful’s question. Only now did Master Blissful noticed Jiang Chen and the others in his group. His expression had a slight change as he recalled the brutal scene left behind in the desert.

“Understood.”

Master Blissful let out a sigh as he nodded his head. He knew what happened between Jiang Chen and all those mighty warriors, and when thinking about how everyone’s cultivations were restricted upon entering the desert, it wasn’t hard for Master Blissful to understand what happened. Even so, Master Blissful still admired Jiang Chen’s courage. Because, even for him, superpowers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan were not someone he wished to offend at all.

“Why is Master Blissful only here now?”

Jiang Chen asked, curiously.

“I bumped into some troubles back at the bottom of the ocean, and I didn’t expect the Island of Ice to reappear. As for you all, why are you still here?”

Master Blissful threw his glance at the nine paths, and couldn't help but ask.

“Master Blissful, we can't enter, even you can't enter. These paths are really bizarre, only those are under 30 years old are allowed to enter. Those older than thirty will die immediately upon stepping onto the path.”

Old Man Ling Shan said with a smile on his face.

“What?!”

Master Blissful's expression changed.

“Master Blissful, what Old Man Ling Shan said is correct. This is what we've found out.”

Nangong Wentian said.

Hearing the cruel fact, Master Blissful was stunned on the spot. In the next second, he could really see that all those who stepped onto the paths were all young man. Finally, he couldn't help but let two words escape from his mouth, “The fuck?!”

Regarding most men, this situation indeed left them speechless. The treasure was right in front of them, but they could only stare at it! It was really difficult to explain the feeling.

“This is fate. When the current emperor entered the Island of Ice, I believe he was only 20 years old. But, unfortunately, the Island of Ice only appears once every 100 years, we can only blame the fact we weren’t born at the right time. As for now, what we can do now is find a way to leave this island somewhere else. If we’re lucky, we might be able to find some treasures along our way.”

The Golden Lion said. Although all these 30 year old and above warriors felt extremely depressed, this was a fact they had to accept; there was nothing else they could really do. They couldn’t just ignore the rules and kill themselves by stepping onto the path.

“Little Chen, let’s delay no more, we need to quickly enter!”

Nangong Wentian was really impatient.

Jiang Chen once again furrowed his brows. For the first time in this life; he was feeling uncertainty!

“Little Chen, what’s wrong with you?”

Han Yan could finally see an ugly expression on Jiang Chen’s face.

“Nothing.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“If nothing, let’s hurry up and enter!”

Big Yellow was impatient as well.

“Hey Big Yellow, just how old of a dog are you? Don’t get yourself killed!”

Nangong Wentian turned to Big Yellow Dog and said.

“Get lost! You’re the old dog! Damn it! Daddy is a mighty and formidable being! I’m still young, how could I possibly be more than 30 years old?!”

Big Yellow bared his teeth and threw an angry glance at Nangong Wentian.

Jiang Chen didn’t know what to do at this moment, but no matter what, he couldn’t let go off this rare opportunity in front of him. Furthermore, he could really feel something beckoning for him within this Island of Ice.

“Let’s go!”

Jiang Chen grit his teeth; he had to do it no matter what!

“Which path should we choose?”

Han Yan asked.

“Any one of them. It won’t be a peaceful journey no matter which path we choose.”

Jiang Chen simply threw his glance at the fourth path. He took a deep breath and started walking toward it with vigorous steps.

“Master Blissful, we’re leaving now. If I do find some good treasures, I’ll share a portion with you when I return.”

Nangong Wentian started laughing, and he was the first one to step onto the path. He was about the same age as Han Yan, about 20 years old this year. Therefore, he had no issues proceeding further.

In the blink of an eye, Han Yan, Big Yellow, and Nangong Wentian had all stepped onto the path. Jiang Chen once again took a deep breath, then he finally took a big step and stepped onto the path as well. In an instant, he could feel his soul trembling, which stunned Jiang Chen. But luckily, the trembling only lasted for a second, and Jiang Chen’s situation stabled down immediately.

Haa~

Jiang Chen let out a long sigh of relief. Finally, he could relax.

“Damn, I was lucky it only selected based on age of the body, and didn’t touch my soul. If it did touch my soul... with daddy’s

millennium old soul, I would instantly die.”

Jiang Chen inwardly felt very lucky.

“Little Chen, why can I feel there’s something wrong with your emotions?”

Han Yan curiously asked. After having been with Jiang Chen for so long, Jiang Chen had always remained calm no matter what he was facing; no matter how big the obstacle, or how dangerous the situation was. Not once has Jiang Chen had such a big fluctuation in his emotions.

“Nothing, I was just thinking about something else just now. Let’s go, I don’t think the path in front of us is going to be safe, we better be extra careful.”

Jiang Chen reminded everyone. Cultivating the Great Soul Derivation skill had given him extraordinary senses, he could accurately sense the unusualness of this Island of Ice. But, great danger was always accompanied by great opportunities. In order to obtain an incredible treasure, they would have to be prepared for the danger awaiting.

“Alright.”

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian both nodded their heads. In such an environment, even with their strong cultivations, they would have to be extra careful. This Island of Ice was filled with a lot of

bizarre things, and the paths they were now walking on had even killed a Combat Soul warrior! It wasn't difficult to imagine what would happen if the devastating force was applied to them; they would too be killed in an instant!

Tap... tap...

The path was really quiet, and silence filled their journey. The only sound they could hear was the sound of their footsteps. The group walked the path with solemn expressions, trying to be as careful as possible.

"I have a feeling that this path is going to be long."

Nangong Wentian said.

"There are cracks everywhere on this path, and it's emanating an ancient aura. I wonder how many years it has existed, it's really giving me an eerie feeling."

Han Yan furrowed his brows.

"Everything here looks unusual, so we can't be too careless. I'm sure this path won't be peaceful."

Jiang Chen's instincts told him that this path wouldn't be as peaceful as it seemed.

The group walked forwards for nearly an hour at a consistent speed. Suddenly, they heard a miserable shriek sound out not far in front of them!

The shriek sounded really eerie, as if it came from an inhuman creature.

Jiang Chen and the group sped up, and shortly after, they saw a man motionlessly lying in a pool of blood about 30 meters in front of them.

It was a shocking scene, the man's head had completely exploded! All that was left was a headless body. Blood flowed out from the neck, and it looked very frightening.

“He's the man who entered before us. What a pity.”

Han Yan said.

“This man was an Early Divine Core warrior, and judging from the wound, his head must have exploded from a punch. It doesn't seem like he was able to fight back either.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Be careful, some unknown creatures might live here.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up.



“How can you tell?”

Nangong Wentian asked Jiang Chen.

“Not many people chose the same path as us, and none of them had incredible cultivations. At least, none of them had the ability to make an Early Divine Core warrior’s head explode, much less the ability to do so without him being able to fight back. Also, there are no treasures here, so there’s no reason to fight amongst each other. Before leaving the paths, I don’t think anyone will have a desire to fight amongst each other.”

Jiang Chen concluded.

“Little Chen is right. Since the warrior wasn’t killed by a human, there must be some other creatures hidden around.”

Han Yan’s expression changed slightly.

“Careful!”

Jiang Chen suddenly shouted out loudly. With extremely fast speed, he punched toward Han Yan’s back.

Bang!

A loud bang was heard. Jiang Chen’s fist had hit something.

Han Yan immediately turned around. What he saw was a huge rock much taller than him standing behind him. It was a gigantic yellow stone golem, and it had clearly existed for quite a long time.

The huge stone golem had hands and legs, and its appearance resembled a human's. The only difference was that it didn't have any facial features, it was a rock that could move around. It gave an eerie feeling to those who looked at it.

Crack... crack...!

Having suffered Jiang Chen's heavy punch, cracks started appearing on the stone golem's body. Soon, it shattered, and small rock pieces were scattered around the place.

"Damn it, what is this thing? Where did it come from, and why couldn't I sense it behind me?"

Han Yan couldn't help but curse. He felt really scared right now. If not for Jiang Chen attacking it in time, he might have been hurt by this stone golem.

"Be careful, it seems like these stone golems exist in another dimension. We can't see them or touch them, but they can come out and attack us whenever they want. It looks like this man was killed by this stone golem's sudden attack."

Jiang Chen said.

“Although these stone golems are pretty strong, they’re no match for me. However, since they are hiding in another dimension, it’ll be really hard for us to prevent their sneak attacks.”

Han Yan furrowed his brows. His combat strength was quite strong, and his senses were quite sensitive. But, these stone golems moved in a ghostly manner, he just couldn’t sense it when it appeared behind him.

“There are more of them here.”

Jiang Chen squared down and picked up a small rock. After carefully examining it, he said, “There aren’t any Yuan energy ripples on this stone golem, they attack purely using their body strength. This is the reason why we are having difficulties sensing them. Furthermore, they have no vital signs, and they only know how to attack anything they come across, sneakily. Luckily, once we shatter them, they will be completely dead.”

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian both had solemn expressions. The danger lurking within the dark was the most frightening one. They didn’t understand anything about these stone golems, and had no idea why these creatures existed here. With these mysterious stone golems, the path in front of them wouldn’t be peaceful any longer!

# Chapter 315 – Fury Of The Two Superpowers

---

Jiang Chen looked around and found nothing. Aside from the white fog hovering around, there was nothing else to be seen. Even when all of them scanned the dimension with their Divine Sense, there was still nothing to be found.

“Let’s continue walking. Try to walk close to each other; caution is the parent of safety.”

Jiang Chen told everyone.

“Damn it! There’s nothing in this stone golem, not even a demon soul! This is boring!”

Big Yellow murmured to himself. For a weird creature like this stone golem who lived in another dimension, he thought there might be some extraordinary treasures in its body, just like the Nine Life Crystal Beast back in Inferno Hell. But, to his disappointment, after the stone golem was killed, it only left behind a pile of rocks. Not even a single strand of fur.

“This stone golem doesn’t even have Yuan energy, how could it have a demon soul? But, fighting these sneaky stone golems in this space could really train your senses.”

Jiang Chen patted Nangong Wentian and Han Yan’s shoulder. Fighting a high focus battle such as this could really help train a warrior’s soul energy and senses.

The group continued their journey. After walking for about half an hour, they found another dead body. The body's condition was exactly the same as the previous one they had found; they head had exploded from just a single punch. Judging from the scene, there hadn't been any fighting, so this man must have instantly been killed.

Whoosh!

A chilling breeze suddenly emerged from nowhere. A stone golem suddenly appeared in front of Big Yellow just like a ghost, and then it threw its huge ancient looking fist toward Big Yellow's head.

Bam!

When the stone fist hit Big Yellow's head, the usual scene where a head would explode didn't play but, but instead, the stone golem's arm was shattered by the backlash.

"Kaka, with just that weak strength you're destroy this master dog's head? You're too weak!"

Big Yellow happily started laughing. He suddenly dashed forwards, and crushed the stone golem into many pieces with his head, sending pieces of rock flying in all directions.

"Fuck! Big Yellow, how did you train your head? It's so incredible!"

Nangong Wentian gave Big Yellow a thumbs up. He simply threw himself onto the ground in admiration.

“Big Yellow’s head is the hardest thing I’ve ever come across. If those stone golem only focuses on attacking the head, Big Yellow won’t have to spend any effort in defending himself. He can just stand there and let them attack him without any worries.”

Han Yan had huge confidence in Big Yellow’s head. Not even a High-Ranked Combat Weapon can break his head, let alone these stone golems.

While they were talking, another breeze quietly came by. After that, another stone golem appeared right behind Nangong Wentian.

“Humph!”

Nangong Wentian coldly harrumphed. He responded very quickly. In an instant, he turned around and threw a powerful punch at the stone golem. The punch was so powerful that it produced an explosive sound as it went through the air. There was also a shadow of a barbarian elephant above him. With just this punch alone, the stone golem was shattered into ashes.

“Jiejie, everything will be destroyed in front of my Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, kaka!”

Nangong Wentian let loose a narcissistic laughter.

“Brother, wake up! This stone golem is only equal to an Early Divine Core warrior, and it also doesn’t have any Yuan energy! All it used was its body’s strength!”

Han Yan pulled Nangong Wentian’s shirt, hinting at him not to be so narcissistic.

Nangong Wentian let out a small cough. Suddenly, he felt it wasn’t really worth showing after killing an Early Divine Core monster, as many people would be able to do so if attacked face to face.

“But, your Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill looks pretty amazing.”

With Jiang Chen’s eyesight, he could clearly tell how amazing Nangong Wentian’s skill was. If he cultivated the skill to the peak, he would be able to possess the strength of 10,000 elephants. This was something really incredible!

“Of course!”

Nangong Wentian became proud of himself once more.

During the next two days, the group continued walking this path, and it was as if there was no end to it. Along their way, they were continuously attacked by hidden stone golems. But, with their

strength, no matter how good a stone golem hid itself, it would still die. But Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's senses had improved a lot during these two days.

Bam!

Sensing ripples coming from a direction, Han Yan punched out towards the direction with his devil energy covered fist. In an instant, a cracking sound was heard, and a pile of rocks fell down from the direction.

Along their way, the group had killed more than a hundred stone golems. It seemed like there were countless stone golems in this area, as no matter how many they killed, it seemed like more would come.

“Damn it! This master dog can't stand this anymore! When are we going to reach the end of this fucking path?!”

Big Yellow said in a gloomy manner.

“I wouldn't have chosen this path if I knew we'd have to walk for so long...”

Han Yan also had a gloomy expression.

“You guys really think the other paths are shorter and safer? Let me tell you, none of these paths are safe. If my guess is correct, all the warriors on the other paths must be experiencing different



kinds of dangers, or it might be the same as what we are facing.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

While Jiang Chen and group was fighting seemingly endless waves of stone golems, a huge sword and a warship arrived outside the Island of Ice.

The huge sword and warship were both powerful magical weapons, and there were dozens of people standing on each weapon. They were from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan; these two superpowers were the fastest out of all superpowers to arrive here. In just two days, they arrived at the Island of Ice.

Staring at the gigantic Island of Ice floating in the icy ocean, these people couldn't help but start panting.

“The Island of Ice has reappeared, I never thought I'd be able to see it once again during this lifetime.”

The old white-bearded man emotionally said.

“Old Whiteghost, look at you, I'm sure you've never seen something so huge in your life before.”

The Combat Soul warrior from the Shangguan Clan said in a sarcastic manner. The Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan had been enemies for a long time, and them not fighting upon seeing

each other was rare. But still, they wouldn't let go of any opportunity to mock each other.

“Shangguan Hui, don't be so excited, I believe you are nervous regarding the reappearance of the Island of Ice. It's still uncertain who will get the most out of this trip!”

Old Whiteghost angrily replied as he glared at Shangguan Hui.

After both superpowers exchanged hateful speech, the immediately flew toward the Island of Ice's illusionary entrance.

Plop... plop...

Just as the ones who entered before, these mighty big shots immediately dropped onto the ground, and started feeling dizzy because of the impact.

“What's going on?”

Someone cried out in alarm.

“There is a force restricting our cultivations here, I'm only an Early Mortal Core warrior right now! How bizarre.”

Shangguan Hui's expression flickered.

“Sect Elder, look there, so many dead bodies!”

A young disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect immediately cried out shock upon seeing the bloodbath and all the bodies.

“Let’s go check it out.”

The group soon after approached the dead bodies. When they saw the faces belonging to these bodies, the expressions of every changed dramatically.

“Absolutely disgraceful! Who did this?!”

Old Whiteghost’s beard trembled because of his anger. Fury violently erupted within his heart.

“Third Grandpa, this is Sixth Grandpa’s body, and all those who came with him are dead as well!”

The face of a young man from the Shangguan Clan turned pale, and he gnashed his teeth in anger.

“Senior disciple Lin Anying was killed as well, which bastards have the guts to do this!? How dare they kill all the men from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan?!”

All the disciples from the Myriad Sword Sect were furious. As disciples of the Myriad Sword Sect, no matter where they went,

they were supreme existences, and who would dare disrespect them? Those who wished to challenge them would have to deeply consider the consequences of doing so! This scene in front of them, nothing like this had ever happened before!

“Who did all this?!”

Old Whiteghost was really furious right now. The people who did this even killed a Sect Elder from the Myriad Sword Sect, this was a serious challenge to the Myriad Sword Sect’s dignity! On the other side, the Shangguan Clan was facing the same situation. Back in the Eastern Continent, no one had the courage to challenge their sovereignty before! Even the Martial Palace and Martial Saint Dynasty had to give them face!

“No matter who did this, I will kill them and tear them into a million pieces!”

Shangguan Hui said while gritting his teeth tightly.

“Let’s go! Once we leave this desert, the mysterious force will disappear! We need to find out who killed our men!”

Old Whiteghost coldly stated, then immediately afterwards, he led his men and dashed toward the end of the desert. With their speed, they quickly left the desert and crossed the plain field, arriving at the fork in the road.

Right at this moment, there were still many people standing in

front of the nine paths. When they saw the men from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, many expressions changed. Judging from the looks on their faces, it was obvious that these people had seen the bloodbath in the desert.

Swoosh!

The young Combat Soul genius who was holding a folding fan in his hand pulled a rogue warrior towards him.

“Tell me, who did that?”

This young man’s name was Ling Du, and he was a peerless genius from the Myriad Sword Sect. At his young age, he had broken through to the Combat Soul realm, and he was also a disciple of the Martial Palace. His background gave him a very prestigious status. Ling Du was at the Myriad Sword Sect to settle some matters, and that’s when he found out about the reappearance of the Island of Ice. Without any hesitation, he followed his fellow disciples to the Island of Ice.

“It wa-, it was Jiang Chen. All your men were killed by Jiang Chen.”

The rogue warrior mumbled. He dared not hide anything from them. Presently, the Myriad Sword Sect was incredibly furious, and if he hesitated, only certain death would await him.

“Jiang Chen? Which Jiang Chen?”

Ling Du asked in a cold tone.

“The Jiang Chen from Inferno Hell! There is a big yellow dog following him, and he also has two companions.”

Sweat could be seen all over the man’s forehead.

Slap!

Ling Du slapped the man’s face. Then, he shouted out loudly, “Bullshit! What cultivation realm is Jiang Chen at? How could he have killed all those Combat Soul warriors?!”

“It was because of the desert’s restriction, everyone were restricted to the Early Mortal Core realm! Jiang Chen has an incredibly strong body, making him invincible amongst warriors at the same level as himself! That’s the reason why he could kill all those men!”

The rogue warrior repeatedly cursed inwardly; he felt really unlucky. However, he didn’t dare neglect Ling Du’s questions.

“He’s speaking the truth; all you men were killed by Jiang Chen! He is a maniac!”

Someone added.

“Where is that Jiang Chen?”

Ling Du gritted his teeth tight and asked.

“He has entered the inner area of the Island of Ice.”

The man replied.

“Good, Jiang Chen, good! I’m going to kill him, then I’ll tear him into a millions pieces! Let’s go, we need to proceed to the inner parts of the Island of Ice!”

Shangguan Hui unleashed his energy, getting ready to step onto one of the paths in front.

“You can’t go further!”

Someone suddenly shouted. Someone had to stop Shangguan Hui from going further, otherwise, he would die in an instant. With that, the Shangguan Clan would blame them for not telling them about this weird rule, and they might kill them all out of fury. Everyone knew this would happen.

Therefore, they had to remind them about this. This was not to please the Shangguan Clan, but to help keep them safe.

# Chapter 316 – Endless Killing

---

Shangguan Hui who was about to step onto the path suddenly turned around and threw a fierce glance at the man who just spoke, “Why can’t I step onto this path?”

“Sect Elder Shangguan, these paths have a weird rule; only under 30 can step onto it safely. As for those over 30, they will be instantly killed.”

The man said.

“What?!”

Old Whiteghost and Shangguan Hui shouted at the same time. They both had similar shocked expressions on their faces.

“What he said is correct, anyone over 30 will die the second they step onto that path. Many people died before you got here. If it wasn’t like this, why would we still be standing here?”

Old Man Ling Shan added.

“Third Grandpa, we never thought the Island Of ice had such a selective process. What should we do now?”

A genius from the Shangguan Clan looked at Shangguan Hui and asked.



“Looks like this Island of Ice is only for the younger generations. Fine, since I can’t proceed further, Yilong, Yilei, both of you bring the rest of the men and proceed further. Find that Jiang Chen and kill him!”

Shangguan Hui turned toward two young men with imposing appearances. Both of them were very strong, they were at the Combat Soul realm, although only the early stage. But, such a mighty cultivation at such a young age, it really told everyone how extraordinary these two young men were. They were both peerless geniuses amongst the younger generation.

“Rest assured, Third Grandpa! Once I reach the inner parts of this Island of Ice, even if that Jiang Chen has three heads and six arms, I’ll crush him like an ant! I’m going to humiliate him with whatever methods I have, and only after having done so will I kill him! I will let him know the consequences of offending the Shangguan Clan!”

Shangguan Yilong said in a cruel manner. As one of the best warriors from the Shangguan Clan’s younger generation, he was a man full of pride, that’s why he didn’t take Jiang Chen seriously. He knew Jiang Chen was only a Divine Core warrior, and that meant he was just a tiny little ant in front of him. Once he found Jiang Chen, he would be able to kill him with just a finger.

Although Jiang Chen had killed many Combat Soul warriors, that was all because of the desert’s restriction. Under normal circumstances, there was no way a Divine Core warrior could beat a Combat Soul warrior.

“Humph! Jiang Chen’s life belongs to me! Shangguan Yilong, Shangguan Yilei, the two of you better not get in my war! I’ll make Jiang Chen lick my boot, humiliate him before sending him to hell!”

Ling Du from the Myriad Sword Sect coldly harrumphed. He was constantly waving the folding fan in his hand, and his arrogant attitude seemed to have no border.

“Ling Du, you better not be so arrogant! Let’s see who has the ability to kill that Jiang Chen! Furthermore, since we are all here inside the Island of Ice, all of you from the Myriad Sword Sect better not provoke me! If you do, I will end your trip right here!”

Shangguan Yilong was even more arrogant. After saying those words, he turned around and led dozens of warriors from the Shangguan Clan toward one of the paths in front of them.

“Hmph! What shameless boasting; you simply have no idea how weak you are!”

Ling Du slapped his palm with the folding fan. If not for him needing to proceed further, he would have challenged Shangguan Yilong right away.

“Jiang Chen has to be killed, but those from the Shangguan Clan are too arrogant! If we bump into them, we have to teach them a lesson!”

Another young disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect said. His name was Xu Shuang, and he was a genius who had broken through to the Combat Soul realm not long before coming here. That's why he was so arrogant.

“Let's move, we have to go now.”

In the blink of an eye, all the men from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan had entered separate paths. Old Whiteghost and Shangguan Hui in front of the forked road with bored expressions. Although they were both Mid Combat Soul warriors, they were too old. They didn't have great potential, so it was really difficult for them to break through to a high stage and realm. Initially, they planned to find some opportunity in this Island of Ice, but now, they didn't even have the right to enter. The sudden transformation in their mood was exactly like that of all the other old warriors on the spot.

“The youngsters from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are really arrogant, I really hate seeing their arrogant expressions.”

Someone whispered.

“Shh, quiet! They are two fierce tigers, do you want to get yourself killed? Furthermore, they have the capabilities to be so arrogant! Just take a look at that Ling Du and Shangguan Yilong, they've broken through to the Combat Soul realm at such a young age. We just can't compare with them!”

Someone said.

.....

Bam!

On the fourth path, Jiang Chen shattered a sneaky stone golem with a powerful punch. Along their journey, Jiang Chen had lost count of how many stone golems he had killed.

As they progressed further, Nangong Wentian and Han Yan's expressions were gradually getting heavier and heavier, because the further they travelled, the more stone golems appeared. Sometimes, multiple stone golems would appear at the same time, and it was almost impossible for them to effectively defend against that.

But luckily, those stone golems weren't really strong. As long as the group wasn't caught by surprise, with their abilities, there was nothing they really needed to worry about.

And, being constantly sneak attacked like this, both Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's senses improved significantly.

Right now, they just found another dead body in front of them. The warrior's head had exploded, and the blood on the ground had dried up.

“Sigh... This is the sixth dead body we’ve encountered. This man had some amazing abilities, as he made it this far.”

Han Yan sighed.

“If my memory serves me correct, only six men stepped onto this path. That means that those who entered before us have all been killed.”

Nangong Wentian had mixed emotions about this. This was indeed a miserable scene, and compare to those stone golems, these six men were all human. But, they died before reaching the inner parts of the Island of Ice. This made the group pity them.

“Fuck, this path is really bizarre, when are we going to reach the end of it?”

Han Yan cursed.

“Let’s just keep walking.”

Jiang Chen continued walking forwards with vigorous step. But, the following situation made them even more shocked, because the stone golems that continuously attacked them didn’t appear once more. The path had suddenly become extremely quiet.

After walking for half a day in such a quiet environment, the path had finally come to an end. The white fog hovering around them had also disappeared.

“Little Chen, we’ve come to the end of the path!”

Han Yan felt really excited.

“There is a mountain range in front of us!”

Nangong Wentian started laughing in joy. The group continued moving forward with great speed. In the blink of an eye, they left the path and arrived at the mountain range.

“Be careful, there’s something different about this mountain range.”

Jiang Chen once again warned everyone.

Nangong Wentian and Han Yan threw examining looks around. After that, they both furrowed their brows.

“This mountain range covers 50 kilometers in all directions, but there isn’t a single plant here. Furthermore, this mountain range has the exact same color as those stone golems we’ve fought so many times.”

Upon noticing this, Han Yan’s expression suddenly became ugly.

Buzz...

Right after Han Yan finished speaking, thousands of stone golems suddenly appeared within the mountain range. None of the stone golems made a single noise upon appearing, and they instantly started sprinting toward Jiang Chen and group.

“So many stone golems!”

Nangong Wentian was greatly alarmed.

“These stone golems aren’t that strong, let’s just fly above them.”

Jiang Chen leapt into the skies after saying that. But, at the same time, the stone golems also flew up into the sky, blocking Jiang Chen’s path.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen immediately threw a punch forwards. This was a powerful punch that could shake mountains, and it carried a scorching hot energy. With just this punch, dozens of stone golems shattered. After that, Jiang Chen continued flying forwards.

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian dared not hesitate. They immediately followed Jiang Chen, and they repeatedly unleashed attacks, killing the stone golems.

“This place can produce a near infinite amount of stone golems.

Luckily, this mountain range isn't too big, so if we're fast enough, we will be able to cause a gap to appear between us and them, then we'll be able to get out of here."

Big Yellow's might was invincible amongst the stone golems. Using his majestic body, he constantly rammed in all directions, crushing all stone golems that got in his way.

The group slaughtered their way through. But, none of them even noticed, a mountain right in the middle of the mountain range was blinking brightly. Every time it blinked, more stone golems would appear within the mountain range. In just a very short amount of time, Jiang Chen and the group had been surrounded by stone golems in all directions.

But luckily, these stone golems didn't have any Yuan energy, and they were only attacking with body strength. Their attacks were similar to that of attacks from Early Divine Core warriors, and that just couldn't harm Jiang Chen and the group at all. But, regardless of that, they had to find a way out.

"Humph! Trying to stop me with these lifeless beings? All of you, shatter now!"

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He waved his hand and unleashed the True Dragon Flames. The scorching hot flames could burn down anything, and when these stone golems were hit by the flames, they immediately melted down like butter.

The flame was a hundred meters long, and it looked exactly like a



flaming dragon. It rammed forwards and burned down any and all stone golems that got in its way. No matter how many stone golems appeared in front of it, it would just melt them all down.

“Let’s go!”

Jiang Chen loudly shouted. The group followed the flaming dragon’s trail. With its help, they were able to move forwards without any resistance. Anything that got in the flaming dragon’s way would instantly be melted down.

“Haha, what an amazing dragon flame, it’s making way for us! Now we don’t have to fear all those stone golems! This mountain range only covers about 50 kilometers in all directions, we’ll quickly be able to leave this place!”

Nangong Wentian let out a belly laugh

But, his excitement didn’t last for long. Once again, something strange was happening. Jiang Chen’s dragon flame had been flying in front of them for more than ten minutes!

Ten minutes! With their speed, even if they faced constant resistance, they should be able to travel more than 500 kilometers, let alone 50! But, not only had the amount of stone golems not reduced, there seemed to be more and more with each passing moment.

“What happened? It seems like there are more stone golems

around us! Looks like we haven't flown out from this area yet."

Nangong Wentian furrowed his brows.

"Damn it! Guys, look at that mountain peak! When we started flying, that mountain peak was right in front of us, but now it's still at the same spot! It looks we are still at the same spot after flying for so long."

Big Yellow finally discovered that. A gloomy feeling instantly emerged within.

"Indeed! This mountain range is really bizarre, as if it can move by itself."

Han Yan also found out what happened. They should have left the mountain range by now, but judging from the current situation, it looked like they hadn't even moved at all.

"Damn it, what an odd place! We're unable to kill all those stone golems, and if we can't leave, sooner or later we'll die from exhaustion!"

Nangong Wentian killed a couple of stone golems with his Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants Punch, but it literally did nothing. More stone golems jumped into battle. If this went on, they wouldn't even have time to rest, and if they couldn't leave this place as soon as possible, they would die from exhaustion.

“There must be a reason for this. You guys just keep killing these stone golems, let me examine the landscape around here.”

Jiang Chen retracted the True Dragon Flame and started circulating the Great Soul Derivation Skill, then he examined the mountain range's landscape. On the other side, Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow surrounded Jiang Chen as they killed all incoming stone golems.

# Chapter 317 – Garden In The Sky

---

Bang, bang, bang...

Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow continuously attacked, shattering any and all stone golems that approached them, making sure that none of these monsters could disturb Jiang Chen. Within the center of the circle, Jiang Chen's eyes were shut as he constantly unleashed his soul energy. With the help of the Great Soul Derivation skill, the entire mountain range was under his surveillance.

They still stood at the same spot after flying for more than ten minutes, this told Jiang Chen how unusual this mountain range was, and there must be something behind it. Jiang Chen carefully inspected every single inch of this mountain range. Finally, he focused all his attention on an ordinary mountain peak located right in the middle of the mountain range.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen suddenly opened his eyes, and two bright lights shot out.

“There is something wrong with that mountain peak. I can see a faint light blinking on it, and every time it blinks, more stone golems appear. As long as we destroy that mountain, we should be able to destroy all stone golems.”

Jiang Chen pointed toward the mountain.

“Little Chen, the gap between us and that mountain peak is large, how are we going to destroy it?”

Han Yan asked.

“Whenever we move, the entire mountain range follows! This is too bizarre; we’re going to be stuck here forever!”

Nangong Wentian said in a gloomy manner.

“Not really. I don’t know if you guys have noticed this, although we are trapped in the same spot, our attacks can leave us and fly forward. The mountains around here move with us, therefore, what we need to do is just stance here and launch long distance attacks at that mountain. Once we’ve destroyed it, all problems will be solved.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Although the gap isn’t small, but with our abilities, it won’t be too difficult for us to destroy it. But, these stone golems in front of us are really annoying! Little Chen, let’s work together, you help me kill all these stone golems and clear a path for me, then I’ll launch an attack!”

Nangong Wentian suggested. In his hand, the huge rule started glowing in an azure light once again.

“Alright. Six Profound Solar Fingers!”

Jiang Chen shouted out. The Six Profound Solar Fingers was the perfect skill for long distance attacks. In an instant, six gigantic golden fingers looking like six pillars capable of holding the heavens up appeared. Then, they merged into one single finger and thrust forwards with tremendous force.

The Six Profound Solar Finger was incredibly fast, as if it was a lightning bolt. It destroyed all stone golems along its way, and in the blink of an eye, the Six Profound Solar Finger had cleared a path. But, after killing so many stone golems, the force contained within the Six Profound Solar Finger had significantly dropped. Therefore, even upon reaching the mountain, it lacked the power to destroy it.

Right at this moment, Nangong Wentian attacked. He raised the gigantic ruler in his hand high up into the sky, causing the azure light to shine even brighter, just like the dazzling stars in the night sky. The gigantic ruler was called the Myriad Star Ruler. It was Nangong Wentian’s natal weapon, and it used the power of the stars. It was an incredibly powerful weapon.

Nangong Wentian suddenly let out a shout, then he forcefully swung the gigantic ruler and unleashed a dazzling azure colored Milky Way. The Milky Way followed the path cleared by Jiang Chen, and thrust toward the center of the mountain range. It wasn’t slowed down by any stone golems along its way.

Bang!

The attack unleashed by the Myriad Star Ruler collided with the mountain pointed out by Jiang Chen with a loud explosive sound. The solid mountain instantly shattered, just like all those stone golems.

Also, right after the mountain peak was destroyed, all the stone golems instantly disappeared, as if they had never appeared before.

Finally, the ground let out a long sigh of relief. Although they didn't fear these stone golems with their abilities, facing the constant attacks from a seemingly infinite amount of stone golems was no fun.

When the mountain range disappeared, the mountain range returned to its previous peaceful state. Aside from the destroyed mountain right in the center of the mountain range, everything around was still the same. Although they had fought for a long period of time here, there were no traces of a battle having taken place in this mountain range.

Buzz...

Suddenly, a buzzing sound could be heard from underneath the destroyed mountain. Also, ancient looks bright lights shot out from the same spot as well. A turmoil like was immediately attracted the group's attention.

“There is something inside.”

Han Yan said.

“Wakaka, it must be a treasure!”

Big Yellow started laughing excitedly. He was the first one to rush toward the destroyed mountain. In the blink of an eye, he reached the destroyed mountain like a golden shooting star. When Jiang Chen, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian arrived, Big Yellow came out from the destroyed mountain, and there was an antiquated bronze plate in his mouth.

“Puh! I thought there was a precious treasure! What a waste of this master dog’s time!”

Big Yellow spat the bronze plate out from his mouth. With quick hands, Jiang Chen immediately grabbed the bronze plate. The mountain peak was able to produce a near infinite amount of stone golems, and it also had the ability to trap them in an illusionary realm, so there must be something extraordinary about it. Therefore, anything found within would definitely be something unusual.

When Jiang Chen took the bronze plate, he immediately felt how heavy it was. But, when he looked at it, his eyes immediately opened up wide.

“Look at the bronze plate!”



Han Yan was immediately surprised upon seeing the bronze plate. Seeing the two men paying so much attention to it, Big Yellow walked toward them and finally paid some serious attention to the bronze plate. To his surprise, the bronze plate was actually identical to the bronze plate Jiang Chen had previously obtained.

“What’s so special about this bronze plate?”

Nangong Wentian curiously asked.

Jiang Chen didn’t answer Nangong Wentian’s question, he instead took out another bronze plate from his storage ring, and placed each bronze plate on top of his right and left palm to compare them. Indeed, both of them were identical, and he couldn’t find any differences between both bronze plates.

“The fuck? Both bronze plate are identical? Little Chen, where did you get this thing?”

Nangong Wentian was surprised.

“I got the first bronze plate on the Blissful Island. I never thought I would be able to find an identical bronze plate at this Island of Ice.”

Jiang Chen was surprised as well. With his eyesight, he could easily tell that these were two identical bronze plates, and they were made using the same material.

And that's the reason why Jiang Chen was so surprised. He got the first bronze plate from an old man back at the Blissful Island. Clearly, that old man had no idea what the function of this bronze plate was, but now, it seemed like this bronze plate was not something ordinary.

"So, there was an identical bronze plate in this Island of Ice... Little Chen, this bronze plate isn't something ordinary, I'm sure all those stone golems are related to this bronze plate."

Han Yan said.

"There might be more than two of these bronze plates."

Big Yellow guessed.

"That's possible. But, let's not waste any more time on this, I'll just store them away for now. They might be useful in the future."

After saying that, Jiang Chen stored away both bronze plates. Although the appearance of these two bronze plates didn't seem extraordinary, Jiang Chen knew they were something unusual.

"Let's leave this place."

Big Yellow said.

The group continued their journey within the mountain range. Only this time, they weren't attacked by any stone golems. Right before they left the mountain range, a white fog suddenly appeared in front of them, and prevented them from looking further into the distance. At the same time, they felt a cooling sensation.

“The environment here constantly keeps changing unpredictably, what a mess!”

Han Yan said in a gloomy manner.

“I sense no danger from the white fog in front of us. Once we cross this white fog, we might enter another universe.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He started walking within the sky, and instantly entered the white fog.

Soon after, the entire group passed through the white fog. It was just like Jiang Chen had said; they had indeed entered another universe. In front of them was a great plain with a bright sky. But, what attracted them wasn't this beautiful scene, it was the huge garden that was floating high above them in the sky.

Precisely, a garden in the sky!

Right at this moment, figures of warriors could be seen lingering around the garden. All of them had the same excited expressions, and some of them had even started fighting each other.

Furthermore, there were more people dashing out from different directions. When these people saw the garden in the sky, they immediately flew toward it. Jiang Chen knew that these people were from the other paths, and there were more people on those paths than the one Jiang Chen's group chose.

Clearly, none of the other paths were as dangerous as the one Jiang Chen took, and there might have been some paths with no danger at all. As for the path Jiang Chen took, only three men and a dog came out whole. The rest had all died.

But, none of this was important. The important thing was, the garden's attraction was really powerful. Even from far, Jiang Chen could smell the refreshing air coming from it, as well as a strong smell of herbs. The smell of herbs caused all those who smelled it to feel relaxed and refreshed.

“Move! This thousands of years old ginseng was discovered by me!”

“Fuck you, I'm the one who broke the defense mechanism! You're weak, and still envy other people's result! There are so many herbs here, you can just go find something else!”

“What is that? An Ancient Yuan Jade? This is such a big piece, damn!”

“Look at that! That is the Glory Lotus King! An extremely rare herb in the outside world! Oh heavens, there are rare herbs everywhere! This garden in the sky is a gigantic treasure!”

.....

Everyone arrived at the garden in the sky, and were excitedly yelling and shouting. This was because they kept finding rare herbs, herbs so rare there was no way they could see them in the outside world.

“Wahaha, precious treasures! There are indeed precious treasures here! This master dog has to go!”

While wagging his big tail, Big Yellow transformed into a golden light and flew toward the garden in the sky.

The others immediately followed behind. When they arrived at the garden, all of them were shocked by what they saw.

“Damn it!”

Nangong Wentian’s eyes nearly popped out, as if he was looking at something that only exists within a dream.

“Fuck, this garden is at least 5 kilometers long in all directions! There are herbs everywhere, and many of them looks really old! If this garden was located in our world, all superpowers would fight to death for it!”

Han Yan immediately jumped on his feet. Compared to this

garden in the sky, Guo Shan's herb plantation looked like a bull's shit. The difference between the two was huge!

Swoosh, swoosh...

More and more people arrived and dashed toward the garden. After the first batch of warriors came to the Island of Ice, more and more warriors came from all over. As long as the Island of Ice's entrance wasn't close, many youngsters would come here to seek an opportunity.

"All these guys are brimming with happiness, and they don't look hurt at all! We had to fight for our lives in order to reach this place, this is so depressing!"

Han Yan felt really frustrated.

# Chapter 318 – Herbs Everywhere

---

Nangong Wentian and Jiang Chen had noticed all these warriors as well. Some of them were clearly injured, and it looked like they had experienced dangerous situation back on the paths they had chosen. However, it seemed like the danger they faced was less devastating compared to Jiang Chen. Also, there were some paths where no one emerged from. Clearly, those who stepped onto those paths had encountered great dangers, and perhaps they wouldn't even be able to leave that place.

As for those warriors who didn't encounter any dangers, they had long ago emerged from the path, and were hanging around in the sky garden right now. Who knew how many benefits they had gotten so far? It took Jiang Chen and the group two and a half days to leave the path.

Regardless of which path the people emerged from; they were faced with the biggest opportunity in their lifetime. This garden in the sky by itself was a gigantic treasures; each and every single herb here would provide great benefits to those who obtained it.

Therefore, the eyes of the people turned red, and everyone were excitedly yelling and shouting.

“Haha, this Fiery Dragonspirit Fruit belongs to me!”

A Divine Core warrior joyfully started laughing. He stretched his arm forward, grabbing toward the Fiery Dragonspirit Fruit. However, right before his palm could touch the fruit, a light

curtain suddenly appeared and stopped the warrior's hand. At the same time, the man was struck by a backlash, and was forced 3 steps backwards.

On the other side, Big Yellow was drooling like a rabid dog. He tried eating a herb that was in front of him, but he too was stopped by a light curtain. The backlash even made his tooth ache.

“Haha, idiot, all these herbs are protected by a defense mechanism! You won't be able to put your hands on them without breaking the mechanism!”

“All these newcomers are just idiots.”

.....

Some people started laughing. Those who had arrived here first had discovered how it works.

“Damn it, there really are defense mechanisms protecting these herbs! This master dog didn't realize it because of the fluster, but, none of these mechanisms are going to stop this master dog, they are just too weak!”

Big Yellow spat a symbol out from his mouth onto the light curtain covering the herb. Immediately, the light curtain began vibrating, then it shattered right afterwards. Without any hesitation, Big Yellow leapt forwards and devoured the herb.



“This is strange, why are all these herbs protected by defense mechanisms?”

Han Yan glared at the herbs with eyes wide open.

“Without it, do you think there would still be so many herbs here? Not to mention this is only a garden with a 5 km circumference. Even a 50 km circumference garden would be emptied in an instant if there were no defense mechanism. Every single herb here is protected by a defense mechanism, meaning we have to break the mechanism before we can get the herb. Also, according to the rarity of the herb, how many years it has grown, and its value, the strength of the defense mechanism will be different as well. For the herbs with higher value than others and who are also old, their defense mechanisms will be more difficult to break.”

Jiang Chen explained with a smile on his face.

Indeed, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian both saw many warriors restlessly working to break the defense mechanisms of those high-value herbs. One of the warriors stood in front of a Glory Lotus King, and his face had turned red. No matter how much strength he used, he just couldn't break its defense mechanism.

“There are so many herbs here, what are we waiting for? Let's move our asses!”

Nangong Wentian raised the gigantic ruler in his hand, and with a smile on his face, he arrived in front of a nearby herb and

forcefully swung the ruler toward it. A bright glow could be seen coming from in palm, and in just an instant; the defense mechanism shattered. He just got his first herb!

“Those herbs with weaker defense mechanisms have been obtained by others, and the leftovers are all difficult to break. But, this also mean that these remaining herbs are really precious. Brother Nan, the method you’re using to break the defense mechanism is too clumsy, breaking them by force isn’t a smart thing to do, you’re going to get tired really fast if you try to break a powerful defense mechanism.”

Jiang Chen told Nangong Wentian.

“The fuck? Sounds like you know a lot, you aren’t going to use force to break them?”

Nangong Wentian wasn’t convinced by Jiang Chen. In his mind, Jiang Chen was an abnormal monster with incredible combat strength, and an amazing alchemist! But, someone like this was usually weak in the field of defense mechanisms.

Jiang Chen’s lips curved upwards. He didn’t say anything, but he turned to a nearby herb, and casually pointed his finger at it. In an instant, the defense mechanism shattered, and as if the herb was summoned by something, it flew onto Jiang Chen’s palm by itself.

Jiang Chen continued walking forwards with vigorous steps. His fingertips were glowing brightly, and every time he pointed somewhere, a defense mechanism would shatter, and all herbs

would just fly into his storage bag. He wasn't using any force at all.

This stunned a lot of the nearby people, including Nangong Wentian and Han Yan.

“This abnormal monster!”

The muscles on Nangong Wentian's face trembled. Finally, he had witnessed a real abnormal monster. With his eyesight, he could easily tell that Jiang Chen wasn't using any Yuan energy when breaking those defense mechanisms; he was using another kind of defense mechanism. In order to achieve this, Jiang Chen would have to be an expert in both offensive and defensive mechanisms.

Han Yan could still accept this. He had after all been following Jiang Chen for quite some time, and Jiang Chen's almighty image had been deeply rooted in his mind. No matter what amazing things Jiang Chen did; he wouldn't be too surprised.

“Damn it, are you bullying us?”

“Isn't that Jiang Chen? Is he a human? Not only is his combat strength incredibly formidable, and his alchemy skill amazing, he is also an expert in defense mechanisms and formations! He's simply killing us all!”

“Easily breaking defense mechanisms is like his second nature! If he keeps doing this, all the herbs are going to be his! No way, I

have to work harder! This garden is a gigantic treasure, it would be a waste if I couldn't get more out of it!"

.....

The warriors who had come to the garden in the sky the earliest couldn't stand it any longer. Jiang Chen's actions was like a slap to their faces.

Putting aside Jiang Chen and turning to Big Yellow; he was actually more brutal than Jiang Chen!

Whenever this dog passed an area, that place would become emptied. Whenever he spat a symbol towards a defense mechanism, his mouth would already be wide open, and he would be leaping toward the herb. And, when the defense mechanism was broken, the herb would be in his mouth.

"Damn it, what kind of dog is this? Can't any defense mechanisms hold him back?"

"This is insane! Isn't he scared his stomach will explode from eating so many herbs?"

"I can't stand it anymore! Daddy can't even compare with a dog?"

.....

Many people felt like they were going to faint. This dog that appeared out of nowhere was really brutal; he was simply inhuman! Of course, he wasn't really a human...

Big Yellow swept across the garden and leapt across the herbs he liked, and he didn't care if there was any warriors standing in front of the herb.

“Damn dog, fuck off! This Ginseng is mine!”

A warrior shouted at Big Yellow. This warrior didn't participate in the Blissful Island's trade fair, so clearly had no idea how mighty Big Yellow was.

“Ruff! Fuck off stupid bitch!”

Big Yellow simply unleashed his energy, and the warrior was knocked far away. After that, he immediately devoured the Ginseng.

More and more people arrived at the garden in the sky, and the situation became more chaotic. Many people had started fighting amongst themselves, and because of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, the amount of herbs was constantly lessening. Many warriors had grouped up and were working together, mainly because there were many herbs with strong defense mechanisms, and it was difficult for a lone warrior to break it.

Right at this moment, those disciples from the superpowers were in an advantageous position. They had high-quality weapons, and the teamwork between their fellow disciples was better than that of the lone warriors had temporarily decided to team up. Because of this, they were able to obtain many herbs.

Plop!

The guy who had spent over two hours trying to break the defense mechanism surrounding the Glory Lotus King couldn't do it any longer, and he simply fell onto the ground with sweat all over his forehead. It was pretty amazing to see a guy working so hard to get an herb. But, too bad, no matter how hard he worked, he just couldn't break the mechanism.

A huge dog head suddenly appeared above the warrior. Big Yellow curled his lips and told the warrior, "Hehe, you can't do this, let this master dog help you!"

Big Yellow simply stepped over the warriors and arrived in front of the Glory Lotus King. This herb was as tall as an adult man, and it glowed like a crystal. Clearly, it had grown for many years. It was a superior and rare herb that couldn't be found anywhere in the outside world.

Big Yellow was glowing brightly. He spat a symbol out from his mouth which formed into a defense mechanism, and it flew toward the defense mechanism surrounding the Glory Lotus King with tremendous speed.

The two defense mechanisms collided and produced a buzzing noise. Although the defense mechanism wasn't shattered with this, its light had been weakened.

“Sigh... This defense mechanism is really strong, even this master dog can't break it with one hit. But, it still can't stop this master dog. Break now!”

After saying those words, Big Yellow spat out a few mysterious symbols from his mouth. This dog had mastered the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, and he knew all kinds of defense mechanisms underneath the heavens, and was able to create advanced defense mechanisms such as the Spiraling Defense Mechanism. Therefore, no defense mechanism here could stop him, and if he was given enough time, Big Yellow would be able to devour every single herb here.

Those mysterious symbols light floated onto the defense mechanism. In an instant, the defense mechanism started violently trembling, and in the blink of an eye, a shattering sound was heard. The defense mechanism was shattered, and the bright Glory Lotus King was revealed in front of them. The smell made him feel very refreshed.

“The fuck?! Is this real?!”

When the warriors who was lying on the ground panting saw what happened, he really wished he could just kill himself by slamming his head into the ground. At the same time, he was gnashing his teeth in anger as he looked at Big Yellow. He had worked restlessly for that last two hours, but he still couldn't

break the defense mechanism, and this dog had broken it in such a short amount of time! This made the warrior feel really depressed.

“Wakaka, the taste must be delicious!”

Big Yellow let out a belly laughter. Without any hesitation, he immediately leapt toward the Glory Lotus King, his saliva splashing all around. But, suddenly, a big hand grabbed the Glory Lotus King with incredibly great speed. The hand pulled it away, and it was instantly stored into the person’s storage bag.

Fire nearly burst out from Big Yellow’s eyes. Even his toe knew who was despicable enough to dare snatch his thing!

“Shameful brat! There are so many herbs around, why did you snatch the one that belongs to this master dog?!”

Big Yellow furiously stared at Jiang Chen who had suddenly appeared before him. White smoke blew out of his nose.

“Big Yellow, the Glory Lotus King is too powerful, I’m scared you won’t be able to handle it, and will explode.”

Jiang Chen’s expression basically said, ‘I’m doing this for your own good.’

“Get lost! Daddy wouldn’t explode even from eating you alive! Give me back my Glory Lotus King!”



Big Yellow gnashed his teeth in anger. Although he knew that since the Glory Lotus King was in Jiang Chen's hand, and it was impossible to get it back, he still wanted to threaten Jiang Chen a little.

## Chapter 319 – Shangguan Yilei

---

More people had arrived at the garden in the sky. Countless warriors were dashing around, and the herbs kept disappearing. All the warriors who arrived here were geniuses from the younger generation, and the rich herbs grown in this garden were more than enough to produce a few more geniuses. Since most of these powerful herbs were obtained by these geniuses, as long as they weren't unlucky and died here, once they left the Island of Ice, their cultivations would definitely experience a great surge.

“Everyone, stop what you're doing immediately!”

A loud shout suddenly resounded throughout the garden in the sky. Every turned their attention towards the source of this sound, and what they could see was four young warriors who had seemingly just arrived. Three men and one girl. The air around these four was haughty, and it seemed like none of the other warriors present could compare. The leading person was tall and muscular, even more so than Nangong Wentian.

“They are geniuses from the Shangguan Clan! I know that guy, his name is Shangguan Yilei, one of the top disciples from the Shangguan Clan's younger generation! He just broke through to the Combat Soul realm not long ago, I never thought I'd see him here!”

“Damn it, he has broken through to the Combat Soul realm at such a young age, I'm so jealous! But, look at his face, it seems like he came with hostile intentions.”

“I’m guessing it has something to do with Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen killed every single person from the Shangguan Clan in that desert, and I’m sure they’re angry because of that.”

.....

The arrival of Shangguan Yilei caused the crowds to start discussing amongst each other. Some even had frightened expressions on their faces. Let alone the Shangguan Clan’s formidable reputation, just Shangguan Yilei’s Combat Soul cultivation was more than enough to shake everyone here.

The fact was, a genius Combat Soul warrior was not someone those ordinary Combat Soul warriors could compare with. Shangguan Yilei’s incredible combat strength was far higher than that of Shangguan Chong, who had been killed by Jiang Chen.

Right now, all four geniuses from the Shangguan Clan threw their glances at the garden in the sky and looked at the half-empty garden. An obvious expression of greed emerged on their faces, as those remaining herbs were the most precious ones.

“Everyone listen, from now on, this this garden belongs to the Shangguan Clan, and none of you are allowed to take any more herbs from here!”

Shangguan Yilei’s loud and clear voice shook the entire atmosphere. His words caused the expressions of all people to instantly change.

“Fuck! Why is the Shangguan Clan so arrogant?! This sky garden doesn’t belong to them at all!”

“Damn it, they are trying to take over the entire sky garden! The Shangguan is simply too arrogant!”

“They have no right to do this, none of these herbs belong to anyone! Those capable will get what they deserve! If Shangguan Yilei is so strong, he should just break all defense mechanisms and take the herbs for himself! Declaring the sky garden belonging to them is just too much!”

.....

The way the crowds looked at the Shangguan Clan had changed. All of them were gnashing their teeth in anger. None of these herbs belonged to anyone, and they were the ones who discovered them first. For what reason could the Shangguan Clan claim that this sky garden belongs to them?

“You guys have obtained quite a lot of herbs, don’t be too greedy.”

Shangguan Yilei said with a grin on his face.

Many people started inwardly cursing. Greedy? Who were the greedy ones here? Before you, the Shangguan Clan arrived, there were many geniuses from different superpowers who had already aside. Putting aside all the other superpowers... fuck, even

someone as formidable as Jiang Chen didn't behave so greedily, this is ridiculous!

“Brother Lei has said it, all the herbs here belongs to the Shangguan Clan, and none of you are allowed to take another one!”

The female disciple from the Shangguan Clan added with a loud voice. Her seductive look caused many guys to gnash their teeth. Many of them started fantasizing about her.

Of course, they could only hide these fantasies deep within their minds. Furthermore, after the female disciple finished speaking, although the crowds were really unsatisfied with their claims, they had to stop immediately, and didn't touch an herbs in front of them. This included all those superpowers from the different provinces; none of them had the courage to offend the Shangguan Clan!

Bam!

Right at this moment, another defense mechanism was broken, and Big Yellow had devoured yet another herb! After doing so, he just walked straight over to another herb. On the other side, Jiang Chen didn't even take a single look at those from the Shangguan Clan, just kept walking toward different herbs and gathered them. Nangong Wentian and Han Yan were doing the same, and both of them were whistling with pleasant expressions on their faces. They worked hand in hand to break defense mechanisms and harvest every single herb they could.

The behavior of these four was extremely blatant. But, for some reason, the crowds felt really delighted upon seeing what they were doing. All of them were getting tired of the Shangguan Clan. Furthermore, most of them knew about the conflict between Jiang Chen and the Shangguan Clan. If there was anyone here daring enough to challenge the Shangguan Clan; that would be Jiang Chen!

“Bastards, are you all deaf? I asked you to stop!”

The female disciple behaved like a tigress. She was even more arrogant than that guy, she just straight up cursed at Jiang Chen and his group.

“Bitch, don’t be so loud, who do you think you are?”

Big Yellow turned around and responded to the female disciple. After that, he continued digging in.

Many people inwardly gave Big Yellow a thumbs up. This dog was a being not bound by common sense, he was daring enough to call a genius from the Shangguan Clan a bitch! Just with his courage alone, he had won the admiration of the crowds. But, when they recalled what Big Yellow did back at the Blissful Island’s auction... it was quite tame, actually.

Big Yellow’s words set that female disciple ablaze; she instantly became furious!

“Damn dog, I’m going to tear you into a million pieces!”

The female disciple immediately dashed forward. Along her way, she retrieved a soft whip and whipped it at Big Yellow. The whip moved like a deadly poisonous snake. The female disciple was a Peak Divine Core warrior, and if this attack hit its target, any ordinary man would instantly explode.

Besides Shangguan Yilong and Shangguan Yilei who were Combat Soul warriors, all the other younger generation disciples from the Shangguan Clan had very strong cultivations; all of them were Late Divine Core warriors.

Shangguan Yilong had found something good in the path he had taken, so he hadn’t arrived here with the other disciples yet. Shangguan Yilei who led four disciples was the one who had arrived at the garden in the sky first. But, he had never thought there would be someone daring enough to challenge the dignity of the Shangguan Clan.

Swoosh!

With incredible speed, Big Yellow moved and hid behind Nangong Wentian. But, it seemed like the soft whip was a living creature, as it immediately turned around and struck toward Nangong Wentian. It looked like it was going to kill Nangong Wentian as well.

“Hmph! How dare you challenge the mighty Shangguan Clan?

You deserve death as well!”

The female disciple was extremely arrogant and rude. She tried killing Nangong Wentian as well.

“Fucking bitch!”

Nangong Wentian’s gaze became cold. He instantly retrieved the Myriad Star Ruler from his storage ring. He raised the azure ruler high up into the air and forcefully struck at the female disciple.

Smack!

Both weapons collided, and the female disciple let out an alarmed cry. The soft whip was knocked out of her hand by Nangong Wentian’s single strike. At the same time, Nangong Wentian’s attack didn’t stop there! With tremendous force, the heavy Myriad Star Ruler hit the female disciple’s body.

Aahhh!

The female disciple let out a miserable shriek. A stream of blood shout out from her mouth, and like a flying kite that had its string cut, her body flew backwards. She looked like a withered flower right now.

“Sister Ling!”



A young man from the Shangguan Clan shouted. He sprinted forward and pulled the female disciple into his arms. To his shock, he found the female disciple's eyes to be tightly shut. After struggling for a few moments, her last breath escape from her body.

“Sister Ling! Brother Lei, Sister Ling is dead!”

The man stood up and yelled out.

“What?!”

Shangguan Yilei furiously shouted. He was so angry it seemed like fire was about to burst out from his eyes. Someone really dared kill a Shangguan Clan disciple? This is ridiculous!

“Kaka, Brother Nan, I never expected you to be so brutal! You didn't show that worthless woman any mercy!”

Big Yellow started laughing.

“She's just a bitch who only knows how to bark, she deserved to die.”

Nangong Wentian shrugged his shoulders. He didn't seem bothered by it.

As for why Nangong Wentian was daring enough to kill someone

from the Shangguan Clan, and why he could a Peak Divine Core genius with just a single strike? Many people were shocked and puzzled, while some were calm. They knew Nangong Wentian was with Jiang Chen, and the conflict between them and the Shangguan Clan had reached a stage where it couldn't be resolved. That's the reason why he didn't show any mercy. Furthermore, Nangong Wentian was a warrior who could fight a Combat Soul warrior! Killing a Divine Core warrior was just a piece of cake to him.

Deserved to be die?

Hearing what Nangong Wentian said, the other three Shangguan Clan disciples couldn't restrain themselves any longer, especially Shangguan Yilei. His gaze was locked upon Nangong Wentian.

“I don't care who you are, I want you to kneel down in front of Sister Ling and apologize! After that, kill yourself in front of her! If you force me to strike, I'll make sure you die in the most miserable way possible!”

Shangguan Yilei pointed his finger at Nangong Wentian.

“You're just a fart in my eyes. If you have the guts, let's fight now!”

Nangong Wentian was a person who never surrendered to a strong force. He simply raised the giant ruler in his hand, and pointed it toward Shangguan Yilei.

“You’re courting death!”

Shangguan Yilei became really furious. With a step, he arrived in front of Nangong Wentian. He struck out with his palm and unleashed a bright earth-shattering palm toward Nangong Wentian.

“So strong!”

Nangong Wentian’s expression changed slightly. This Shangguan Yilei was really strong, and Shangguan Chong simply couldn’t be compared to him. If they were at the same level, Nangong Wentian would have no fear of him. But, the gap between the Divine Core realm and the Combat Soul realm was huge! With Nangong Wentian’s current cultivation and combat strength, he was able to fight an ordinary Combat Soul warrior like Shangguan Chong, but when facing a genius like Shangguan Yilei, he would be on the losing side.

“Myriad Star Ruler!”

Nangong Wentian was an aggressive man. Without any hesitation, he swung the gigantic ruler in his hand toward the bright earth-shattering palm.

Boom!

Powerful shockwaves swept across the area. Indeed, Nangong Wentian was no match for Shangguan Yilei. He was knocked back

by the massive impact, but, since his body was strong, the massive force didn't hurt him much. Han Yan had also helped him after he had been knocked back.

Roar!

Right at this moment, Big Yellow finally struck. He immediately unleashed the Soul Crunching Tune toward Shangguan Yilei. At the same time, Jiang Chen attacked from the other side. He unleashed three ferocious Flood Dragons which assisted Big Yellow.

Two formidable attacks! This caused Shangguan Yilei's expression to instantly change.

Especially because of the Soul Crunching Tune! He could feel a tearing pain from his soul. But luckily, he had formed his Combat Soul, and was able to respond quickly. He instantly took out his Superior Weapon and managed to block Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's combined attack. Even so, he was knocked back a few steps, and his face had turned pale.

“How could this be possible?!”

Shangguan Yilei was terrified! Even with his combat strength, he was knocked back by two Divine Core warriors! This was absurd! Once again, he took a careful look at the man and dog in front of him. Then, he suddenly recalled the name, Jiang Chen!

## Chapter 320 – Fight Alone

---

“They are so strong, even a genius Combat Soul warrior was knocked back by their attack? How can these few guys be so formidable? Shangguan Yilei is not an ordinary Early Combat Soul warrior, his combat strength is much more than that of ordinary Early Combat Soul warrior!”

“You know nothing, he is that Jiang Chen!”

“So he is Jiang Chen, he is the one who killed all those warriors in the desert... but he looks so young! What a ferocious man! But, no matter how strong they are, they are only Divine Core warriors, I don’t think they can match Shangguan Yilei. He hasn’t really used any mighty skills yet either.”

.....

Many people started discussing amongst each other. Some didn’t know who Jiang Chen was, and were shocked by Jiang Chen’s formidability.

Many warriors here were from different superpowers of the Eastern Continent, and there were a few warriors from the Qingyi Secy. They too hated Jiang Chen to the core, but they still didn’t have the courage to attack him.

“So, you are that Jiang Chen?”

Shangguan Yilei's sight landed on Jiang Chen's face, and he asked while gnashing his teeth in anger. That's right, he was gnashing his teeth! The dead bodies of those from the Shangguan Clan were still lying in the desert, and this young man in front of him was the reason why. Shangguan Yilei had promised the Shangguan Clan's Elder before he came here that if he found Jiang Chen, he would humiliate him and make sure he dies in the most miserable way possible. And now, the person he was looking for was standing right in front of him. What caused him to be even angrier was that another bastard had just killed their sister, Ling. The enmity between the two sides had become even worse now.

“That's right, I'm Jiang Chen. You guys from the Shangguan Clan are too arrogant, the herbs here don't belong to anyone, and you guys simply claimed they were yours without even taking the feelings of all the others here into consideration? Even I can't stand you guys any longer.”

Jiang Chen started laughing as he spoke, and he purposely added some words of provocation. Jiang Chen knew the enmity between himself and the Shangguan Clan couldn't be resolved, and since that was a fact, he wouldn't waste his time trying to be nice to them.

“Jiang Chen, you're extremely daring! Not only did you kill Shangguan Wei, the Shangguan Clan's Elder in Inferno Hell, you also killed a lot of people from the Shangguan Clan in the desert! No one underneath the heavens has ever dared do this to our clan! Today, you're going to hell even if you have ten lives!”

Shangguan Yilei unleashed his energy, and his murderous spirit

soared.

“I only have one life, but I’m afraid you’re not capable of taking it.”

Jiang Chen wasn’t bothered by the warning.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen, let me tell you this, I wasn’t using all my strength just now. In my eyes, you’re all just tiny ants. If you kneel down before me and kowtow, I’ll consider giving you all quick deaths.”

Shangguan Yilei coldly harrumphed, and his energy was much stronger now than it was before. A Combat Soul warrior had formed a real Combat Soul within his body, and their strength was not something a Divine Core warrior could compare with. Also, Shangguan Yilei was a genius, not some ordinary Early Combat Soul warrior. Although he was knocked back by Jiang Chen and Big Yellow some moments ago, he had fully recovered now. As long as he attacked with all his strength, he would be able to kill these men in front of him in an instant.

“Why does everyone from the Shangguan Clan wear the same shitty expression on their faces? And why can they only talk bullshit?”

Han Yan sarcastically answered.

“Young brat, you haven’t even grown hair down there! Yelling in

front of this master dog, really reckless! This master dog suggests you get the fuck outta here right now, then you might perhaps be able to keep your life! If you don't, you will see that same ending as that bitch lying on the ground!"

Big Yellow's speech was even wicked.

"Hmph! You're all just daring rascals, I'll be the one to end your lives! Thundercloud Storm!"

Shangguan Yilei was furious, and he didn't waste his breath any longer. He took a step forwards and turned into a strong wind, then he appeared in front of Jiang Chen and the group. He unleashed a powerful thunderstorm toward Jiang Chen and the group.

"True Dragon Palm!"

"Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants!"

"Nine Devil Waves!"

"And also this master dog!"

The group attacked at the same time! A gigantic blood red dragon claw descended from the skies above. Nangong Wentian unleashed a golden savage elephant as large as a small hill, and it looked really formidable. Han Yan's cultivation was slightly weaker, but the Ancient Divine Devil gave him mighty strength as well.



Devilish energy fluctuated around his body, causing him to look like a Devil King. On the other side, Big Yellow spat out a golden beam, which shot forward with an incredible force.

Bang!

The four combined attacks collided with Shangguan Yilei's Thundercloud Storm, and everything in the center of the battlefield was destroyed. The collision caused a shockwave to explode out, and many people who stood close to the battlefield immediately fled the scene with terrified expressions.

The space surrounding the collision was directly beaten into chaos. Smoke emerged from the center of the collision, and a huge hole was created in the sky garden. Many of the herbs with weaker defense mechanisms were destroyed by this devastating force. It was a real pity.

Once again, Shangguan Yilei was knocked back three steps, and the shocked expression on his face was even thicker than last time. The strength of these four guys was beyond his imagination! He was a Combat Soul genius, but these four Divine Core warriors had just knocked back! This was something that didn't even happen in his wildest dreams!

Of course, Shangguan Yilei had no idea what kind of abnormal monsters these guys were. Jiang Chen had 2,200 Dragon Marks, giving him the ability to fight ordinary Combat Soul warriors. If he formed more Dragon Marks and reached the Peak Mid Divine Core realm, or even the Late Divine Core realm, he would be able to kill Shangguan Yilei in an instant.

Nangong Wentian had amazing talent, and although it was unclear what kind of physique he had, it was certainly incredibly strong! Although he was only a Peak Divine Core warrior, his combat strength was no less than that of Jiang Chen! He was also able to fight Early Combat Soul warriors like Shangguan Chong.

As for Big Yellow, he was the descendant of the Dragon Horse! Although his bloodline wasn't fully awakened, its mightiness was slowly being revealed! With just a Late Divine Core cultivation, he was able to fight any ordinary Early Combat Soul warriors!

Han Yan was still a Peak Mid Divine Core warrior, just one step away from the Late Divine Core realm. Compared to Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian, he was indeed weaker. But, his combat strength couldn't be excluded either. The combination of these four abnormal monsters was more than enough to fight Shangguan Yilei.

“Kaka, young brat, you better go back and train for another two years! With just those abilities, you're trying to occupy the entire sky garden?”

Big Yellow said with a laugh.

At this moment, another two young disciples from the Shangguan Clan flew up to Shangguan Yilei. One of them said with a vicious voice, “Brother Lei, we don't have to be nice to them anymore, let us help you!”

“Back off, you guys are not their match. You’ll just end up dying.”

Shangguan Yilei replied to the guy. He and his opponents had exchanged attacks twice now, and he didn’t have the upper hand either time. But, it gave him some basic understand of these four people’s strength. These two disciples were only Late Divine Core warriors, and if they joined the fight, not only would they be unable to provide any help, they might just die in an instant.

Shangguan Yilei looked at Jiang Chen and said, “Jiang Chen, if you have the guys, fight me alone!”

“Ok.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders and accepted the challenge without any hesitation.

Shangguan Yilei was startled by Jiang Chen’s straightforward response. He was just probing, and he didn’t expect Jiang Chen to accept his challenge. The current situation was pretty clear, none of these four were a match for him if they fought alone, but they were able to fight him when they worked together. Therefore, only an idiot would agree to fight alone.

In fact, Shangguan Yilei wasn’t even serious when he said those words. But, unexpectedly... Jiang Chen was a real dumbass.

“You really accept the challenge?”

Shangguan Yilei couldn't believe it, and tried making sure once again.

“Of course. You and me, one versus one; let the Heavens decide our destiny.”

With a refreshing voice, Jiang Chen agreed once again.

“Little Chen, why did you accept the challenge?”

Han Yan furrowed his brows.

“Yea, this guy is really strong. With just you alone, I don't think you're his match. But, if we work together, even if we can't kill him, we can still piss him off.”

Nangong Wentian couldn't understand why someone as smart as Jiang Chen would accept Shangguan Yilei's challenge.

“Do you guys know nothing? Little Chen is trying to use the pressure from that guy to break through to another level.”

Big Yellow said while wagging his head. If there was one person who knew exactly what Jiang Chen was thinking, it must be this dog!

“Big Yellow is right, I need to break through to the next stage as

quickly as possible and increase my combat strength. The geniuses of the Shangguan Clan are here, and I believe it won't take long for geniuses from the Myriad Sword Sect to arrive, or even those from the Martial Palace. At that point of time, there will be numerous geniuses fighting us, and we don't even know how many Combat Soul warriors there are. We have too many enemies, but we are currently too weak, making us an easy target for them. The fact is, all Combat Soul warriors who come here are less than 30 years old, and everyone single one of them is considered a genius, not someone Shangguan Chong or Mao Sheng can compare with."

Jiang Chen focused his eyes and looked around the sky garden. He continued speaking, "Besides, the environment here is on my side, actually. I want to strengthen my cultivation while fighting Shangguan Yilei; it's going to be a grand feast!"

"Grand feast? You're going to eat all the herbs here?"

Nangong Wentian asked in a surprised manner.

"That's right."

Jiang Chen smiled. All the herbs here were rare natural treasures, and many of them had grown naturally. They contained a massive amount of energy, and no one could immediately absorb them, except for Jiang Chen. With the Dragon Transformation skill, there was nothing he couldn't absorb.

Jiang Chen wanted to use this pressure to squeeze out his potential. With that, he would be able to devour the herbs and

absorb their energy without any restriction, and form new Dragon Marks while fighting. If there was an opportunity, he might be able to break through to the Late Divine Core realm! If he could do so, killing Shangguan Yilei would be no different than killing an ant, and he would have the ability to fight the other geniuses later on in this Island of Ice.

“Come!”

Jiang Chen roared out. With a step forward, he appeared in the skies above. The battle between him and Shangguan Yilei was definitely going to be extremely violent, and if he picked the sky garden as the battlefield, countless herbs would be destroyed by them.

“What is this Jiang Chen thinking about? Does he really think he has the ability to fight Shangguan Yilei?”

“Agreed. If the four of them work together, they might still have a chance to defeat Shangguan Yilei, but none of them seems to have the ability to fight him alone. This Jiang Chen looks like a smart man, so why did he make this decision?”

“Let’s just continue watching. Jiang Chen is definitely not an idiot, he has a lot of powerful approaches.”

## Chapter 321 – Grand Feast

---

With a hideous grin on his face, Shangguan Yilei leapt forward and flew into the sky above. He too didn't want to fight in the sky garden. If he and Jiang Chen fought with everything they had, many herbs would be destroyed by their devastating energy. Since all these herbs belonged to the Shangguan Clan, it would be a devastating waste if they were to be destroyed during the battle.

“Jiang Chen, since you're courting death, don't blame me for killing you later on. But, I really want to know, with what are you going to fight me all alone?”

Violent energy waves fluctuated around Shangguan Yilei's body. To satisfy his curiosity, he asked Jiang Chen this question.

“With this.”

Jiang Chen flipped his palm, then a thousand year old Ginseng appeared in his hand, emitting a strong medicinal fragrance. Using his Yuan energy, Jiang Chen crushed the Ginseng into ashes and absorbed all its essence in the blink of an eye.

The Dragon Transformation skill started circulating at great speed. The medicinal strength and energy contained within the thousand year old Ginseng had completely turned into Yuan energy, and gave Jiang Chen another 3 Dragon Marks. Furthermore, the medicinal strength penetrated into Jiang Chen's viscera and bone marrow, strengthening his vitality at the same time.

Shangguan Yilei went blank for a moment, then a grin emerged on his face, “Haha, Jiang Chen, don’t tell me you’re going to use those herbs to increase your cultivation at this point of time? This is funny, don’t you think it’s a little too late to do this now?”

In Shangguan Yilei’s mind, what Jiang Chen did was a joke. Progressing further along the cultivation path was no easy task, and trying to do so during a battle was just stupid. The gap between the Divine Core realm and Combat Soul realm was not small, and furthermore, no one could absorb herbs straightaway like that. Usually, all herbs had to be concocted into pills before a warrior could absorb them, and only in pill form could the warrior absorb the herb essence. Devouring a herb like Jiang Chen did would just make most of the medicinal strength go to waste.

“It’s not too late.”

Jiang Chen didn’t mind what Shangguan Yilei said. He repeatedly took out herbs and absorbed them like they were worthless. No one could actually see the Dragon Transformation skill circulating extremely quickly within his body. All the herbs’ medicinal strength were completely absorb by him with nothing going to waste, and at the same time, new Dragon Marks were constantly forming within his body. With each new Dragon Mark formed, Jiang Chen’s combat strength would increase.

What?

Shangguan Yilei furrowed his brows. He could clearly feel Jiang



Chen's aura transforming at this moment. Although the fluctuations weren't significant, Shangguan Yilei could tell that Jiang Chen had become stronger.

“You're courting death!”

Shangguan Yilei didn't want to delay any longer, so he attacked in a resolute manner. The lightning that burst out from his body caused him to look very mighty. He unleashed a massive thundercloud that brought forth a violent storm, and sent them at Jiang Chen.

When a Combat Soul warrior attacked, the wind and clouds would fluctuate. Their every single attack was like a huge mountain, and no one could run away from it.

“Nine Murdering Flood Dragons!”

Jiang Chen knew that Thundercloud Storm was one of Shangguan Yilei's favorite skills, so he dared not neglect it. He immediately unleashed the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons. He had absorbed a Flood Dragon's blood essence, giving him the bloodline of a Flood Dragon. Therefore, he was able to unleash the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons to its maximum potential.

Roar!

The Flood Dragons' roars resounded throughout the entire area. Three Flood Dragons more than 30 meters long suddenly appeared,

and they flew through the violent Thundercloud Storm in a most formidable manner.

Bang!

The thunder interweaved, and the surrounding air shook from the tremendous force. Shangguan Yilei had proven himself to be a genius of the younger generation, and his combat strength was many times stronger than that of ordinary Early Combat Soul warriors. All three Flood Dragons unleashed by Jiang Chen were instantly destroyed by his Thundercloud Storm.

“Hmph! True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, the continued attacking with the True Dragon Palm. The huge blood red dragon claw collided with the Thundercloud Storm, shattering it in an instant. However, Jiang Chen was knocked back a few steps by the backlash before he could regain his balance.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you’re not my match at all! I’m going to let you suffer in the most humiliating way possible before I kill you! Earth Shattering Palm!”

Shangguan Yilei seemed very mighty as he unleashed the Shangguan Clan’s most famous skill, the Earth Shattering Palm. The attack flew toward Jiang Chen in an unavoidable manner. Shangguan Yilei had found out in their previous exchange, although Jiang Chen was really strong, he was not his match at all.

Jiang Chen had a grin on his face. The more strength Shangguan Yilei showed, the happier Jiang Chen got. He needed Shangguan Yilei's pressure in order to improve his cultivation and look for an opportunity. With tremendous pressure, not only could he absorb all herbs quickly, it could also help him squeeze out the hidden potential in his body and improve his foundation. Therefore, he had no worries about his foundation becoming unstable upon experiencing a great surge in his cultivation in such a short amount of time. This was the perfect solution to his current situation, and that's the reason why Jiang Chen accepted Shangguan Yilei's challenge to fight one versus one.

Furthermore, although Shangguan Yilei was really strong, and was able to suppress Jiang Chen, with all the abilities Jiang Chen had, it was impossible for Shangguan Yilei to kill Jiang Chen.

“Six Profound Solar Fingers!”

Jiang Chen roared out as he unleashed the Six Profound Solar Fingers. The finger collided with the Earth Shattering Palm, and at the same time, he repeatedly took out many herbs with his other hand. He absorbed every single bit of energy, and formed new Dragon Marks in his body.

“Firethorn Combat Armor!”

Jiang Chen shouted out once again. A golden colored armor appeared outside his body. With the protection of this armor, he was more confident in dealing with Shangguan Yilei.

Bang!

It was a heated battle in the skies. Every single attack unleashed by Jiang Chen and Shangguan Yilei caused the atmosphere to violently tremble. All those watching the fight had terrified expressions on their faces.

Shangguan Yilei was incomparably ferocious right now. He constantly unleashed powerful attacks, knocking Jiang Chen back again and again. At the same time, he was joyfully laughing, completely immersed in the pleasant feeling of bullying Jiang Chen. He had completely forgotten that he should unleash his most powerful attack, or use his Superior Weapon and kill Jiang Chen quickly. Or perhaps, only slowly torturing Jiang Chen before killing him could make him feel joy.

But in the middle of this battle, Shangguan Yilei had neglected one fact: Jiang Chen had become stronger and stronger, and when he reached a certain level, Shangguan Yilei's goal of killing Jiang Chen would only become a mere daydream.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen was withstanding Shangguan Yilei's tremendous pressure, and his potential was constantly being stimulated. He had now finally absorbed all the herbs he had obtained in the sky garden, giving him another 200 Dragon Marks.

“Still not enough.”

Jiang Chen's dark hair was dancing in the powerful wind. As of now, his potential had awoken, and all the medicinal strength in

his body had been fully absorbed! However, his body was like a bottomless hole. Every meridian, every cell, everything was crying for more energy! It was as if no matter how much energy was fed, they would still feel extremely hungry.

The condition he was in now, where his potential had awoken caused Jiang Chen to feel excited in both body and soul. This was a rare opportunity, and he needed to feed his body well. He needed more energy!

Jiang Chen flipped his palm once again and retrieved the tall Glory Lotus King.

Ha!

Jiang Chen shouted. He punched the Glory Lotus King, causing it to instantly shatter. After that, Jiang Chen devoured every single bit of it into his body in the blink of an eye.

“Jiang Chen must be crazy! He just ate so many herbs directly, isn’t he scared his body will explode from the tremendous energy?”

“The way he swallows the herbs is just a big waste, sigh.”

“No matter how many herbs he eats, it just can’t help him win the fight. He was surpassed by Shangguan Yilei since the beginning, and I don’t see how he is going to continue this. As long as Shangguan Yilei unleashes his strongest attack, this Jiang Chen

will die instantly.”

“Shangguan Yilei is clearly just playing with Jiang Chen. He wants to torture him slowly before killing him.”

.....

The situation was quite obvious, Jiang Chen had been on the receiving end since the beginning. Although he had eaten a lot of herbs, it seemed like they didn’t provide any help at all; he was still no match for Shangguan Yilei.

Big Yellow was the only one who had a happy expression. He stared at the ferocious Shangguan Yilei like he was staring at an idiot.

“This idiot is going to die in utter misery.”

Big Yellow said.

“Big Yellow, Little Chen has eaten so many herbs, but why can’t I feel his energy increasing?”

Han Yan asked as he furrowed his brows.

“You know nothing. Buddy is purposely suppressing himself, can’t you guys see that? His body’s potential has awakened, and his actual combat strength is soaring towards the heavens, but he is

suppressing it. Once the grand feast comes to an end, Shangguan Yilei will be dead.”

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up. Jiang Chen had tremendous fighting experience, and even those old seniors from the superpowers didn’t have as much fighting experience as Jiang Chen.

“The medicinal strength contained within this Glory Lotus King is so powerful, and the lotus’s core actually contains natural essence. Just this herb alone should give me another 100 Dragon Marks.”

Jiang Chen was really excited. The medicinal strength contained within the Glory Lotus King pounded into all his limbs and bones. Dragon roars could be heard from within his body, and more and more blood red Dragon Marks were condensed and formed. In the blink of an eye, 100 new Dragon Marks had been formed. Presently, Jiang Chen had managed to form another 350 Dragon Marks. But, his body was still hungry, as if it was a bottomless hole that could never be sated.

“Big Yellow!”

Jiang Chen shouted toward Big Yellow.

Hearing Jiang Chen’s shout, Big Yellow immediately understood what he needed to do. Without any hesitation, he opened his mouth and spat out some precious herbs towards Jiang Chen. Although Big Yellow had eaten quite a lot of herbs, he still kept some behind.

“Brother Nan, Brother Yan, give all your herbs to Little Chen.”

Big Yellow said.

“Alright.”

Both men nodded their heads as they threw all their herbs toward Jiang Chen. In an instant, all the herbs entered Jiang Chen’s mouth.

“So many herbs! This is incredible!”

Nangong Wentian was amazed.

“The amazing part has yet to come. Let me tell you, the skill Little Chen cultivates allows him to fully absorb all medicinal strength. Furthermore, with so many herbs stored in his body, just his body itself can be considered a massive treasure! What Little Chen is absorbing right now is only their energy, he will process all different elemental medicinal strength later to improve his foundation.”

Big Yellow explained. This dog was a haughty being who didn’t admire anyone except himself, but Jiang Chen was an exception. Forget all the other amazing talents he had, just the ability to absorb herbs... was there anyone else who could do the same?



For Jiang Chen, this was a grand feast. All these herbs in front of him could help him fully fill up the bottomless hole, and he might be able to use this opportunity to break through to the Late Divine Core realm.

## Chapter 322 – Killing Shangguan Yilei

---

Pieces of herbs were circulating around Jiang Chen, and his entire body was glowing brightly. Right now, he himself was an incredible treasure! If someone had the ability to catch Jiang Chen, that person could use Jiang Chen's body to concoct some precious pills.

Back in Fragrant Sky City, even a guard from the Jiang family was hungry for the medicinal strength in Jiang Chen's body, and wanted to drink his blood. Comparing the Jiang Chen back then and now, it was a huge difference that couldn't even be compared.

There was nothing back in the Jiang family, those pills Jiang Zhenhai (His father) had given Jiang Chen were the lowest-grade pills. Any herb in this sky garden was hundreds of times more precious than anything the Jiang family had to offer.

Buzz...

Buzzing could be heard from the surface of Jiang Chen's body. At the same time, thunderous roars exploded forth within his body. New Dragon Marks were endlessly forming and circulating around the Divine Core. However, this explosive momentum was purposely being restrained by Jiang Chen.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, just give up your stubborn and useless resistance, you are not my match at all! Now, I'm going to humiliate you before kill you, I'll chop both your arms and legs off, make you kneel down before me and lick my toes!”

Shangguan Yilei continuously attacked and knocked Jiang Chen back. Although his face looked pale, he was incredibly joyful at this moment.

“Really?”

Jiang Chen replied with a grin. Right now, he had gained another 500 Dragon Marks, and had a total of 2,700 Dragon Marks in his body. Once he formed another 500 Dragon Marks, he would be able to break through to the Late Divine Core realm.

Even with these newly formed 500 Dragon Marks, Jiang Chen already had the ability to defeat Shangguan Yilei. However, his body wasn't sated yet, there was still room for him to grow further, and he wouldn't let go of this rare opportunity.

“Big Yellow, I need more herbs!”

Jiang Chen once again shouted toward Big Yellow. Not only had he depleted all the herbs he obtained in the sky garden, he had also used up all the herbs he had found in the storage rings of those Combat Soul warriors he killed. Anything he could absorb, including demon souls were all in his body right now.

“My grandpa, this guy is just a bottomless hole!”

Big Yellow felt like he was going to vomit blood. But, he didn't dare hesitate. With a step, he arrived in front of an old herb. He

spat out a few mystical symbols and broke the defense mechanism, then he grabbed the herb and threw it at Jiang Chen.

Nangong Wentian and Han Yan were doing the same at the same time.

“Ignorant, they are just wasting their time doing something useless. What a waste of herbs.”

A disciple from the Shangguan Clan said with a hideous grin on his face. All three Shangguan Clan Divine Core disciples wore the same victorious expressions on their faces, but when they saw Big Yellow and the others starting to harvest herbs, an ill feeling immediately emerged in their minds. But, since they had already witnessed the opponents' abilities, none of them dared stop them. The dead body of their Sister Ling lay on the ground, warning them.

Bang!

The shockwaves from the battle were extremely powerful. Shangguan Yilei began feeling frustrated after fighting for so long, and the killing intent in his body was getting stronger and stronger.

“Brother Lei, don't play with him anymore, just kill him now!”

A disciple from the Shangguan Clan shouted from underneath.

Just as his words left his mouth, three figures suddenly appeared right in front of him. Each figure stood in front of a Shangguan Clan disciple. These three figures were none other than Big Yellow, Han Yan, and Nangong Wentian.

“Why don’t you guys go to hell first?”

Han Yan said with a grin.

“You, how dare you!”

The expressions of these three disciples instantly changed, and they immediately drew out their combat weapons. The trio in front of them was not easy to deal with, and with their abilities, none of these three disciples were a match for anyone in the trio.

To dare or not to dare attack them was not something these three disciples could decide. With their actions, Han Yan and the other two were telling them one thing: in their minds, the Shangguan Clan was nothing but a fart.

Aahh...!

Three miserable shrieks resounded at the same time. Three Divine Core geniuses from the Shangguan Clan were instantly killed by Han Yan and group, and their bodies made a pool of blood appear on the ground. They were killed in a manner much worse than their Sister Ling.

“Bastard!”

What happened underneath couldn't escape from Shangguan Yilei. In an instant, he was enraged, and furiously roared out with his head pointed towards the skies.

“I'm going to tear you all apart!”

Shangguan Yilei was furious! No one had ever done anything like this to the Shangguan Clan! He was getting ready to descend from the sky. A razor sharp longsword appeared in his hand; he wanted to kill those three 'despicable guys' before he killed Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

Although he was fast, there was someone even faster than him. In the blink of an eye, Jiang Chen blocked his path. With a mocking smile, Jiang Chen then said, “Your opponent is me.”

“Alright, Jiang Chen, I'll kill you before killing those three ants! Take my sword!”

Shangguan Yilei furiously roared out. He immediately swung the longsword in his hand toward Jiang Chen. With incredibly speed, the razor sharp longsword that was as thin as silk arrived close to Jiang Chen.

Shangguan Yilei was furious. Just as the crowds thought Jiang Chen was going to get killed, or at least severely wounded, a

sudden change suddenly happened.

Boom!

With a loud booming sound, the massive amounts of energy he had gotten from absorbing the incredible amounts of herbs exploded forth from Jiang Chen's body. The formidable energy swept across the battlefield repeatedly like several gigantic ocean waves, wave after waves, each higher than the previous one.

Roar!

A dull, reverberating dragon's roar sounded out from within Jiang Chen's body. Outside his body, countless blood red Dragon Marks began appearing, and they swirled around his body as if they were real dragons, causing him to look amazingly mighty.

Buzz...

The surrounding atmosphere was vibrating violently. Jiang Chen took out a golden spear from his storage ring and thrust it toward Shangguan Yilei with incredible force.

Clang!

The spear collided with the longsword, producing a huge amount of sparks that shot out in all directions. This time, the result of the collision was completely different from before. Jiang Chen, who was previously weaker than Shangguan Yilei, had suddenly

transformed into a mighty war god. With this strike alone, he knocked Shangguan Yilei back at least 330 meters.

Blergh!

Having suffered from this tremendous force, Shangguan Yilei instantly threw up some blood, and his face turned extremely pale. He could even feel his soul shaking from the impact. With a terrified expression, he shook his head several times, turned to Jiang Chen and said, “Impossible! This is impossible!”

Shangguan Yilei couldn’t believe what had just happened. How could a man suddenly become so strong? This defied his common sense! Jiang Chen couldn’t even fight back moments ago, but in just such a short amount of time, the tables had completely turned!

“Heavens, what did I just see? How could Jiang Chen suddenly become so strong?”

“He started fighting back, it must be because of those herbs! I’m sure Jiang Chen has the ability to completely absorb those herbs and turn the medicinal strength into his own energy! That’s the only reason why his cultivation could have gone up so much in such a short amount of time.”

“Shangguan Yilei was fooled by Jiang Chen! Jiang Chen has been suppressing his aura all this time. If Shangguan Yilei used his most powerful attack, or even the Superior Weapon, he might have killed Jiang Chen by now. But, too bad, he was too overconfident when thinking he was bullying Jiang Chen, but in fact, he gave



Jiang Chen time to increase his cultivation. Now, he's in trouble, and it will be really difficult for him to kill Jiang Chen."

The crowds were shocked upon seeing what was happening. No one really expected to see this. A man had suddenly become much stronger, and it was indeed the first time they had ever witnessed anything like this.

"Shangguan Yilei, the impossible has yet to come. I'm sure you think it'll be impossible for you to die."

Jiang Chen said with a grin on his face. He was extremely powerful right now, but he wasn't at peak condition. Even if he attacked with full strength, Shangguan Yilei still had the chance to escape from here.

But, Jiang Chen would never give him that opportunity.

With a flip of his palm, another herb appeared in Jiang Chen's hand, the Bloody Fleeceflower Root given to him by Xuan Ye. It was given to him with the intention of healing Yan Chenyu's injuries, but Jiang Chen needed it right now.

Not only the Bloody Fleeceflower Root, Jiang Chen also took out the Heavenly Snow Grass and the Thousand Year Old Dragon Ginseng, then he absorbed them all together. These were the herbs given to him by Wu Jiu. They had grown for many years, and they all provided him incredible medicinal strength.

At the same time, Big Yellow harvested some more high-grade herbs from the sky garden and threw them all at Jiang Chen.

Crack...

After absorbing all these herbs, cracking sounds immediately sounded out from within Jiang Chen's body. His energy started rising, seemingly with no end. New Dragon Marks started forming, and soon after, Jiang Chen had a total of 3,100 Dragon Marks in his body!

Right now, the bottomless hole in Jiang Chen's body had finally been sated. With 3,100 Dragon Marks, Jiang Chen was now a Peak Mid Divine Core warrior, and there was only one last step before he could break through to the next stage. He only needed 100 more Dragon Marks to break through!

It was a shame the current rare opportunity didn't make Jiang Chen break through to the next stage. Regardless of that, Jiang Chen was really satisfied with his current condition. Although he had such a great surge in his cultivation, his foundation wasn't affect at all! Furthermore, all the medicinal strength was still stockpiled within his body, and once he had time to absorb those, his foundation would become even stronger. At that time, breaking through to the Late Divine Core realm would be a piece of cake.

What really made Jiang Chen feel depressed was that the energy required for him to break through was too much! It was so much that even Jiang Chen felt speechless! After absorbing so many herbs, he was still in the same Divine Core stage!

This gave Jiang Chen a small desire to curse at someone. He was only in the Divine Core realm right now, and the energy required was so huge! One day, when he broke through to the Combat Soul realm, Combat King realm, Combat Emperor realm, or even the Saint realm... who knew how much energy he would require then?

The Dragon Transformation skill was a really terrifying skill, and it caused Jiang Chen's head to become numb whenever he thought about it. Of course, now was not the right time to worry about that. With his current strength, killing Shangguan Yilei was just a piece of cake.

“Shangguan Yilei, face your death!”

Jiang Chen took a step forward and arrived in front of Shangguan Yilei. Without hesitating, he thrust the spear in his hand forward with incredible strength.

“I will not die here! There is no way a Divine Core warrior can defeat a Combat Soul warrior!”

Shangguan Yilei shouted out. The longsword in his hand started glowing brightly. Right now, Shangguan Yilei was finally using all his combat strength, and he was injecting all his energy into the longsword in his hand.

Clang!

The spear and the longsword collided! The great collision knocked Shangguan Yilei's longsword out of his hand, and at the same time, the spear continued thrusting forwards like a poisonous snake.

Puchi!

The spear impaled Shangguan Yilei's chest. The spear unleashed some razor-sharp energy which destroyed every single organ in his body.

One strike! Shangguan Yilei had died without any ability to resist!

Shangguan Yilei's dead body was hanging on the spear, and his blood dripped down. Watching this scene, the people in the crowds all held their breath, and none dared speak a single word.

## Chapter 323 – Gates Of Life And Death

---

Shocking! Everyone present were shocked! Everyone were holding their breath, and struggled believing what they had just seen! Shangguan Yilei was killed before them, and he wasn't even able to put up a struggle!

Shangguan Yilei was portraying an image of grandeur as he used his mighty strength to push Jiang Chen downwards without wasting too much effort. But, who would have expected this to happen? In just the blink of an eye, Jiang Chen's energy had increased significantly, and he had turned the tables, instantly killing Shangguan Yilei with just a strike.

Fast! Everything happened so fast! Jiang Chen had struck in a formidable manner with extreme speed, he didn't give Shangguan Yilei any chance to respond!

“Heavens! Just how strong is he?”

“I don't even think he's a Late Divine Core warrior! With just a Peak Mid Divine Core cultivation, he has the ability to kill a genius Early Combat Soul warrior with ease! This is too shocking, if I hadn't witnessed this myself, I wouldn't have believed it at all!”

“This is incredible! With such insane combat strength, even those peerless geniuses from the Martial Palace can't compare with Jiang Chen!”

.....

There was none present who weren't shocked! A fight between a Divine Core warrior and a Combat Soul warrior was shocking enough, but an existence like Jiang Chen who possessed the strength to kill a Combat Soul warrior while only at the Peak Mid Divine Core realm... It went against the common sense of everyone present!

Many people were having the same thoughts; Jiang Chen was the Shangguan Clan's nemesis, and since the beginning of the ocean trip, every single man from the Shangguan Clan had been killed by him; none had survived!

Shangguan Yilei was dead, and so were the three young geniuses from the Shangguan Clan. The crowds had no choice but to treat these four as some chaotic devils.

After Shangguan Yilei died, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow harvested some relatively precious herbs from the sky garden, then they left. A lot of people left the sky garden and proceeded further towards the inner area of the Island of Ice.

There weren't many herbs left, and for those who couldn't get any more herbs, it was pointless to stay behind. More importantly, no one had any idea how much longer the Island of Ice would remain open. There were definitely some more precious treasures hidden somewhere deeper, and no one would give up what awaited them.

"Little Chen, you were really fierce and powerful just now, even

that Shangguan Yilei was killed by you! Your combat strength improved with such incredible speed, I'm sure you're cultivating with an amazing skill! That explains why you're able to absorb herbs in such a manner."

Along their way, Nangong Wentian couldn't help but praise Jiang Chen. He had basically thrown himself down at Jiang Chen's feet in admiration, just like Han Yan. In his mind, Jiang Chen was a man who was an expert at everything! Alchemy, defense mechanisms... he even had such incredible combat strength at the Peak Mid Divine Core realm! Nangong Wentian had absolutely no confidence he could defeat Jiang Chen.

Nangong Wentian was a genius of the younger generation, one of the strongest geniuses from the Southern Continent. He was really prideful, and had never admired anyone other than himself. But now, Jiang Chen was the first person he had ever admired.

"Yes, I'm cultivating a pretty powerful skill. It allows me to perfectly absorb all energy and medicinal strength contained within herbs."

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

"Little Chen, the way you level up is incredibly fast, it's just like a grand feast. But, won't it affect your foundation? That wouldn't do you any good for your future cultivation."

Han Yan turned to Jiang Chen and asked in a worried tone.

“Don’t worry. The reason why I wanted to fight Shangguan Yilei alone was to use the pressure to increase my strength. Besides, all those herbs I absorbed were from different elements. Although I fully absorbed all the energy within, most of the medicinal strength is still stored within my body. With all the medicinal strength, I will be able to strengthen my body and improve my foundation. So, not only will it not affect my foundation, it will actually help me strengthen it. It won’t take long for me to break through to the Late Divine Core realm.”

Jiang Chen explained. He was in a tip-top condition right now, and the sky garden had provided him tremendous benefits.

“You’re such a terrifying existence! Looks like I need to work harder. If not, the gap between us will just get bigger and bigger.”

Han Yan said in a slightly depressed manner. In this group of three men and one dog, he was the weakest. Although he possessed the bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil, if his cultivation still remained at the stage it was at right now, he would soon be left behind by the other three monsters. Putting aside Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian were two abnormal monsters as well.

“Looks like we’ve come to the end of the road.”

Nangong Wentian said as he furrowed his brows. What they were facing right now was a vast expanse of whiteness. There was white fog everywhere; nothing else. No road could be seen on the ground, and the white fog was really thick, so they could barely see anything beyond it.



“The white fog is the same as the ones we’ve entered before. Only difference is that it’s much thicker. I sense no danger from it, and if we want to venture further into the Island of Ice, we’ll need to cross this white fog.”

Jiang Chen said.

The group dashed into the white fog with great speed. When those who followed after them saw that no harm was done to Jiang Chen and his group, they immediately followed their steps. Soon, more and more people arrived at the sky garden, and they too all venture into the white fog.

Not long after Jiang Chen killed Shangguan Yilei, a few other men from the Shangguan Clan had come out from the path. The leading man was a genius from the Shangguan Clan, Shangguan Yilong. His aura had become much stronger compared to when he arrived at the Island of Ice, it looked like he had reached the Peak Early Combat Soul realm. He was now more formidable than Shangguan Yilei. He had clearly encountered some good fortune back on the path.

At the same time, the group from the Myriad Sword Sect had also come out from the path. Ling Du and Xu Shuang were both in the group as well. They were delayed by all sorts of creatures back on the path. Those creatures weren’t that strong, they were similar to the stone golems Jiang Chen had defeated. With the combined strength of the disciples of the Myriad Sword Sect, leaving the path was an easy job.

The men from the Shangguan Clan came to the sky garden in high spirits, but when they saw the dead bodies on the ground, all their expressions changed instantly.

Boom!

Shangguan Yilong's fury erupted like a raging inferno. He furiously turned to one of the nearby warriors, growling, "Tell me! Who did this?!"

The warrior was trembling in fear. He dared not hide anything, so he replied with a trembling voice, "Jiang Chen and his group did this."

"What?! Jiang Chen again?!"

A Late Divine Core genius from the Shangguan Clan exclaimed.

"Impossible, that Jiang Chen is only a Divine Core warrior! Although I didn't like Shangguan Yilei, I refuse to believe that Jiang Chen has the ability to kill him."

Xu Shuang from the Myriad Sword Sect was the one who spoke. They felt joy upon seeing someone from the Shangguan Clan dead, but when they found out it was Jiang Chen who killed him, the joy immediately dimmed down. Back in the Jian Province, although the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan were rivals, in this Island of Ice, they had a common enemy; Jiang Chen!

Xu Shuang and Shangguan Yilei were rivals, and because of this, he knew very well how strong Shangguan Yilei was. He knew Shangguan Yilei was a formidable opponent, and none of them were able to defeat each other. That's why he didn't believe that Jiang Chen who was only a Divine Core warrior could kill Shangguan Yilei.

"It's true, Jiang Chen..."

The warrior didn't dare hide anything. He immediately told the group about what happened in the sky garden, leaving no details about how all four from the Shangguan Clan were killed behind.

"Good, good, Jiang Chen, it looks like we're going to have a fierce fight in this Island of Ice!"

Shangguan Yilong's eyes were burning with fury, "That dog and those two bastards, I swear, I will tear them into a million pieces!"

"Shangguan Yilong, that Jiang Chen has the ability to kill Shangguan Yilei. Although you're stronger than Shangguan Yilei, I don't think you're a match for Jiang Chen."

Ling Du said.

"Hmph! That Jiang Chen was using herbs to forcefully strengthen his cultivation, he doesn't have a solid foundation, so I can easily kill him!"

Shangguan Yilong coldly harrumphed.

“Save your breaths, let’s move now and chase after them. That guy is in front of us, and if he finds something good along his way and his cultivation improves yet again, we might not even be able to kill him even if we work together.”

A vicious light could be seen in Ling Du’s eyes.

“The warriors from the Martial Palace are coming soon. With the connection between us and the Martial Palace, I’m sure they will be on our side. We’re going to kill this Jiang Chen no matter what!”

Shangguan Yilong said.

“Of course, I am a disciple of the Martial Palace.”

Ling Du added. When he mentioned he was a disciple of the Martial Palace, he couldn’t help but show a prideful expression on his face. Indeed, being able to cultivate in the Martial Palace was something glorious, it was perfectly normal for him to feel proud about it.

“Let’s go, we must kill Jiang Chen and his friends!”

Shangguan Yilong gnashed his teeth in anger. The group flew past the sky garden and ventured further.

Jiang Chen and his group had crossed the white fog area, and what stood in front of them now was two gates.

Both gates had appeared out of nowhere, and they both stood right in front of Jiang Chen, wide open. Two different auras could be sensed from these gates.

There were two characters floating above the gates. One was a golden colored【生 - Life】, and the other was a blood colored【死 - Death】.

“Gates of Life and Death... does this mean one leads to life, while the other leads to death?”

Han Yan threw his glance at both gates. He could clearly feel the Gate of Life brimmed with vibrant energy, giving him a refreshing sensation.

But when he carefully looked at the Gate of Death, an eerie feeling filled his heart. He could even see some spirits of death lingering around behind the gate. It was frightening.

“Damn it, another selection!”

“Do we even need to think about it? The obvious choice is the Gate of Life! The Gate of Death is really terrifying, I can sense a strong aura of death coming from it, even from this far! If we take that gate, we will definitely die in vain!”

“Not necessarily. This Island of Ice is a weird place; the Gate of Life doesn’t mean life, and the Gate of Death doesn’t mean certain death.”

# Chapter 324 – Endless Glacier

---

More and more people started arriving. The gates of life and death caused everyone to furrow their brows. Everyone could clearly see behind what laid behind the Gate of Life, it was full of vitality. Green hills and clear waters were everywhere, and bright light shone in all directions. The atmosphere seemed peaceful and calm.

As for the Gate of Death, dead spirits and ghosts wandered about. The eerie aura leaking out from the Gate of Death was enough to frighten everyone. Just looking at it made most feel as if they were having a nightmare.

In order to proceed further, they had to pass through either the Gate of Life or the Gate of Death, it resembled the nine paths before this.

The nine paths had stopped all warriors under 30, who would this Gate of Life or Death stop? Or, were there any dangers behind each gate? No one knew.

“The atmosphere behind the Gate of Death is austere and eerie, it’s really frightening. In such a situation, the Gate of Life is the obvious choice. My guess is, there will be some surprise treasures behind the Gate of Life. As for the Gate of Death, it will definitely lead us to an extremely dangerous situation. I’ll choose the Gate of Life!”

Some warrior said. After that, he started sprinting towards the

Gate of Life. He passed through the gate in the blink of an eye, and disappeared from everyone's eyes.

“I choose the Gate of Life as well. The Gate of Death looks incredibly terrifying, I can even feel my soul trembling when looking at it. If I pass through that gate, those dead spirits will most likely tear me apart.”

“Precisely, it must be the Gate of Life! With such a vibrant energy, I'm sure there are some treasures lying around.”

Many peoples started walking toward the Gate of Life.

“I'm sure it isn't as simply as what we see. Sometime, life means death and death means life. It's just a difference in thought, perhaps the more dangerous path is the Gate of Life. I'll choose the Gate of Death.”

A daring man passed through the Gate of Death, and he too disappeared from the eyes of everyone present after passing through the gate. Looking at it from the outside, the eerie atmosphere was extremely power, and dead spirits were still lingering around. The man, however, was nowhere to be seen.

Many people had already made their choice. Most of them picked the Gate of Life, and only a handful of daring warriors passed through the Gate of Death.

“Little Chen, which gate are we choosing?”



Han Yan looked at Jiang Chen.

“These gates aren’t as simple as they look. Honestly, this Island of Ice is a training ground for warriors of the younger generation. Therefore, both gates are sure to have a certain degree of risk and opportunity. A Buddhist once said, ‘place someone on a field of death and he will fight for his life; to experience a true transformation, one mustn’t be afraid of the slightest thing; he has to experience life and death.’ If my guess is correct, this is the true meaning behind the gates of life and death. Therefore, I think we should choose the Gate of Death.

Jiang Chen said.

“Precisely! If a warrior has no fear of death, there is nothing else he would have to fear in this world; this is a profound mentality. I agree with what Little Chen said; place someone on a field of death and he will fight for his life, this is the true meaning of the gates. Furthermore, I don’t think the Gate of Death will lead us to death, and I don’t think the Gate of Life will lead us to a good life.”

Nangong Wentian nodded his head. He sincerely agreed with Jiang Chen’s opinion.

“Let’s choose the Gate of Death then.”

Big Yellow said, tail wagging. He was someone who feared absolutely nothing, so he was not scared of the Gate of Death.

Right before the group were about to step into the Gate of Death, Jiang Chen threw his glance next to the Gate of Death. To his surprise, he found that another illusionary gate had suddenly appeared. The gate hovered in the air, and was barely visible. Above it was a huge illusionary character, 【虚 - Void】.

“Gate of Void, there is another gate here.”

Jiang Chen said in a surprised tone.

“Another gate?”

Nangong Wentian and Han Yan looked in the direction Jiang Chen was looking, but, they saw nothing. Not even a strand of hair could be seen, let alone another gate. Big Yellow too couldn't find anything; it was just an empty space. There were only two gates in front of them, not three.

“Little Chen, is something wrong with your eyes? Where is the third gate?”

Han Yan said in a sarcastic manner.

“You guys can't see it?”

Jiang Chen stared blankly at the, he was seriously shocked. He could clearly see the Gate of Void in front of him, but Han Yan and

Nangong Wentian couldn't see it. Even Big Yellow couldn't see it, why was that?

“Little Chen, did you really see another gate?”

Nangong Wentian was surprised.

Jiang Chen nodded his head in a serious manner.

“Why can only you see it, but not us?”

Big Yellow was puzzled as well.

Buzz...

When Jiang Chen looked at the Gate of Void, he could clearly hear a buzzing sound coming from it. An ice-cold aura was being emitted from beyond this gate, which caused him to tremble. But at the same time, Jiang Chen sensed the ice-cold aura calling for him.

“I've sensed this calling even before I came to this Island of Ice... what exactly is calling for me?”

Jiang Chen was really surprised. He made up his mind, he wanted to enter this Gate of Void. He was the only person who could see this gate, that's why he had to enter it and find out exactly what had been calling for him all this time

Nangong Wentian, Big Yellow, and Han Yan were still trying hard to find the gate. But, none of them could find anything. In the end, they concluded that if Jiang Chen was the only person who could see this gate, then it must be because there was a problem with his eyes.

But all of them knew Jiang Chen had an eagle sharp eyesight, therefore, there really was a gate of void here, and Jiang Chen was the only person who could see it.

“Little Chen, don’t tell me you’re going to enter the Gate of Void?”

Han Yan asked.

“Precisely what I’m going to do.”

Jiang Chen replied with a nod.

“I’m sure there are extreme dangers behind this weird gate. None of us can see this gate, so we can’t follow you. If you really decide to pass through this gate, you need to be extra careful.”

Nangong Wentian patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder.

“I can handle it. Let’s split up here, you guys take the Gate of Death. We’ll regroup once we reach the inner area of the Island of

Ice.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen immediately stepped into the Gate of Void and disappeared.

“Huh? Why did Jiang Chen disappear? Is there another gate? No, I can’t see anything.”

“That’s weird. Guys, let’s go check it out!”

Many people found the disappearance of Jiang Chen strange. Someone walked up and tried to examine the area, but they too found nothing, and was force to give up in the end.

The trio exchanged a glance, then they passed through the Gate of Death and disappeared.

Not long after Jiang Chen and his group passed through the gates, the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect arrived, all of them furious.

“Where is Jiang Chen?!”

Shangguan Yilong shouted out right after he arrived.

“He has passed through the gate.”

Someone answered him.

Shangguan Yilong and Ling Du spent some time examining both gates. Even with their powerful minds, they were stunned by what they saw, and couldn't make up their minds.

“Which gate did Jiang Chen enter?”

Ling Du asked.

“Jiang Chen didn't pick either of those gates, he disappeared next to the Gate of Death, really weird!”

Someone pointed next to the Gate of Death, where Jiang Chen had disappeared.

What?

Ling Du furrowed his brows. He and Shangguan Yilong both walked next to the Gate of Death and carefully examined it. They even used their Yuan energy to examine. Of course, they found nothing.

“You dare fool me?!”

Ling Du's expression became cold, and he threw a sharp glance at the man who talked just now.

The man trembled, and he quickly explained, “No, I wouldn’t dare! Many people saw it, Jiang Chen really disappeared from there in a weird manner! But, that big yellow dog and the others passed through the Gate of Death!”

Shangguan Yilong and Ling Dong exchanged glances, then they turned to the Gate of Death at the same time. For the first time, these two rivals agreed on something.

They believed what the man had told them, mainly because no one dared lie to them. For unknown reasons, Jiang Chen had disappeared, so they couldn’t pursue him for now. However, his friends had entered the Gate of Death.

“Shangguan Yilong, do you have the guts to enter this Gate of Death?”

Ling Du said in an indifferent tone.

“Why not? This Gate of Death doesn’t seem as simply as its appearance. Even if we enter the Gate of Life, our safety won’t be guaranteed. Perhaps the danger in the Gate of Life is even greater than the dangers in the Gate of Death?”

After saying that, Shangguan Yilong turned to the group behind him and said, “You guys can enter the Gate of Life, I’ll enter the Gate of Death and kill that trio!”

“Brother Yilong, we’ll follow you into the Gate of Death! We

want to witness you slaughter those three bastards!”

A disciple from the Shangguan Clan said in a vicious tone.

“If that’s the case, I’ll enter the Gate of Death together with all of you. Junior disciple Xu, bring our men and enter the Gate of Life, you might find a good opportunity in there.”

Ling Du told Xu Shuang. None of them were idiots, all of them could clearly feel that the Gate of Death wasn’t as simple as it looked. Of course, they might encounter great dangers beyond this gate, but at the same time, equal opportunity awaited them as well. In order to kill Han Yan and other two, Ling Du decided to enter the gate together with the Shangguan Clan, while he let Xu Shuang bring the others into the Gate of Life.

“Alright. Senior disciple Ling, you better be careful when traveling along with those from the Shangguan Clan.”

Xu Shuang warned. He was always on alert when Shangguan Yilong was nearby.

“Oh right, you better be careful! Ling Du, I think it would be better if you chose the Gate of Life! If not, after I kill those three bastards, I might just kill you.”

Shangguan Yilong replied with a hideous grin.

“Just you?”



Ling Du replied in a cold tone. While waving the folding fan in his hand, he became the first one to pass through the Gate of Death and disappear from the eyes of everyone present. All the disciples of the Myriad Sword Sect were using longswords, but this Ling Du was using a folding fan as his weapon. Of course, this didn't mean he didn't have a longsword... at least, no one had even seen his sword.

More and more people came from the sky garden, picked a gate, and disappeared.

.....

Gate of Void!

After Jiang Chen passed through the void, he was presented with a world of ice and snow. The world stretched far into the distance, and no end could be seen. The world was one large, white glacier. The atmosphere was filled with freezing cold air. It was so cold that it could even cause a man's soul to freeze. No ordinary Early Divine Core warriors would be able to withstand the cold for a long period of time, and if any Heavenly Core warriors were here, he would freeze to death within an hour.

Although the cold air here was deadly, but Jiang Chen wasn't bothered by it at all. By cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, he was given strong qi and blood. That, together with the True Dragon Flames, no cold air could do him any harm. Just his body alone was able to withstand the freezing temperature.

# Chapter 325 – Ice Demon

---

Jiang Chen was floating in the middle of the sky, gazing at the white world of glaciers. At the moment, he had no idea which direction he should go.

“This place looks like an isolated dimension. It also seems like someone designed these glaciers, they are so amazingly crafted! I just came through the Gate of Void, I wonder what kinds of dangers I am going to face.”

Jiang Chen threw his glance over at the glaciers stretching out endlessly in front of him. He couldn't help but comment with mixed feelings. The scene in front of him was magnificent, it was a breathtaking world of glaciers.

“If Little Yu is able to come here, her cultivation will definitely improve significantly. Here Nine Yin Meridians were simply created for this place.”

Jiang Chen thought of Yan Chenyu. After his trip to the Island of Ice, he would return and save Yan Chenyu with the Nine Solar Holy Water. But, at that point of time, the Island of Ice would have disappeared, and Yan Chenyu would not be able to come here to cultivate.

“I have no idea where to go now. Let's try find out where that calling comes from.”

Jiang Chen unleashed his soul energy and spread it out. He

focused hard and examined every inch of this place. He dared not run around with no idea of what he was doing. He came to this land because of the calling, and right now, he needed to find out where that calling came from.

Not long after that, Jiang Chen suddenly opened his eyes. He took a step forward and began flying toward the inner parts of this glacier world.

Boom!

Suddenly, a glacier in front of him exploded, producing a loud noise. A huge monster jumped out from where the glacier was, blocking Jiang Chen's path.

Jiang Chen's body trembled for a moment. He threw his glance at the monster in front of him, and he furrowed his brows as he looked at it.

The monster had a milky white body, and it was completely made from hard ice. Its 3 meter tall body was constantly emitting freezing white fog. The monster had a pair of arms and legs, and on its back there was a long big tail. The tail was made entirely of solid ice as well.

The monster's body was incredibly majestic, but what surprised Jiang Chen was that this monster had no facial features. When it turned its face toward Jiang Chen, a shiver ran down his spine. Its featureless face had a pair of eyes which stared at him viciously like a deadly poisonous snake. It was a very eerie feeling.

“Ice Demon.”

Jiang Chen was shocked by this monster. Even with his vast experience, he had never seen any monster like this. But, since its body was made entirely from solid ice, Jiang Chen just called it Ice Demon.

Roar!

The Ice Demon had no mouth, but a deep roar sounded out from it. The roar was capable of causing anyone's ears to feel pain. Hearing this nasty roar, Jiang Chen couldn't help but feel somewhat frustrated.

Roar!

The Ice Demon let out another loud roar. After that, it leapt at Jiang Chen and attacked.

“Hmph! You're just an Ice Demon equal to those Mid Divine Core warriors, and you still want to hurt me? You're simply courting death.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he instantly countered with a powerful punch. The tremendous force carried with this punch was more than enough to shatter the peak of a huge mountain. When it hit the Ice Demon, a loud cracking sound was heard. Following that, the 3 meter tall body was shattered into an icy dust

in an instant.

But, something weird happened! In the blink of an eye, the Ice Demon who was just killed by Jiang Chen once again dashed toward Jiang Chen from another direction, continuing its attack.

“What?”

Jiang Chen cried out. The Ice Demon was instantly revived after being killed! Jiang Chen was familiar with this kind of situation, but he was still shocked by it. After all, it was rare to find a creature who had this ability underneath the Heavens. The Nine Life Crystal Beast he encountered in Inferno Hell was one, and now, he had encountered another monster with the same ability!

“Fine, let me see how many lives you have!”

Jiang Chen strengthened his energy, instantly killing the Ice Demon with yet another punch. He assumed this Ice Demon had the same ability as the Nine Life Crystal Beast, they were given a few lives when they were born into the world. As long as he killed it a certain amount of times, they would be completely dead.

But this time, Jiang Chen was wrong! Within just one minute, Jiang Chen had killed this Ice Demon more than 15 times, but the Ice Demon was still able to instantly revive, brimming with energy just like before.

“Damn it! Don’t tell me this Ice Demon has 100 lives?!”

Jiang Chen felt really gloomy. Although his strength was incredibly formidable, he was still entangled in the fight with this Ice Demon!

After killing the Ice Demon another couple of times, Jiang Chen immediately felt the difference.

“No, this Ice Demon is different from the Nine Life Crystal Beast. The Heavens wouldn’t allow a creature that can defy the will of the Heavens to exist. If it really had so many lives, the Heavens would have already sent down its punishment. Let me find out what exactly makes it so difficult to kill.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He unleashed the Great Soul Derivation skill completely and spread his soul energy out and had it penetrate into all space. Soon, when the Ice Demon appeared again, Jiang Chen once again killed it with a powerful punch.

With help from the Great Soul Derivation skill, nothing could hide from Jiang Chen’s senses. Finally, Jiang Chen discovered the secret behind why this Ice Demon could constantly revive. Underneath the amazing senses of his soul energy, Jiang Chen discovered that a fist size ice cube jumped out from the Ice Demon’s body whenever it was killed, and it seemed like this fist sized ice cube could hide itself. There was no way he could find it without the help of the Great Soul Derivation skill.

“Haha, now I know, this Ice Demon has a Demon Soul! Furthermore, its Demon Soul is able to hide itself, and with the

help of the environment here, it's able to revive infinitely!"

Jiang Chen laughed heartily. He finally understood the exact reason behind the endless revival of the Ice Demon. He had no idea how this Ice Demon was born, but it was given a special characteristic; it could use its Demon Soul incredibly well. Of course, the environment here was the perfect habitat for them! With its help, the Ice Demon was able to revive infinitely, and that was what Jiang Chen had been facing before.

"With the incredible senses the Great Soul Derivation skill gives me, nothing can hide from me! Come over here!"

Jiang Chen stretched his arm forward and grabbed the Demon Soul. While in his palm, Jiang Chen could clearly feel it violently struggling and trying to run away.

"True Dragon Flames!"

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then his True Dragon Flames penetrated into the Demon Soul, instantly destroying the mind of the Ice Demon. After losing its mind, the Demon Soul immediately became quiet.

Jiang Chen examined the Demon Soul in his hand, and he couldn't help but feel amazed. "This world is full of amazing things. This Demon Soul is freezing cold, ordinary people wouldn't be able to use it at all, but if it was obtained by those warriors with cold physiques, or those who cultivate cold attribute skills, it would be a magnificent item! I need to store this and give it to

Little Yu.”

While laughing, Jiang Chen stored the Demon Soul into his storage ring. He knew how tremendous Yan Chenyu’s potential was, the true mightiness of her Nine Yin Meridians had yet to awaken. In fact, for Yan Chenyu, her current injury was an opportunity for her to be reborn. When she wakes up from her come, she will experience an overwhelming transformation, and after that, she will become another abnormal monster.

Roar... Roar...

As if having sensed the death of their comrade, terrifying roars started sounding out from the glaciers up front. Before Jiang Chen could take a short break, he immediately saw numerous white figures viciously dashing towards him.

“Damn it, so many Ice Demons!”

Jiang Chen had a strong desire to curse at someone. There were hundreds of Ice Demons in front of him, and each of them had huge majestic bodies. Some were 3 meters tall, some were 6 meters tall, and some were even 9 meters tall.

Obviously, the bigger an Ice Demon was, the stronger it was. Jiang Chen had no doubts about that.

These Ice Demons had no eyes, but were able to discover Jiang Chen. In an instant, they surrounded Jiang Chen.



Seeing this, Jiang Chen's gloomy expression turned into an excited one. If it was someone else who came here, these Ice Demons who could revive infinitely would be a deadly threat, but for Jiang Chen, they were all treasures waiting to be harvested.

The Demon Souls of these Ice Demons contained the purest cold attribute, it was a really valuable treasure. Not only could Yan Chenyu put them to good use, there are many people who would rush to buy it if Jiang Chen sold them.

“All these Ice Demons are at the Divine Core realm, but their bodies are really strong. Alright, I can use them to train my punch!”

Jiang Chen suddenly shouted, then he struck before any of the Ice Demons could respond. In an instant, he destroyed the Ice Demon who stood closest to him with a punch. With the powerful senses given to him by the Great Soul Derivation skill, its Demon Soul was unable to hide, and was grabbed by Jiang Chen. He unleashed the True Dragon Flames and eliminated the mind hidden within the Demon Soul.

All the Ice Demons were momentarily stunned upon seeing this happen. They knew very well what they were capable of, that's why they never expected to a human killing one of their kind in an instant. In their minds, this was something unbelievable.

Roar!

However, this didn't stop the Ice Demons from launching their attacks, it just made them become even more ferocious. Each of them furiously growled as they charged at Jiang Chen.

Luckily, it was Jiang Chen who stood in the middle of the pack of Ice Demons. If it was any other warrior, just the nasty roars alone would be enough to seriously distract their minds, and they might just lose the ability to fight.

“You're all here to give me treasures!”

In an incredibly domineering manner, Jiang Chen unceasingly bombarded the Ice Demons with his fists so quickly that they looked like phantom fists.

Bang, bang, bang...!

Jiang Chen was incredibly fast, and no matter how strong these Ice Demons were, none of them could withstand a single punch from him. With his current strength, Jiang Chen was able to kill a Combat Soul genius like Shangguan Yilei, let alone these Divine Core Ice Demons.

If anyone was here and witnessed this scene, that person would definitely be shocked to the absolute limit. Why? It was because Jiang Chen wasn't using his Yuan energy at all, he was purely using his body's strength. How fast was he currently? He was so fast that he could kill these Ice Demons faster than a sudden lightning strike, and he didn't let a single Demon Soul escape!

Such incredible reflexes and speed, how many people were even close to his level?

This was raw slaughter! With Jiang Chen's invincible fists and pure body strength, the number of Ice Demons were quickly being reduced. Even those Late Divine Core Ice Demons had no chance to revive, all of their Demon Soul were captured by Jiang Chen, and their minds were eliminated by the True Dragon Flames.

Haha...

Jiang Chen was heartily laughing as he slaughtered the Ice Demons. With each Demon Soul stored into his storage ring, his wealth increased.

# Chapter 326 – Run Like Crazy!

---

Rumble...

It was an endless stretch of glaciers. Right now, in this breathtaking world of glaciers, the rawest slaughter was playing out.

Explosive sounds repeatedly sounded out. Even though it was a battle where only pure body strength was being used, it was still a terrifying fight. Shockwaves from the battlefield spread across the area, destroying some glaciers along its way.

Jiang Chen fought mightily. He moved to the middle of the Ice Demons in a ghostly manner, as if he was dashing through a blossoming garden without getting touched by a single petal. Every time he struck, an Ice Demon would die.

Roar...

Roars repeatedly sounded out from the battlefield. The fight had lasted for more than 10 minutes now. In the beginning, there were hundreds of Ice Demons, but now, there were only about thirty of them.

Jiang Chen's harvest was quite rich, he had obtained dozens of Demon Souls right now. As for the remaining Ice Demons, they were still dashing toward Jiang Chen without any consideration for their own lives, as they were determined to rip Jiang Chen apart.

Although these Ice Demons had strong attacks, Jiang Chen knew they didn't have any intellect. Or, put it this way, these Ice Demons were just some killing machines. Their lives were dominated by this single thought; kill!

“It's better that you guys don't want to run away, I can just kill you all one by one. I won't let any of you run away from me!”

With a grin on his face, Jiang Chen continued attacking in a brutal manner. In just a few minutes, all the Ice Demons were dead; none of them had survived Jiang Chen's attack.

Roar! ...

After killing all these Ice Demons, before Jiang Chen could feel happy about it, the furious roars of Ice Demons once again sounded out from in front of him. To Jiang Chen's surprise, white figures started popping up everywhere, but this time, the number had double. What really made Jiang Chen widen his eyes was that there were three Combat Soul Ice Demons this time!

“This glacier dimension is really amazing, it can even give birth to Combat Soul creatures!”

Jiang Chen had mixed feelings about this. Although the Demon Souls of the Ice Demons was something good, he didn't want to spend too much time here. The only reason why he came here was to find out what that mysterious calling force was.

But, Jiang Chen couldn't back off right now, he needed to keep marching forward, because the mysterious calling force was right in front of him. In order to find out what it was, he needed to cross these glaciers, and to do that, he was forced to fight with these Ice Demons.

The scene in front of him made Jiang Chen recall the scene when he arrived in the Devil Cave. Those endless waves of Evil Devils were like a nightmare to him. The amount of Ice Demons here was way higher than the amount of Evil Devils in the Devil Cave.

This was because of the environment here. The Ice Demons must be born in this special environment. Right now, Jiang Chen only wished there weren't any Ice Demons too strong here.

As for the three Early Combat Soul Ice Demons in front of him, Jiang Chen didn't worry about them, He had a strong body and a rich source of qi and blood. Also, with the help of the 3,100 Dragon Marks, he was able to kill any genius similar to Shangguan Yilei. Therefore, he had no problems killing these Early Combat Soul Ice Demons in front of him.

“Come! Let me enjoy the slaughter this day!”

His energy rose, and he unleashed the Firethorn Combat Armor. With the protection of the Firethorn Combat Armor, Jiang Chen could simply ignore the attacks coming from those Divine Core Ice Demons. These Ice Demons couldn't even break his defense, and with the help of the Firethorn Combat Armor, Jiang Chen could

just kill them by slamming his own body into them. All he needed to do now was focus on killing those three Combat Soul Ice Demons.

Buzz!

Jiang Chen shook his palm and retrieved the Golden Spear. He covered it with a layer of his flame. The flame moved like a flaming dragon as it coiled itself around the spear.

Roar!

The army of Ice Demons quickly caught up to Jiang Chen. The leading Ice Demon's roar was even harsher than that of the others, causing Jiang Chen to feel very frustrated. Jiang Chen remained calm however, as his mind was so strong that few things could affect it.

Buzz...

The golden spear started producing a buzzing sound. The True Dragon Flames coiling around the spear could really hurt those Ice Demons, as ice and fire can never get together. The True Dragon Flames was the king of all beast flames, the most unique flame underneath the Heavens. On the other side, the Ice Demons were made from freezing ice, so the True Dragon Flames was naturally its enemy.

Under Jiang Chen's control, the golden spear thrust forward like

a flaming dragon, reaching the Early Combat Soul Ice Demon in the blink of an eye.

The Combat Soul Ice Demon clearly had some intellect. When it sensed the incredible heat coming from the True Dragon Flames, it staggered a little, as if it was scared of the heat.

But then, the Ice Demon roared out, and forcefully threw its fist toward the golden spear. These Ice Demons didn't have any weapons, their bodies were their weapons.

Bang!

Jiang Chen was extremely powerful, none of these Ice Demons could withstand a single hit, even without the True Dragon Flames. Right as the Ice Demon's fist collided with the golden spear, its entire arm shattered.

The golden spear moved like a vicious dragon, it didn't slow down, it just kept drilling into the Ice Demon's body, penetrating it in an instant. Jiang Chen shook the golden spear, causing the Ice Demon's body to explode, and pieces of ice to fly out in all directions.

The invisible Demon Soul was unceasingly pulsating. Without giving it any chance to revive, Jiang Chen directly grabbed it with his hand and burned its mind with the True Dragon Flames. Finally, Jiang Chen had gotten his first Combat Soul Demon Soul!



After that, with the golden spear in hand, and the protection of the Firethorn Combat Armor, he ran into the army of Ice Demons like a majestic barbaric elephant.

Bang, bang, bang...!

These Ice Demons with powerful bodies were too weak in front of Jiang Chen. Ordinary Ice Demons would die instantly just by hitting the Firethorn Combat Armor. But, the situation was extremely chaotic. Even with Jiang Chen's amazing senses, it was really difficult for him to harvest these Ice Demons' Demon Souls, so they were therefore able to instantly revive.

Of course, Jiang Chen wasn't bothered by it. In his eyes, these ordinary Ice Demons were harmless. The Firethorn Combat Armor was more than enough to kill him. His main focus was the two last Combat Soul Ice Demons.

Bang!

The golden spear was extremely sharp and powerful. Once again, it pierced through another Combat Soul Ice Demon, shattering it into pieces.

As if having sensed how terrifying the human in front of it was, the last Combat Soul Ice Demon simply turned around and fled with extremely great speed.

“Wish to run?”

Using his golden spear, Jiang Chen cleared a path in the army of Ice Demons and chased after the Combat Soul Ice Demon. The value of a Combat Soul Demon Soul was much higher than that of those ordinary Demon Souls, Jiang Chen wouldn't let it go so easily.

Two figures flickered through the glaciers. The reflection of the glaciers shone onto their bodies, causing the scene to look as if it was coming out of some fantasy.

Of course, these two figures were the fleeing Ice Demon and the pursuing Jiang Chen.

It was worth mentioning that the Ice Demons had an exclusive advantage in this glacier space. Their auras could perfectly match the aura of the space, giving a huge boost to their speed.

“Damn it, how come this Ice Demon is so fast?! I can't catch up to it even with the Nine Phantom Wolves and Dimensional Shift!”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but cursed. This was the first time he had felt defeated in terms of speed, even though it was all because of the environment.

Roar!

When the Ice Demon found out Jiang Chen wouldn't give up chasing, it started roaring towards the skies. However, its voice

was different this time. Although it was still harsh as before, it was much clearer now, and very rhythmic, as if it was sending out a message.

“Calling for your friends? It would be better if more Early Combat Soul Ice Demons came, I can just harvest more Demon Souls. As long as you don’t call for Mid Combat Soul Ice Demons, that is.”

Jiang Chen smiled, he didn’t mind at all. With his current abilities, he was able to kill any Early Combat Soul warriors. However, he was still no match for those Mid Combat Soul existences.

Bang!

Suddenly, one of the tallest glaciers in front of him exploded together with a world-shaking roar. After that, a massive body simply leapt out from the shattered glacier.

It was an incredibly powerful Ice Demon. Its body was 30 meters tall, and none of the Ice Demons Jiang Chen had previously seen could compare to it. When this Ice Demon appeared, it immediately thumped its own chest and stamped its feet. Although it had no facial features, it still furiously roared towards the skies. This harsh sound was extremely awful, and anyone who heard it would feel their heads going numb.

Extremely cold air was being emitted from the Ice Demon’s body, and the light reflected from the glaciers shone onto its body. If

there was any sunlight here, the light reflected from its body would be incomparably dazzling.

“Fuck!!!”

Jiang Chen immediately cursed upon seeing this Ice Demon. Without daring to hesitate, he immediately turned around and ran. But, since there was a large army of Ice Demons chasing behind him, Jiang Chen was forced to simply pick another direction and run like crazy.

Because, the Ice Demon who emerged just now was considered the king of all Ice Demons here, and it wasn't an Early Combat Soul demon, or even a Mid Combat Soul one; it was a Late Combat Soul Ice Demon!

Initially, Jiang Chen thought he would at most have to fight an Early Combat Soul Ice Demon, but to his surprise, there was a really big, powerful demon here. There was no way he could possibly fight this monster! With Jiang Chen's current cultivating, fighting any Late Combat Soul existences was no different than committing suicide!

Jiang Chen had a clear understanding of his own strength and abilities. No matter how hard he fought, there was no way he could be a match for a Late Combat Soul opponent. The Great Illusion Realm was useless here. If he used it on someone with a greater cultivation than himself, the result would be reversed.

Besides, the Great Illusion Realm could only affect those with

dreams or powerful desires. This Ice Demon King was a creature with little intellect, it didn't even desire to leave this glacier space. Therefore, what desire or dream could it possibly have?

Roar!

When the Ice Demon King sensed Jiang Chen's position, it immediately roared out in anger and chased after him. With a sway of its majestic body, the Ice Demon King chased after Jiang Chen like an arrow leaving its string. It was catching up to Jiang Chen with incredible speed.

"These Ice Demons don't possess incredible speed by themselves, it's all because of the environment here that they can have such terrifying speed. With my speed, I just can't escape from this Late Combat Soul Ice Demon. Damn it! This is going to be bad!"

Jiang Chen's expression was gloomy. However, he wasn't someone who would give up so easily. The True Dragon Flames transformed into a flaming dragon and swirled around his body. Because of the restriction between the opposite elements, the True Dragon Flames could pose a huge threat to the Ice Demons. With this, he could at least somewhat reduce the gap between their strength.

Of course, just the True Dragon Flames alone was far from enough.

# Chapter 327 – Deep Pond

---

Colorful lights twinkled everywhere within this world of glaciers. The Ice Demon King was incredibly fast, in just three minutes it had caught up to Jiang Chen who was running like crazy.

The Ice Demon King's intellect was much higher than that of the other Ice Demons. It forcefully stretched out one of its gigantic palms, grabbing toward Jiang Chen like a gigantic curtain that covered the entire sky above Jiang Chen.

“True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen wouldn't just sit back and wait to be killed when facing such a powerful attack. He shouted out loudly and countered with the True Dragon Palm. The gigantic blood-red dragon claw was fully covered in True Dragon Flames as it threw itself at the Ice Demon King's gigantic palm.

The True Dragon Flame was of the purest Yang energy, and was indeed the nemesis of all cold existences. The Ice Demon King was naturally suppressed by it, slightly. Because of that, it simply couldn't unleash its full power.

However, the gap between both sides was too huge. It was so huge that nothing could really shorten it. Even with the help of the True Dragon Flames, the True Dragon Palm was still destroyed in an instant.

Slap!

Right after the True Dragon Palm was destroyed, a tremendous force hit Jiang Chen's body, knocking him 500 meters away from where he stood like a shooting star.

Puh!

Under such a brutal impact, even with Jiang Chen's powerful body, he was still immediately injured. A mouthful of blood was forced out from his mouth, and he could feel his qi and blood violently trembling, causing him to feel pain difficult to bear.

Luckily, it was Jiang Chen who had to face this. If it was someone else, that person would definitely have exploded into a bloody mist on the spot. Ever since Jiang Chen started cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, his body had become stronger and stronger, and this was the main reason why he could withstand the Ice Demon King's powerful blow.

Jiang Chen's expression was a sore sight. He now knew how terrifying the Ice Demon King's attack was. He that although he could withstand this strike, he might not be able to withstand the second attack.

“Demon Taming Lock!”

An idea suddenly emerged into Jiang Chen's mind. He immediately retrieved the Demon Taming Lock from his storage

ring. He had obtained this item back in Inferno Hell from Yang Shuo. He could still remember what Big Yellow had told him, the aura of this Demon Taming Lock made Big Yellow feel really bad. Even the descendant of the Dragon Horse, a true Divine Beast was affected by it.

Although the Ice Demon in front of him was an unusual creature, as long as it had a Demon Soul in its body, it was still considered a demon. This Demon Taming Lock could even affect Big Yellow, let alone this Ice Demon.

The True Dragon Flames and Demon Taming Lock were all the weapons Jiang Chen could use against this Ice Demon King. Only by suppressing the Ice Demon King's strength would he be able to run away from it.

Ding, ding!

When the Demon Taming Lock appeared, it instantly produced a crystal clear ringing sound. The sound turned into waves which then rolled toward the Ice Demon King.

Roar!

Hearing the sound of the Demon Taming Lock, the Ice Demon King immediately became cranky and lost its previous tranquility. It hated the Demon Taming Lock! On the other side, Jiang Chen could clearly feel the Ice Demon King's fear.



“Haha, looks like this Demon Taming Lock does have some effect!”

Jiang Chen laughed. While controlling the Demon Taming Lock, he covered his body with True Dragon Flames and continued running like crazy. Of course, Jiang Chen didn't try controlling the Ice Demon King with the Demon Taming Lock, because he knew this wasn't possible at all. The Demon Taming Lock wasn't an advanced item, so it was very difficult to control a Late Combat Soul Demon unless Jiang Chen had a stronger cultivation than the demon.

Although the Demon Taming Lock couldn't help Jiang Chen control the Ice Demon King, it could still help him restrain its strength so that it couldn't fight and chase with all its strength.

Roar!

The Ice Demon King was furious, and it unceasingly bombarded Jiang Chen with attacks. As for Jiang Chen, he was running for his life while unleashing all kinds of powerful counter-attacks. The Firethorn Combat Armor was fully protecting his body, and the golden spear was countering the Ice Demon King's attack.

Puh!

Jiang Chen didn't stop running for his life. Each of the Ice Demon King's attacks would make him throw up a mouthful of blood. If not for the True Dragon Flames and the Demon Taming Lock, Jiang Chen would have been killed long ago.

“Fuck, I can’t keep going on like this! My wounds are getting more and more severe, and although the Dragon Transformation skill is healing me, the regeneration just can’t keep up with the Ice Demon King’s attacks.”

Jiang Chen kept cursing inwardly. The Ice Demon King had yet to show any signs of giving up; it was completely determined to kill Jiang Chen. The worst thing about this was that this was an isolated world of endless glaciers, and there didn’t seem to be any way out either. Jiang Chen was completely trapped!

Suddenly, Jiang Chen saw a bright reflection not far in front of him. Jiang Chen was very familiar with that kind of reflection, it wasn’t the reflection of glaciers; it was reflection of water!

“A pond? How can that be possible? The temperature here is incredibly low, and there are glaciers everywhere, how could a river possibly be here?”

Jiang Chen was surprised, but he had no doubts about his own judgment. Without hesitating, he immediately started flying toward the pond.

After flying another 5 kilometers, Jiang Chen could really see a deep pond underneath him. The water was flowing freely, and wasn’t frozen. The reflections he saw really came from here.

“There are no flames without smoke, how can there be water in this world of glaciers? This is amazing, it looks this is an unusual

pond.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

Jiang Chen turned around and looked at the Ice Demon King. To his surprise, he saw it standing a bit more than 30 meters away from him the pond, and it was pounding its own chest and stamping its own feet while continuously roaring out. It didn't dare get closer to the pond!

“Even the Ice Demon King doesn't dare get closer? Perhaps there's something in this deep pond that it fears?”

Even Jiang Chen was shocked by this. But finally, he could let out a sigh of relief. Regardless, with the help of this pond, he could finally escape from the Ice Demon King's pursuit.

“Looks like I'll need to dive into this pond and see what's hidden underneath, something that even the Ice Demon King fears.”

After speaking those words, Jiang Chen descended toward the pond. One would usually be brave if he had incredible skills, and Jiang Chen had pretty much experienced everything in his lives. Therefore, he wouldn't be stopped by a deep pond.

Splash!

Jiang Chen jumped straight into the deep pond, causing the water to splash. When the Ice Demon King saw Jiang Chen really

jump into the pond, it immediately became crankier. It started roaring, then it took a few steps forward, but instantly stopped going further.

The Ice Demon King was irritated. It walked back and forth, but it didn't dare take another step closer to the pond.

After diving into the pond, with his speed, he instantly descended 30 meters into the pond. However, he still couldn't see the bottom of the pond.

“This pond is really deep!”

Jiang Chen circulated the Great Soul Derivation skill and spread his soul energy around, carefully examining every single part of this water pond.

Soon after, Jiang Chen descended another 15-18 meters, then the water flow immediately became violent. There were also some bright lights blinking in front of him, filling him with astonishment. Without hesitating, Jiang Chen started moving towards those bright lights.

## Chapter 328 – Black Ice Talisman

---

The current in the deep pond was really strong. Jiang Chen was swimming towards the bright light, and the current became stronger the closer he got to the bright light. Jiang Chen guessed that the reason why this pond wasn't frozen was related this bright light.

“Let's see what exactly this item is. Even the Ice Demon King dares not get close to it.”

Jiang Chen swam like a dragon. After just a few twists, he reached the center of the strong current. Shockingly, what he found was a palm-sized talisman. The talisman looked like a crystal, and it was freezing cold. The bright lights Jiang Chen saw all came from this talisman.

The talisman looked like a very cold ice cube, and its appearance was very transparent and crystal like. This talisman was much, much colder than the glaciers outside. However, the water in the pond hadn't been frozen by this extreme cold. Even with Jiang Chen's vast experience, he could come up with no explanation for such an unusual phenomenon.

“I think the Ice Demon King was scared by this talisman. Let's find out what's so special about this talisman.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen stretched his arm out and grabbed the talisman.

Ssss...

Right as Jiang Chen's palm touched the talisman, a sound was immediately heard from it, and a shiver ran down Jiang Chen's spine. Without hesitating, Jiang Chen immediately let go of the talisman. His arm was covered with ice, it was completely frozen!

"It's so cold! Much colder than Little Yu's Nine Yin Meridians!"

Jiang Chen couldn't help but exclaim. He immediately circulated the True Dragon Flames onto his arm and got rid of the frost. Luckily, it was Jiang Chen who encountered this. If it was any other ordinary warrior, he would have become an ice cube by now.

The True Dragon Flame was a Divine Flame underneath the Heavens, it had the purest Yang energy and the mightiest force. Since Jiang Chen was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, his body was becoming stronger with every passing day, and his Qi and Blood was extremely rich as well. Therefore, he was able to withstand the talisman's extreme cold.

The talisman was really cold, but Jiang Chen wouldn't just let it slip out of his hand, because he knew that this talisman was the only weapon he could use to defeat the Ice Demon King, or at least escape from him. Jiang Chen didn't want to be trapped in this world of glaciers.

Jiang Chen could only grab this talisman with the help of the True Dragon Flames. Only with an extremely high temperature would Jiang Chen be able to withstand the talisman's extremely

low temperature.

Jiang Chen once again stretched his palm forwards, only this time he covered it with the True Dragon Flame. The scorching flame was dancing around his palm like snakes.

Without hesitating, with incredible speed, Jiang Chen grabbed the talisman once again.

Ssss...

The talisman was pulsating even more violently now that before. Even with the True Dragon Flame, Jiang Chen could still feel the shivering cold coming from the talisman. But, he could now at least hold onto the talisman. Although it was still pulsating, attempting to escape from Jiang Chen's palm, it couldn't escape from his grip.

Jiang Chen pilled the talisman close to his face and looked at it in an examining manner. Countless runes were engraved onto the talisman on of the sides. The runes were incredibly mystical, and even Jiang Chen couldn't recognize any of them.

“This talisman should be from the ancient era. The runes are so complicated, and I've never seen any of them before.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. This Island of Ice only appeared after he sliced the Heavens with his sword. Therefore, there would inevitably some mysterious objects here, objects that people in the

Saint Origin realm had never seen before.

Jiang Chen flipped the talisman over and looked at its back. On top there were three twisted characters, 【玄冰符 – Black Ice Talisman】.

“So it’s called the Black Ice Talisman. I wonder if it can be used to deal with the Ice Demon King outside... I’ll give it a try.”

Right as Jiang Chen was about to swim upward, his soul energy suddenly found something at the bottom of the pond. With his soul energy, he could clearly see the appearance of the object, causing his expression to instantly change.

With that, Jiang Chen immediately started swimming toward the bottom of the pond. In the blink of an eye, he reached the bottom and saw a palm-sized copper plate.

Jiang Chen stretched out his arm and grabbed the copper plate. Feeling its nearly 1000 Jin weight and being able to see it clearly, it was pretty much exactly like the previous two copper plates Jiang Chen had found before this.

“Another copper plate? I have found two of them on this Island of Ice, what exactly are they used for?”

Jiang Chen had mixed feeling regarding the copper plates. When he was at the Blissful Island, the reason why he bought the first copper plate from that old man was because he felt it was quite



heavy. But, since he had obtained another two of them on the Island of Ice, Jiang Chen felt there must be a secret hidden within these plates, and it was certainly a big secret.

“Looks like I need to keep these copper plates safe, I might be able to get something good out from them later on.”

Jiang Chen carefully stored the copper plate into his storage ring. After that, he brought the Black Ice Talisman and rushed out from the deep pond.

Bang!

Jiang Chen rushed out from deep pond in an extremely formidable and imposing manner like a ferocious Flood Dragon, causing gigantic waves to surface from the deep pond. Jiang Chen stood in the skies above the water pond. When he looked down at the water pond, he was surprised to find out that the water pond had completely frozen.

“It really had something to do with this Black Ice Talisman.”

When Jiang Chen raised his head, he turned to the Ice Demon King. He saw the faceless Ice Demon King ‘staring’ at the Black Ice Talisman in his hand. If this Ice Demon King had eyes, Jiang Chen would be able to see a terrified look in them. Looking at the Ice Demon King’s trembling body, Jiang Chen could understand how the Ice Demon King was feeling right now.

Jiang Chen could feel the Ice Demon King's fear toward the Black Ice Talisman. At the same time, he could else feel that this Ice Demon King relied on this talisman as well.

Roar!

The Ice Demon King harshly roared out once again, but this time, its voice was much softer than before. Furthermore, its fury and irritation could no longer be sensed. It stood at the same spot as before, and it dared not take a step forward. The killing intent it was previously unleashing at Jiang Chen was gone as well.

“Haha, looks like you're really scared of this item... Goodbye!”

Jiang Chen laughed heartily. With the Black Ice Talisman in hand, he simply turned around and started flying in another direction.

Seeing this, the Ice Demon King became greatly frightened. Without hesitating, it immediately followed after Jiang Chen with incredible speed.

“嗯？你还敢追来？”

“What? You still have the courage to chase after me?”

Jiang Chen stopped and threw an angry glare at the Ice Demon King. At the same time, the Ice Demon King had stopped as well. It kept making noises and waving its hands, as if it was trying to tell Jiang Chen something.

“What are you trying to tell me?”

Jiang Chen asked with a frown on his face. He couldn't understand the Ice Demons' language. But, the Ice Demon King could understand what Jiang Chen was saying.

The Ice Demon continued waving its hands and making noises. After a few minutes of doing so, it finally realized that there was no way it could communicate with this human.

Soon after, as if having remembered something, it started sending out some sort of waves from its body. It was a kind of communication wave, similar to humans' divine sense. It could be used to communicate with a human's divine sense.

“I beg you, leaving behind that Black Ice Talisman, I'll let you go if you do so.”

Finally, the Ice Demon King could perfectly express what it wanted to tell Jiang Chen. Most importantly, Jiang Chen could completely understand what it wanted to tell him with this method of communication.

“Impossible! If I throw this Black Ice Talisman away, you're still going to kill me. Do you think I'm a three year old kid?”

Jiang Chen immediately rejected. What a joke, this Ice Demon King was a Late Combat Soul demon, if Jiang Chen really threw

away the Black Ice Talisman in this environment, it would be no different from putting his own life in the hands of this Ice Demon King. Jiang Chen had not yet forgotten how formidable this Ice Demon King was, and he wouldn't do so in the near future.

No matter how sincerely the Ice Demon King guaranteed his safety, Jiang Chen would never put his life in the hands of someone else.

“I swear in the name of Ice God, if you leave the Black Ice Talisman behind, I'll never bother you again!”

The Ice Demon King continued, expressing its intentions.

When Jiang Chen saw how serious the Ice Demon King was, he finally realized how important this Black Ice Talisman was. Out of curiosity, he asked, “Tell me, what exactly is this Black Ice Talisman? If you don't tell me the truth, not only will I not throw it away, I might just destroy it right here.”

“No!!”

Hearing Jiang Chen mention destroying the Black Ice Talisman, the Ice Demon King immediately cried out, “I too have no idea what the Black Ice Talisman exactly is, but it's supporting the entire world of glaciers, and I was also born because of it! Without this Black Ice Talisman, my cultivation will never be able to progress further! One more thing, if the distance between me and this Black Ice Talisman is too large, I'll lose the ability to hide my Demon Soul.”

After hearing this explanation, Jiang Chen was even more shocked. The way he looked at the Black Ice Talisman became even more unusual.

“What exactly is this miraculous item? Is it actually supporting this entire world of glaciers? And is it the thing giving birth to these Ice Demons?”

Jiang Chen was really shocked. He believed what the Ice Demon King said. If this Black Ice Talisman wasn't important, there was no reason to beg Jiang Chen in this manner.

“If that's the reason, why don't you bring it with you?”

Jiang Chen enquired.

“I can't, we're all children of the Ice God, and that Black Ice Talisman is the symbol of the Ice God; it's the supreme existence that none of us can insult! You too can't take it as your own, that's an insult to the Ice God!”

The Ice Demon King explained. In its eyes, just by holding the Black Ice Talisman, Jiang Chen had insulted the Ice God.

Jiang Chen finally understood everything. This Black Ice Talisman was something like a totem to the Ice Demons, it was the symbol of the 'Ice God'.

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes and thought for a while. Suddenly, his eyes lit up, and he turned to the Ice Demon King and said with a smile on his face, “Ice Demon King, do you want to see what the outside world looks like?”

“The outside world?”

The Ice Demon King was startled. Although the other Ice Demons weren’t as intelligent, the Ice Demon King was a Late Combat Soul demon, and its intellect had completely developed. It had lived in this world of glaciers since it was born, so it had no idea what the outside world looked like.

“The outside world is a colorful place, the sceneries there are much prettier than in here. I can bring you out of here, to the outside world.”

Jiang Chen persuaded. If he could sooth this Ice Demon King and keep it by its side, it would definitely be a great weapon in the future.

“No way! If I leave this Black Ice Talisman, my cultivation will stop progressing!”

The Ice Demon King shook its head. From the way it talked, Jiang Chen could clearly feel that it wanted to see the outside world. But, because the environment was different, it was forced to stay back in this world of glaciers.

## Chapter 329 – Another Bronze Plate

---

“You don’t have to worry about this, I’ll bring the Black Ice Talisman with me, and you just need to follow me from now on. We’ll leave this place and experience the much bigger world outside. Furthermore, you will always be close to the Black Ice Talisman as long as you’re with me, your cultivation won’t stop progressing, and you won’t lose the ability to hide your demon soul.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He had made up his mind, he really wanted to take this Ice Demon King with him. What he valued was not only its incredible combat strength, but also its ability to hide its demon soul and revive instantly.

This was an amazing ability, and if it was used in a battle, it could really catch his enemies off guard.

“No, you can’t have the Black Ice Talisman, that’s an insult to the Ice God!”

The Ice Demon King immediately refused the idea. A vague killing intent emerged in its mind. The Ice God was an ultimate existence in its eyes, and the Black Ice Talisman was the symbol of the Ice God. The Ice Demon King would never allow anyone to profane it.

Just because of its amazing loyalty to the Ice God, Jiang Chen would never give up the Black Ice Talisman in his hand. In the Ice Demon King’s mind, Jiang Chen had profaned the holy Ice God,

and the reason it didn't kill Jiang Chen right now was because it was scared it would damage the Black Ice Talisman. As long as Jiang Chen threw away the Black Ice Talisman, the Ice Demon King would definitely forget its promise and start trying to kill Jiang Chen again.

“You're wrong, I'm not going to make this Black Ice Talisman my own. This is the symbol of the Ice God, so we need to find its inheritor. The Black Ice Talisman can only truly be considered a holy item when it's held by the true inheritor of the Ice God. Leaving it here is just a great waste.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? The true inheritor of the Ice God?”

The Ice Demon King was extremely shocked.

“That's right, the real inheritor of the Ice God.”

Jiang Chen said in an affirmative manner.

“Is there really an inheritor of the Ice God?”

The Ice Demon King still had doubts.

“Of course! You can just follow me, I'll bring you to the inheritor of the Ice God. In the name of the Ice God, if I am cheating you, I



will give you back the Black Ice Talisman and let you kill me.”

Jiang Chen raised his palm into the air and spoke with an utmost solemn expression.

Truthfully, there was no inheritor of the Ice God. Even the Ice God was just a fabricated idol, it was something that only existed in the mind of the Ice Demon King, a totem which it could worship. It was not real!

Jiang Chen was only using this as a bait. He would say that Yan Chenyu with her Nine Yin Meridians was the inheritor of the Ice God. It made perfect sense, and with the Ice Demon King’s intelligence and loyalty to the Ice God, it would immediately submit to Yan Chenyu upon meeting her.

The Ice Demon King remained silent for a moment, as if it was thinking about something. Soon after, it raised its head and expressed its thoughts with the special communication method, “Are you sure you’re not cheating me?”

“Naturally. I won’t cheat you.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“Alright, I’ll follow you.”

The Ice Demon King finally agreed.

Jiang Chen was extremely thrilled upon hearing it answer. With the help of this Ice Demon King, he wouldn't need to fear anything in this Island of Ice, and he could do anything he wanted.

But, the Ice Demon King's appearance was really unusual. Furthermore, Jiang Chen wanted to use it as a secret weapon, so he needed a way to hide it properly.

"Ice Demon, since you've decided to follow me, you have to do what I say. I need you to vow in the name of the Ice God, from now on, you will do anything I ask you to do, and you cannot disobey any of my orders, or do anything that will harm me."

Jiang Chen said in a serious manner. He needed to keep this Ice Demon King on a leash, only then would he not have to worry about keeping it around.

"Alright, I swear!"

In order to find the true inheritor of the Ice God, the Ice Demon King would really do everything Jiang Chen told him to.

"I'll now plant a Divine Sense Seed in your body, don't resist."<sup>1</sup>

Jiang Chen said.

The Ice Demon King was startled for a moment, but it still

noded its head. It had promised to do everything Jiang Chen told it to do. Furthermore, it didn't seem like it had any other choice.

Firstly, the Black Ice Talisman was in Jiang Chen's hand, and the Ice Demon King couldn't live without it. Not only could it help its cultivation, it was also the supreme item which it worshipped.

Secondly, the Ice Demon King really wanted to find the true inheritor of the Ice God. It had also only lived in this place since it was born. Although it had a formidable cultivation and the intelligence of a normal human, compared to Jiang Chen whose experience was incredibly vast, like an ancient demon, the Ice Demon King was just too naïve.

So, Jiang Chen shot the Divine Sense Seed into its body, and the Ice Demon King didn't resist at all.

After doing all this, Jiang Chen finally let out a sigh of relief. With this Divine Sense Seed, he didn't have to worry about whether or not the Ice Demon King wanted to do anything to harm him. As long as it harbored bad intentions toward Jiang Chen, he would be able to immediately sense it through the Divine Sense Seed, and with just a thought, Jiang Chen would be able to kill this Ice Demon King in an instant.

“Ice Demon, once we leave this place, I'll place you together with the Black Ice Talisman in a storage ring.”

Although the storage ring could only store objects without life, and no living beings, the Ice Demon was different. It didn't need to

stay in contact with the outside world in order to stay alive. As long as it was kept together with the Black Ice Talisman, there wouldn't be any problems.

“Alright.”

The Ice Demon King nodded its head. It was now completely under Jiang Chen's control, anything Jiang Chen said, it would agree to do.

“There is another treasure hidden somewhere in this world, I wonder if you can get it?”

The Ice Demon King suddenly threw out some explosive news.

“What? There is another treasure in this world of glaciers?”

Jiang Chen cried out in surprise. The Black Ice Talisman by itself was an extraordinary treasure, and he had also found another bronze plate at the bottom of the deep pond. However, this wasn't all, the Ice Demon King just told him there was another treasure here!”

Jiang Chen had no doubts regarding what the Ice Demon King had told him. It had after all lived for a long time, and was the real ruler of this world of glaciers. It was familiar with everything in this world. Furthermore, anything the Ice Demon King considered a treasure must be something amazing.

“That’s right, I’ll lead you to it.”

After saying that, the Ice Demon King started flying, passing the frozen deep pond underneath.

Jiang Chen flew quickly behind it. At this moment, the calling that had disappeared for quite some time had once again appeared, and Jiang Chen could sense it coming from the direction where the Ice Demon King was heading. This instantly made Jiang Chen feel extremely curious.

.....

Gate of Death!

Presently on the other side, the trio who entered the Gate of Death had encountered some serious troubles. Not long after the passed through the Gate of Death, they drifted into an isolated space where everything was eerie. There were dead spirits everywhere.

A dead spirit was a dead person whose soul had transformed under the influence of grievance and resentment. They were mindless, and they felt nothing but grief, resentment and anger. The only thing they knew how to do was slaughter! They were lifeless, and no blood ran in their bodies. They were the most terrifying killing machines.

In fact, just the dead spirits alone weren’t that frightful, but

when Han Yan and the group arrived in this space, they also found the existence of a very strong devilish energy. Under the influence of this devilish energy, the dead spirits in here possessed a devilish characteristic, which transformed them into dead devil spirits. This made them much more terrifying than regular dead spirits.

Evil wind constantly whistled through this land of death, and there were horrifying dead spirits everywhere. Big Yellow, Nangong Wentian, and Han Yan had spent a long time constantly killing them, but it seemed like there was no end to this constant slaughter.

It was as if every single existence in this place had something in common; their overwhelming numbers. There were so many of them, no matter how many you killed, there would still be more waiting for you.

Han Yan who was surrounded by dozens of dead spirits suddenly let out a world-shaking roar. With just this roar alone, all the dead spirits surrounding him were instantly shattered into ashes.

Devilish energy was rolling around Han Yan's body. The devilish energy looked like countless Black Devil Dragons. With all these Devil Dragons, Han Yan's energy was soaring at a rapid pace.

“Brother Yan is breaking through to the next stage!”

Nangong Wentian said, surprised.

“These dead spirits are infested with devilish energy, they are a perfect for Brother Yan. He has been at the Peak Mid Divine Core realm for quite some time now, this place is perfect for him to break through to the Late Divine Core realm.”

Big Yellow said in an excited manner. He knew very well how powerful the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline was. Once Han Yan breaks through to the Late Divine Core realm, he will be able to fight ordinary Early Combat Soul warriors, just like Nangong Wentian.

“What a powerful devilish energy! The Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline is really terrifying, Brother Yan looks like the Ancient Divine Devil right now, truly frightening!”

Nangong Wentian commented with mixed emotions. During his trip to the Blissful Island, he had gotten three incredibly abnormal friends. Putting aside Jiang Chen, Big Yellow was a Dragon Horse descendant, and Han Yan possessed the complete bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil! Every single one of them was an abnormal monster!

Soon after, Han Yan’s energy reached a limit. Because of his bloodline, his cultivation finally stopped at the Peak Late Divine Core realm, and he was now many times stronger than before.

Ja... Ja...

More and more dead spirits appeared, surrounding the trio from all directions.

“Fuck, why are there so many dead spirits here?! They are so disgusting, we can never kill them all!”

Nangong Wentian couldn't help but curse at the situation.

“Looks like these dead spirits can be produced endlessly. My guess is they're just like those stone golems we previously encountered. If we can find the main source and destroy it, we will be able to wipe them all out completely and leave this place.”

Big Yellow said.

Right after he finished speaking, he immediately saw Han Yan transform into a trail of light which flew forwards.

“I found the biggest dead spirit, once we kill it, all the other dead spirits will be wiped out!”

Han Yan had just broken through to another stage and was at his strongest. He unleashed the Nine Devil Waves and cleared a path up front, killing every single dead spirit that got in his way. In just a few breaths time, he arrived in front of the biggest dead spirit.

“Die now!”

Han Yan unleashed a gigantic mountain with his devilish energy, then he threw it at the biggest dead spirit, killing it in an instant.



Swoosh... swoosh...

Right after the biggest dead spirit was killed, all the other dead spirits immediately disappeared; they turned into eerie winds and... Gone!

Seeing this, the trio could finally breathe out a long sigh of relief. Nangong Wentian and Big Yellow both gave Han Yan a thumbs up.

“Wait, what is that?”

Nangong Wentian threw his glance onto the ground, it was the spot where Han Yan killed the biggest dead spirit. There was actually a palm sized bronze plate there.

“It’s a bronze plate! After Han Yan killed the biggest dead spirit, the bronze plate fell out from its body!”

Big Yellow cried out in surprise.

Han Yan picked up the bronze plate and examined it carefully. After a while, he said, “It looks exactly like the two bronze plates Little Chen has!”

---

Notes:

[1\]](#) Big Yellow once planted a Divine Sense Seed in the Heavenly Core demon that guards the Jiang family, old black.

## Chapter 330 – Past Life, Present Life

---

The discovery of yet another bronze plate shocked the trio. Even an idiot would know that these bronze plates were extraordinary, and not just some simple broken bronze plates.

“Last time, we found a bronze plate after destroying the mountain, and now we just found another one after killing the dead spirit. What exactly are these bronze plates for?”

Han Yan furrowed his brows.

“Little Chen has two with him right now. My guess is they must be related to this Island of Ice, somehow. Let’s keep it for now, we might need to use it in the future.”

Nangong Wentian said. They didn’t know Jiang Chen had just found the third bronze plate in the world of glaciers. Including the bronze plate held in Han Yan’s hand, they now had a total of four bronze plates.

“Let’s move on, there are dangers everywhere here. But, opportunities usually coexists with dangers. At least, these dead spirits helped Brother Yan break through to the Late Divine Core realm. Furthermore, I have a feeling that our biggest gain is the bronze plate in Brother Yan’s hand, my instincts tell me that this bronze plate is extremely important.”

Big Yellow said.

The trio continued their journey. They needed to leave this Gate of Death and reach the inner parts of the Island of Ice, then regroup with Jiang Chen.

.....

On the other side, within the world of glaciers.

Jiang Chen was being led by the Ice Demon King. The further he flew, the clearer the calling force became. Jiang Chen could now clearly feel the calling.

“What exactly is calling me? Why do I feel this strong anticipation?”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. The feeling was quite amazing, his feelings toward the calling force were quite strong. He was no longer calm, he was excited!

That’s right, he was feeling excitement even though he didn’t know why! It was as if he was going to meet something that would make his soul start dancing. Jiang Chen had never felt this kind of feeling before. With his mentality and temperament, it was incredibly rare for him to experience such a huge fluctuation in his emotions.

Jiang Chen took a deep breath and restrained the excitement in his mind, and continued following the Ice Demon King. However,

the excitement was going from the depths of his soul, he just couldn't restrain it.

“Just what is it?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He hated being influenced by something unknown, it made him feel as if his destiny was being controlled by something else, and he really hated the feeling of not being able to control his own destiny. However, the feeling still made him very excited.

Therefore, Jiang Chen made up his mind; he must find the source of this calling as soon as possible.

A few minutes later, Jiang Chen and the Ice Demon King arrived in front of a huge mountain that shot up into the sky. The peak of this mountain looked like a razor sharp longsword, and it was emitting dazzling light. The light was different from the reflection that came from the glaciers, as if there was a sharp longsword lying in front of it.

In Jiang Chen's eyes, what he was looking at wasn't a tall mountain, but a longsword.

The Ice Demon King stopped flying. It turned its featureless face toward Jiang Chen and said, “This is it.”

Right now, Jiang Chen was completely sunken into another conception. He stared at the tall icy mountain in front of him; an

odd feeling had spontaneously emerged within his mind.

Jiang Chen couldn't control himself as he walked toward the icy mountain. With every step he took, the feelings in his heart would become stronger. When he finally arrived in front of the mountain, an incomparable intimacy suddenly emerged from the bottom of his heart. It was a feeling so familiar to him, as if the thing he loved the most was hidden within the mountain.

“What is it? What exactly is it? Why does it feel so familiar? Why this intimate feeling?”

Jiang Chen mumbled to himself. He had completely lost control of his emotions.

Jiang Chen's eyes became completely infatuated. He raised his palm and slowly touched the peak of the mountain.

“You must not touch it!”

The Ice Demon King immediately sent out a message. It had done what Jiang Chen was trying to do now, but it suffered miserable consequences because of it, and was knocked far away by the mountain.

But, it seemed like Jiang Chen didn't even get the Ice Demon King's warning; his palm touched the mountain.

Buzz...

A buzzing sound suddenly sounded out from the mountain. Bright golden beams started shooting out from the inner parts of the mountain. As if the beams sensed Jiang Chen's aura, they instantly wrapped themselves around Jiang Chen's entire body.

Jiang Chen's entire body was golden because of the lights, it made him look like a War God who had just descended to the mortal realm; it was a really amazing scene! These golden lights seemed like they were quite familiar with Jiang Chen, and there were no signs of them wanting to hurt Jiang Chen.

The Ice Demon King was completely stunned by this. It knew very well how terrifying these golden light were! Even with its formidable cultivation, it couldn't even get close to them! Jiang Chen however, he didn't seem to be hurt by them.

Right at this moment, tears started filling Jiang Chen's eyes. As his palm touched the mountain, he immediately felt the reason behind the intimate feelings.

Crack...

Excitement could be felt from the icy mountain. Cracks started appearing on the indestructible mountain, and soon, with a loud explosive noise, the mountain shattered and revealed a bright, golden longsword.

No, it wasn't a complete longsword, it was a broken longsword; it was only the tip of a sword. But, just this small part alone was over

300 meters long. It stood right in front of Jiang Chen, like a heavenly sword.

The broken sword started trembling, then it produced a deafening noise.

When Jiang Chen saw the broken sword tip, tears finally started flowing down from his face. His vision was blurred by the dares, but Jiang Chen dared not blink, he only stared at the sword tip in front of him, scared that he was actually just dreaming, and everything in front of him would disappear the moment he blinked.

A man forged with blood and iron could cry as well. A good man had his own feelings, just like Jiang Chen's feeling toward the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Jiang Chen could still remember very clearly. This sword had followed him since he was 22 years old; the same year the sword was forged.

Underneath the light of the moon and stars, fighting in the skies, fighting on the ground, he eliminated all his powerful foes with this sword! This sword was like his own arm, his lover; the most important part of his life!

Jiang Chen wasn't a swordsman, but he was a martial maniac, and this sword was his only weapon; it was his Natal Weapon that he had bred with his own life! It had grown together with him, it had long ago merged with himself; it had become a part of him!



It was the Heavenly Saint Sword!

That year, he stood on the summit of the Saint Cliff, wielding this sword as he fought the Heavens!

That day, together with the Heavenly Saint Sword he unleashed his most glorious attack, paving the road for all beings in the Saint Origin Realm with but a single strike! It was the most glorious moment of his life!

At that moment, Jiang Chen's last drop of Saint Blood left his body, and the Heavenly Saint Sword was broken into several pieces. Jiang Chen couldn't remember exactly how many pieces, because he simply had no time to look at his old friend for the last time.

After Jiang Chen reincarnated, his biggest goal was to return to the Divine Continent, and once again reach the top of the world. After that, he would enter the legendary Immortal Realm! One of the most important parts along this journey was to find and retrieve the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Initially, Jiang Chen thought the Heavenly Saint Sword had fallen off the Saint Cliff together with him, and he would have to look for it underneath the Saint Cliff, or perhaps those superpowers in the Divine Continent had looted everything they could after he died, and the Heavenly Saint Sword had already been taken by one of them.

Jiang Chen had never thought he'd be able to find a broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword on this Island of Ice. Although it was just a broken part, it was more than enough to make Jiang Chen cry.

Without wearing Jiang Chen's shoes, no one would ever be able to understand Jiang Chen's feelings toward the Heavenly Saint Sword. Without going through real life and death, no one would be able to understand all the journeys and experiences Jiang Chen had faced together with the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Past and present, present and past; they had lived together and died together. Since Jiang Chen had now reincarnated, they would without any doubts be together once again!

“Old buddy, we finally meet again.”

Jiang Chen stretched out his palm and gently stroked the Heavenly Saint Sword as if he was gently caressing his most beloved it. Sensing Jiang Chen's aura even clearer now, the Heavenly Saint Sword's trembling became even stronger.

“Come.”

Jiang Chen said in a gentle tone. The Heavenly Saint Sword immediately produced a deafening noise, then it shrank down to the size of a normal sword and fell onto Jiang Chen's palm.

This was the absolute number one Saint Weapon in the Saint

Origin Realm. Although it was broken, there no ordinary weapons that could compare with it. Even though it was just a broken piece of a whole, it had its own sentience.

The broken sword was hiding within the world of glaciers, waiting for Jiang Chen to come. Underneath the Heavens, only Jiang Chen was qualified to possess the Heavenly Saint Sword.

The Heavenly Saint Sword had finally found its master! At this moment, it quietly laid down on top of Jiang Chen's palm and stopped moving. It didn't shine like before, it had already depleted all its energy waiting for Jiang Chen, and since it had finally met Jiang Chen, it could now finally rest.

“Rest assured, I will definitely find the other broken pieces and have you completely restored! After that, you will once again follow me and step onto the top of the world!

Jiang Chen said with a loud voice. For him, this broken sword was the absolute biggest gain he had received in his trip to the Island of Ice.

“I have more than a few hundred Combat Weapons with me right now, some of them are Perfect-Ranked ones. If I can forge all of them with the broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword, I'll be able to give birth to a truly ultimate Combat Weapon! Fine, the rebirth of the Heavenly Saint Sword begins here!”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. Although he only had a broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword, it was still an authentic Saint

Weapon which contained the Great Saint Laws. Even though Jiang Chen wasn't able to utilize these laws right now, the strength of the Saint Weapons was without doubt formidable. If he forged all the hundreds of Combat Weapons together with the Heavenly Saint Sword, the strength of the new Heavenly Saint Sword would be extremely devastating.

But, this world of glaciers was not a suitable place for him to forge a Combat Weapon. The temperature here was too low, so it was extremely difficult for him to merge all Combat Weapons together. At least, it was much more difficult than concocting pills here.

Because of the extremely low temperature in this world of glaciers, Jiang Chen was unable to unleash the full power of the True Dragon Flame.

“I need to leave this world of glaciers first, only then will I find a way to forge the new Heavenly Saint Sword.”

Jiang Chen smiled, satisfied. Of course, he had just found a broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword, there was no way he could be any happier!

On the other side, the Ice Demon King was truly shocked by what it saw. He had never thought this young human could really take away the huge sword, it was unimaginable! But, this caused the Ice Demon to truly recognize how extraordinary Jiang Chen was. Perhaps following him wasn't such a bad idea?

# Chapter 331 – Martial Palace's Warriors

---

After Jiang Chen found the broken part of the Heavenly Sword Sect, the world of glaciers was no longer of any interest to him. Soon after, he brought the Ice Demon King and started flying in the direction that led to the outside world. With the Black Ice Talisman in hand, he could easily sense where the world's exit was.

According to Jiang Chen's request, the Ice Demon King had to hide in a storage ring. Jiang Chen had a lot of storage rings, mainly because he had robbed so many people before. The storage rings he had obtained from the Combat Soul warriors contained a much greater space than the ordinary storage rings he had. Even the gigantic Ice Demon King would have no problems hiding within one of them.

Soon after, Jiang Chen left the world of glaciers. He thought he would arrive at the deepest part of the Island of Ice, but too bad, when Jiang Chen came out, he was greeted with another desolate environment.

"Looks like I haven't reached the end within the Gate of Void. Let's just keep going."

Jiang Chen had no choice but to keep flying. He believed that regardless of which gate he chose to pass through, all of them would eventually lead to the same place, the deepest part of the Island of Ice.

Jiang Chen also finally understood why he was the only person who could see the Gate of Void, it was because of the calling force coming from the area behind the Gate of Void, the Heavenly Saint Sword calling for him.

Jiang Chen's harvest had been incredibly huge after entering the Gate of Void. Black Ice Talisman, another bronze plate, a broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword, and he had also found a great help for his future journey; the Ice Demon King. Jiang Chen was extremely happy with all these amazing gains.

Within this desolate world, frightening roars sounded out from everywhere. Jiang Chen shook his head. There were simply too many different worlds and creatures within the Island of Ice. It looked like a difficult battle was soon coming up.

“It's better this way. I hope I can meet some real demon beasts this time. The medicinal strength in my body is starting to take effect, strengthening my foundation. What I can do now is kill all these demon beasts and absorb their Demon Souls, forming new Dragon Marks along the way. I hope I can reach the Late Divine Core realm by the time I reach the center of this Island of Ice.”

Jiang Chen was in high spirits, and no signs of fear could be found on his face. With just him alone, he once again engaged in a difficult battle within the desolate world.

.....

At the same time, within the Gates of Life and Death, all the

warriors were facing similar situations. Each and every one of them encountered all kinds of strange worlds, and all sorts of weird creatures. Of course, there were some who were lucky enough to find some precious treasures.

Those who entered the Gate of Life were regretting not picking the Gate of Death, they felt like they had been cheated; the Gate of Life was only a bait, while the Gate of Death was the real path which would lead them to a new, better life. But, those warriors who entered the Gate of Death were regretting not picking the Gate of Life. They knew the Gate of Death was dangerous before they entered, so they only thought it served them right when encountering so many deadly risks.

In fact, no matter which gate they entered, be it the Gate of Life or the Gate of Death, they all faced the same situations, and none were luckier than the other. If they really wanted to get treasures, they would have to go through all the tests.

Within the Gate of Death!

Ling Du who entered together with Shangguan Yilong had split up with them. All the men from the Shangguan Clan had entered a grayish space, and there was nothing within this space. Not even a creature could be found! It was purely quiet, yet extremely eerie and gloomy.

“Brother Yilong, this shitty place is really nasty, we can’t even find a strand of hair in this place! After spending so much time walking around, we still can’t find the exit... Perhaps there is none?”

A young man from the Shangguan Clan said. From his words, one could easily tell how frustrated he was.

“Precisely! What kind of ghostly place is this? We passed through the Gate of Death in order to kill those three bastards, but now, we can’t even find them, and we’re trapped in this weird place! When can we leave?!”

Another person complained.

“Stop complaining, keep searching for the exit, we have to find a way out.”

Shangguan Yilong furrowed his brows as he spoke.

The group continued flying forwards. After flying another few hundreds of kilometers, there were still no signs of an exit, they were still surrounded by the same grayish environment.

“Brother Yilong, look, we’ve bumped into that stone tablet again!”

A young disciple pointed his finger at a stone tablet not far away from them. The stone tablet was about 3 meters tall, and it was also gray, similar to the environment here.

“Fuck, we bumped into the same stone tablet so many times! I



think we've just been walking in circles this whole time, and this stone tablet is actually just the landmark here."

Another said in a depressed tone.

"This damn stone tablet! Just looking at it makes me furious! Break it!"

Shangguan Yilong was really angry as well. Being trapped in a dull environment like this, no matter how patient a person was, he would eventually become frustrated as well. Shangguan Yilong transformed into a trail of light and appeared in front of the stone tablet. His palm was glowing in a golden light, and unleashed the Earth Shattering Palm, which hit the stone tablet with a loud bang.

The stone tablet shattered into many pieces after the loud bang.

Ding!

Following a dinging sound, a heavy object fell onto the ground. All the men from the Shangguan Clan immediately threw their glance at the object at the same time.

"Brother Yilong, look, something fell out from the stone tablet!"

Someone exclaimed.

Shangguan Yilong was surprised as well. He held his palm toward

the object, then a suction force emerged, pulling the object into his grip. When the object landed in his palm, he immediately felt its massive weight, and his expression changed.

“It’s just a small bronze plate, but it weighs over a thousand Jin! Looks like it’s something unusual.”

Shangguan Yilong was surprised.

“Brother Yilong, this looks like an ordinary broken bronze plate, I don’t think it’s a big deal.”

Someone commented. The broken bronze plate seemed extraordinary, he couldn’t see anything unusual about it.

“Brother Yilong, look, the gray fog is disappearing!”

Someone cried out in alarm. Only now did everyone notice the gray fog disappearing. After the stone tablet was destroyed, the gray fog that was constantly hovering around in this place started disappearing at a rapid pace, and the air had become clearer as well.

“So it’s all because of this stone tablet. We could only leave this place after the stone tablet was broken. Since this bronze plate fell out from the stone tablet, I believe there must be something unusual about it. Let’s keep it for now.”

Shangguan Yilong place the bronze plate into his storage ring.

After that, he brought all the men from the Shangguan Clan and continued further. Their next goal was to find Han Yan and the others. However, they understood that unless they were really lucky, it would be incredibly difficult to bump into the trio in this place, let alone kill them.

Two days later, some men with extraordinary cultivations arrived at the end of the road, and were approaching the center of the Island of Ice.

Within the Gate of Void, Jiang Chen had fight constantly without stop for two days, but there wasn't much for him to get. None of the demon beasts here were strong, none of them were Combat Soul demons, and with Jiang Chen's cultivation, absorbing Divine Core Demon Souls didn't help much, which led him to an awful situation. After fighting restlessly for two days and killing countless demon beasts, Jiang Chen had absorbed countless Demon Souls, which only gave him another 40 Dragon Marks. He still needed 60 Dragon Marks in order to break through to the Late Divine Core realm.

“Damn it, the Dragon Transformation skill is such an insane skill, it's turning me into a bottomless hole! Looks like it will difficult for me to break through to the Late Divine Core realm unless I find a Combat Soul Demon Soul. Never mind, I can feel I'm approaching the end of this road, let's leave this place first.”

Jiang Chen felt really gloomy right now. His path of cultivation was really difficult, and he started worrying about his future. He was only at the Divine Core realm right now, and it was already so difficult to break through to the next stage.

.....

Right in the center of the Island of Ice, there was a tall and ancient pagoda. This pagoda had seven levels, and numerous mysterious runes were engraved onto its wall. The pagoda surface was rusty, and seemed old. Clearly, it had existed for quite a long period of time.

Right now, about 50 kilometers away from the ancient pagoda, two illusionary gates started swaying. From time to time, some people would come out from these gates. Not long after that, more than a hundred people had come out from both gates, and there were still more people coming.

“Wahaha, daddy has finally come out from that gate! Daddy has finally reached the center of the Island of Ice!”

“Risk and opportunity exists side by side! I almost died in the Gate of Life, but I luckily broke through to the next stage at the final moment, the Late Divine Core realm! Looks like I’m a man with tremendous luck, I’m sure I’ll get some unimaginable benefits in this Island of Ice!”

These two illusionary gates were the exits for the Gates of Life and Death. Those who came out from them had mostly experienced life or death situation. Many of them were injured, and some had obtained great benefits, leading to their cultivations improving significantly. Regardless of which gate, the mentalities of those who had come out had improved significantly. Even

without obtaining any treasures, they would be able to become someone great with their own persistence.

“Hmph! I don’t know where those three bastards went. In the end, we still didn’t find them!”

Led by Shangguan Yilong, the men from the Shangguan Clan came out from the Gate of Death. Each of them wore the same gloomy expression.

Ling Du had also come out together with them. His complexion wasn’t good either, he had gone through some bad experiences in the Gate of Death. He had been trapped in some difficult situations, and not only did he not bump into Han Yan and the group, he didn’t find any good treasures either. He had only obtained a broken bronze plate, and he didn’t have any clue what it was for.

Right at this moment, both gates produced some buzzing sounds at the same time. Suddenly, some men with powerful cultivations dashed out from the gates. When these men left the gate, their incredible speed instantly brought a strong wind with them. In the blink of an eye, there were eight men who had come out from the gate. Each of them were a Combat Soul warrior, and the two leading men were even Mid Combat Soul warriors!

The fact was, only those under 30 were allowed to enter this place. Being at the Mid Combat Soul realm at this age, they could only be described as monsters! In the entire Eastern Continent, they could be considered the top geniuses.

Each of these eight warriors wore the same prideful expressions on their faces. It was the pride that came deep down from their bones. Of course, they had the qualifications to be proud, because all of them came from the same place – Martial Palace!

## Chapter 332 – Nine Bronze Plates

---

The arrival of the men from the Martial Palace immediately attracted the attention of everyone. These mighty warriors would become the center of attention no matter where they went.

“Look, the men from the Martial Palace are here as well!”

“They are the real geniuses of the Martial Palace, so powerful! They’ve all reached the Combat Soul realm before reaching 30 years of age! Look at those two men, they’re both Mid Combat Soul warriors, this is crazy!”

“I’ve heard about these men, both of them are geniuses from the Martial Saint Dynasty, and are cultivating in the Martial Palace. The first person is the Nine Emperor’s son, and his name is Wu Lang. The other is the son of the Tenth Emperor, and his name is Wu Cong. Both of them are princes from the Martial Saint Dynasty. Regardless of background or statues, none of us can ever compare with them.”

.....

None present were not startled. These geniuses from the Martial Palace truly stood out from the rest, especially the two outstanding men from the Martial Saint Dynasty. They were the majestic princes of the current dynasty, and more importantly, their cultivations had reached such a mighty level before reaching becoming 30 years old! They were unable to help but start feeling respect for these two.

“Ling Du is here to pay his respect to the princes.”

“Shangguan Yilong is here to pay his respect to the princes.”

Ling Du and Shangguan Yilong both led their men and arrived in front of the men from the Martial Palace, bowing toward Wu Lang and Wu Cong at the same time. They dared not show them any neglect. Both of these men were truly powerful existences, regardless of the Martial Palace of Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Ling Du, I never thought I’d see you here.”

Wu Cong who was dressed in white clothes turned to Ling Du and nodded his head with a smile on his face. Ling Du was a disciple of the Martial Palace, and he had a pretty good relationship with Wu Cong.

“Junior disciple Ling, have you found that Jiang Chen yet?”

A normal looking man from the Martial Palace took a step forward and came before Ling Du. His name was Yang Yun, and he used to be a disciple of the Myriad Sword Sect before he was accepted into the Martial Palace and started cultivating there. When he mentioned Jiang Chen’s name, hatred could be felt from his tone. Clearly, he knew what happened back in the desert.

“Senior disciple Yang, we haven’t found that Jiang Chen yet. But if we do find him, we will definitely tear him to pieces!”



Ling Du said in a vicious manner.

“Hmph! Those who dare kill the ones from the Myriad Sword Sect will have to face certain death!”

Yang Yun coldly harrumphed.

“Yilong, I heard Yilei was killed by that Jiang Chen? Is that true?”

Another formidable young man from the Martial Palace came before the ones from the Shangguan Clan, and questioned with a loud voice.

“Brother Yihong, Yilei was killed by that Jiang Chen. If I find him, I will definitely punish him by slaughtering him and tearing his body into pieces! But it’s too bad, Jiang Chen pretty much disappeared after entering the Island of Ice, we can’t find him anywhere. Those three bastards who follow him are also nowhere to be found either.”

Shangguan Yilong said in a ferocious manner. The man in front of him was Shangguan Yihong, a genius from the Shangguan Clan who was currently furthering his cultivation in the Martial Palace. He was assigned to follow both princes, and had come to the Island of Ice to train.

“He’s just a Divine Core warrior, but he’s strong enough to kill

Combat Soul warriors. Looks like this guy isn't as simple as we thought, he must have some powerful treasures with him."

Wu Cong said with a grin.

"You're right, prince. That Jiang Chen has taken the storage rings of dozens of Combat Soul warriors, and within those storage rings are nearly every single treasure that appeared in the Blissful Island's auction. He also has quite a number of Superior Weapons, and a lot of Heavenly Restoration Pills. Countless rare and precious treasures are in his possession as well, there's no doubt he's a moving treasure vault."

Shangguan Yilong cupped his fist toward Wu Cong and said.

"A lot of Heavenly Restoration Pills?"

Wu Cong's eyes instantly lit up. As a prince from the Martial Saint Dynasty, he had seen all kinds of treasures, but the Heavenly Restoration Pills could still attract his attention in an instant. This was because it was a pill that was only used by those in the Combat King realm and above!

"Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, if you guys can't deal with that Jiang Chen, I'll provide you some help. I'll kill him and get revenge for you. But of course, all his treasures will belong to me."

Wu Cong started laughing, then an expression of greed emerged

onto his face.

Hearing what Wu Cong said, Shangguan Yilong, Yang Yun and the rest of the people immediately furrowed their brows. All of them had planned to kill Jiang Chen themselves and take all his treasures, but it looked like Wu Cong had just made Jiang Chen his target. If Wu Cong really wanted his treasures, none of them would be able to put their hands on Jiang Chen, and at that point of him, everything Jiang Chen had gotten would go to Wu Cong, because none of them were daring enough to fight Wu Cong.

“Wu Cong, be careful what you say. You’re from the Martial Saint Dynasty, don’t simply interfere with the conflicts between these sects.”

Wu Lang who had been quiet all this time suddenly spoke with an unhappy expression on his face. His body had an average build and bronze colored skin which made him look very manly, and a sharp face which made him look very strong-willed. He didn’t have the same cunning and wicked aura as Wu Cong.

“Hmph! Wu Lang, mind your own business, you have no right to tell me what to do!”

Wu Cong coldly harrumphed. He simply gave Wu Lang no face.

Wu Cong turned back toward the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect people after saying that and said, “Let’s go. Since we’ve all reached the center of the Island of Ice, it’s time for us to seek out our real opportunities. I, Wu Cong am a peerless genius

destined for greatness! I'm sure I'll be able to find a massive opportunity in this place and become someone like the Majestic Emperor!"

After saying that, Wu Cong strode away. All of them had gone through the nine paths and the Gates of Life and Death before getting here, of course they would go explore further and obtain some good treasures.

Wu Lang's eyes flickered with wonder. He gave up the idea of fighting with Wu Cong, and strode away as well.

"Doesn't seem like the relationship between the two princes is good."

"They are both from the Imperial Family, it's perfectly normal to fight amongst themselves for power. The Ninth Emperor and Tenth Emperor don't get along either, so you can imagine what the relationship between the two princes is like."

"There is no kinship within the Imperial Family. Let's go, we have to check out this place as well, I think I saw a building not far away from here."

.....

Many people discussed amongst each other. The struggle for power within the Imperial Family was not something they really could imagine.

Not long after the crowds dispersed, three figures came dashing out from the Gate of Death – Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow.

The three of them were in messy states. Obviously, they had faced all kinds of trouble back in the Gate of Death. But luckily, they had finally come out from it without getting hurt.

“Little Chen hasn’t come out yet.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Let’s not bother with him for now, we need to check out what’s in front of us.”

After saying that, Han Yan started walking away from the gates.

.....

The crowds stood about 40 meters away from the ancient pagoda, staring at it.

“The treasures must be hidden within this ancient pagoda. It looks really mystical, with all the mysterious runes engraved onto it.”

Shangguan Yihong commented.

“Precisely, this place is the center of the Island of Ice, there is nothing else here except for this ancient pagoda! I’m certain the real treasure is hidden within!”

Ling Du added.

“Let’s enter the pagoda!”

Wu Cong shouted. He was the first person to march toward the ancient pagoda. Soon after, the crowds had all gathered in front of the ancient pagoda’s entrance. It was an aged stone door, and it looked really thick and solid.

“Yang Yun, break this stone door.”

Wu Cong ordered.

“Yes, prince.”

Yang Yun dared not neglect Wu Cong’s orders, he immediately walked up to the stone door. He circulated his Yuan and threw a punch containing tremendous force at the stone door.

Rumble...

The ground shook from the tremendous force. A dull banging sound came from the stone door, but it didn’t break like the crowd

had expected it to. An Early Combat Soul warrior's powerful punch could even shatter a small mountain, but this punch did nothing to do stone door!

More importantly, not only did Yang Yun's not break the stone door, it didn't even move its foundation!

"The stone door is too powerful, it looks like we can't open it with force."

Someone said.

"Hmph! Let me try!"

Wu Cong harrumphed. He slowly raised his palm, suddenly unleashing a bright beam, then he threw it at the stone door.

Rumble...

The ground shook even more violently than it did before. But too bad, nothing happened to the stone door this time either.

"What?!"

Wu Cong was shocked, "Even I can't break this stone door? There must be some amazing treasures hiding in this ancient pagoda!"

Crack...

Right after Wu Cong finished speaking, some pieces of stone began falling off from the stone door's surface, and nine holes revealed themselves in front of the crowd. Each of them was about the same size as a human's palm.

“Look, what's that? They look like some sort of switches!”

Shangguan Yilong pointed his finger at the stone door.

At this moment, everyone threw their glance at the stone door. They immediately saw nine palm-sized holes had appeared on the stone door.

“Why does the shape of these holes look so familiar to me?”

Shangguan Yilong said with a frown on his face.

“The bronze plate!”

Wu Cong suddenly shouted out. He flipped his palm and retrieved a broken bronze plate, then he compared the shape of the bronze plate in his hand to the holes on the stone door. Indeed, they were a perfect fit!

“I finally know what this broken bronze plate is for; it's the key to the ancient pagoda!”



Shangguan Yilong flipped his palm and retrieved another bronze plate.

“I have one too!”

Ling Du took out another one.

“Me too.”

Wu Lang had one bronze plate as well. All of them had gotten the plates in the Gates of Life and Death.

“I also have one!”

Another young genius from the Martial Palace had one bronze plate as well. Now, there were five bronze plates!

“Who else has a bronze plate? We need nine bronze plates in order to open the stone door, it won’t open without all nine of them. If anyone has one, please take it out, we can share the treasures found in the ancient pagoda!”

Wu Cong looked around the crowd as he spoke. None of them knew the exact purpose of these bronze plates, but now they did. In order to open the ancient pagoda, they needed all nine bronze plates. With just the five bronze plates they had now, the stone door wouldn’t open.

“Who still has one? Please take them out right now.”

Shangguan Yilong turned around and looked at the crowd. Then, he immediately saw a majestic big yellow dog not standing too far away from him! And there were also two men standing next to the dog!

“Big Yellow!”

Shangguan Yilong instantly shouted out. Without any doubts, this dog and two men were the three bastards they had been searching for!

## Chapter 333 – Jiang Chen Appears!

---

Hearing Big Yellow's name, many people in the crowd immediately threw their glance in the direction where he stood. Many of them had seen Big Yellow before, so they could easily recognize the trio.

“It really is them! Don't they know that both the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are looking for them everywhere? Why did they still come here, are they courting death?”

“This trio is finished! Although their strength is pretty abnormal, they can't compare with these true geniuses in front of them, the gap between them is not small!”

“They're dead, they're screwed!”

.....

The duo consisting of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had become very famous, especially the majestic Big Yellow, who was considered the unique icon of the group. As for Han Yan and Nangong Wentian, both of them were Jiang Chen's friends as well. Many people had seen the two entering together with Big Yellow.

The Shangguan Clan and the Myriad Sword Sect had both been looking for them everywhere, vowing to kill them no matter what the cost was. But, not only had these three not hid anywhere, they just came straight to this place!

Swoosh...

All the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect immediately surrounded the trio. Fire burned within the eyes of each and every single one of them. They knew what had happened back in the sky garden, not only were these three guys with Jiang Chen, they also killed four disciples of the Shangguan Clan! Now, it was payback time!

“Kill them!”

“No, we can’t let them die so easily, we need to torture them before sending them to hell!”

“Let’s rip this dog’s skin off while it’s still alive, then barbecue it!”

.....

Everyone from the Shangguan Clan were gritting their teeth in anger, and nearly leapt forwards to bit off Big Yellow’s meat.

Shangguan Yilong waved his hand, signaling his men not to be impulsive. He took a step forward, arriving in front of the trio, and asked, “Where is Jiang Chen?”

“Why are you so impatient to see Little Chen? You in a hurry to

seek death?”

Han Yan casually shrugged his shoulders. Although he was facing so many enemies, no signs of fear could be found on his face.

“What a joke, Jiang Chen is but an ant in front of me! It’s really funny that you think he can kill me! Tell me, where is Jiang Chen?! Tell me and I might give you all quick deaths!”

Shangguan Yilong started laughing as if he had just heard the funniest joke in his entire life.

“Don’t waste your time looking for him, Jiang Chen will come here himself. As for the three of us, I firmly believe you don’t dare kill us.”

Nangong Wentian said with a smile on his face. He too showed no signs of fear.

“Kill them all, this is ridiculous!”

A disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect couldn’t bear these guys any longer.

“Yilong, just kill them, they’re too much of an eyesore. After killing these guys, we’ll find that Jiang Chen and kill him! We have to get revenge for the Shangguan Clan, no matter what!”

Shangguan Yihong who stood behind him gave out the final decision.

“Fine.”

Shangguan Yilong agreed. He immediately unleashed his killing intent, and was getting ready to attack the trio.

“Stop!”

Han Yan suddenly shouted out loudly.

“What’s wrong? You guys are now afraid?”

A mocking grin emerged on Shangguan Yilong’s face.

“I’m sorry, daddy doesn’t know how to write afraid. I’m just worried you don’t have the guts to kill us, take a look at what this is!”

Han Yan flipped his palm, and in the blink of an eye, a bronze plate appeared.

“A bronze plate!”

Wu Cong instantly exclaimed upon seeing the bronze plate. The treasure hidden within the ancient pagoda had greatly interested

him, and what he needed now the most was to gather all nine bronze plates and open up the stone door. They had five right now, and were lacking four. None of them had expected this; Han Yan had one bronze plate with him!

“Young man, you don’t deserve to possess that bronze plate. Hand it over and I’ll give you a quick death!”

Shangguan Yilong shouted toward Han Yan.

“Stupid bitch!”

Big Yellow stared at Shangguan Yilong and perfectly described him in a serious manner.

“Damn dog, what did you just say? You’re courting death!”

Shangguan Yilong became furious because of Big Yellow’s words. He immediately slapped toward Big Yellow with a tremendous amount of force.

Big Yellow moved his body, revealing a mystical symbol right in the middle of his forehead. With that, he simply rammed toward Shangguan Yilong’s palm.

Bang!

When Shangguan Yilong’s palm collided with Big Yellow’s head,

a metal-clanging sound resounded throughout the scene. Big Yellow's majestic body was knocked back by the force. Shangguan Yilong was much stronger than Shangguan Yilei. Although it was just a simple strike, Big Yellow was still not his match, and was knocked back in an instant.

However, Big Yellow had thick skin and strong muscles, and his head was the strongest part of his body. He didn't suffer any injuries after getting hit by Shangguan Yilong's palm.

“What?!”

Shangguan Yilong cried out in disbelief. He knew very well how much force his palm contained, and even with this tremendous amount of force, this dog's head was still intact!

“Shangguan Yilong, if you attack us again, I promise you I will destroy this bronze plate before you're able to kill us!”

Han Yan clenched the bronze plate in his fist tightly, causing some cracking sounds to sound out from it.

“How dare you!?”

Shangguan Yihong pointed his finger at Han Yan.

“I'm not joking, I only joke with my friends. If you guys don't believe me, feel free to test me!”



There was only calmness on Han Yan's face, he was showing no signs of being panicked or afraid.

“How dare you threaten me?! Fine, I'll kill you now, let's see if you really can destroy the bronze plate before I kill you!”

Shangguan Yihong was really furious right now, and was about to attack Han Yan.

“Stop!”

Right at this moment, Wu Cong shouted out loudly, stopping Shangguan Yihong.

“What is your name?”

Wu Cong walked up to the front and threw his glance at Han Yan.

“Han Yan.”

Han Yan replied.

“You're a man with courage. Since you have a bronze plate, I can guarantee your life. As long as you give me that bronze plate, I promise, no one here can kill you. What do you think?”

Wu Cong suggested.

“This bronze plate is my only defense, do you truly think I’ll give it to you?”

Han Yan said with a grin. This Wu Cong was clearly with the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. As long as he handed the bronze plate over, he would lose his token of negotiation, and all lives within the trio would be in danger.

“It’s fine if you don’t give it to me, but you need to place it on the stone door later on. When the door is open, you’ll get a portion of the treasures we find inside. But, since you only have one bronze plate, it can only save your life; the other two will still have to die.”

For Wu Cong, sparing Han Yan’s life was the biggest concession. As a supreme prince, it was rare for him to give way to someone else.

“No way.”

Han Yan replied firmly.

“Hmph! Han Yan, don’t try to refuse a toast only to be forced to drink a forfeit! I can easily kill you if I wanted to, don’t think so highly of the bronze plate in your hand. With it, we only have six of them, the stone door still won’t open.”

Wu Cong coldly harrumphed. No one had every dared to disobey his decision.

“You’re right, even with the bronze plate in my hand, you guys still can’t get the stone door open. But, without the bronze plate in my hand, even if you find the remaining bronze plates, you still won’t be able to open the stone door. Am I right, prince?”

Han Yan said with a faint smile on his face. Since he knew the important of the bronze plate in his hand, he felt much relief. As long as he still had it in his hand, no one here would have the courage to attack him, because if he broke the bronze plate, the ancient pagoda would not be opened, and all these people would have to return empty handed.

“Are you trying to threaten me?”

Wu Cong was trying his best to suppress his anger.

“Yes we’re threatening you, stupid bitch!”

Big Yellow was truly amazing, he just cursed a prince!

Many people felt like they were about to faint, especially those who had witnessed how Big Yellow had behaved back on the Blissful Island. Many of them wanted to prostrate themselves in front of Big Yellow in admiration. This dog was the prime example of one with absolutely no fear! Not only had he shit on the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan’s Elders, he now even cursed a

prince as a stupid bitch!

“You’re courting death!”

This time, Wu Cong could no longer suppress his anger. He immediately unleashed the mighty energy of someone at the Mid Combat Soul realm, which spread across the scene. Under the pressure of such tremendous energy, many people started feeling a difficult in even breathing. As the son of the Tenth Emperor, the prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty, nobody had ever cursed at him like this before, and a dog had just done so! He couldn’t take it any longer!

In an instant, Wu Cong struck his palm toward Big Yellow.

Bang!

Right at this moment, another palm dashed out from the side, instantly blocking Wu Cong’s strike. The man who did this was none other than Wu Lang!

“Wu Long, how dare you stop me?!”

Wu Cong’s fury didn’t diminish a little bit at all.

“I’m doing this for everyone’s sake. If he really destroys the bronze plate, none of us are going to enter this ancient pagoda, and we will have to return empty handed.”

Wu Lang glared at Wu Cong.

“A dog just cursed at me!! I’ll have to kill him even if he has ten thousand lives! I don’t care, I want to kill this dog now, don’t stop me!”

Wu Cong shouted out loudly.

“I am not going to let you do that!”

Wu Lang’s attitude was firm, but his behavior clearly showed that he wasn’t just trying to prevent the destruction of the bronze plate, even Han Yan and Nangong Wentian could clearly tell that he was trying to protect them. This really puzzled them, because they didn’t know this prince, so why was he trying to save their live?

“I said this before, the bronze plate can only save Han Yan’s life, and that dog just insulted me! I have to kill him to protect my honor! Wu Lang, if you continue blocking me, don’t blame me for being rude!”

The air of arrogance surrounding Wu Cong became even thicker. Right at this moment, even the men from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan had to back off. They didn’t want to get their feet wet in the conflict between the two princes; they couldn’t afford to offend any of them.

“If that is the case, I don’t mind teaching you a lesson.”

Wu Lang was not scared of Wu Cong. Although both of them came from the same family, their relationship wasn’t good. The undercurrent between the different powers in the imperial family had always been violent, and it was much more complicated than it looked.

“Fine, Wu Lang, one of us will die today! Shangguan Yihong, Ling Du, I’ll fight Wu Lang, you two kill that dog!”

Wu Cong’s energy suddenly rose.

Right at this moment, a powerful shockwave suddenly came from their back. A man was seen flying toward them like a shooting star.

“I have three bronze plates with me, I wonder how many people I can protect?”

Right after the sentence ended, the man arrived in front of the crowd. It was a handsome young man dressed in white clothes – Jiang Chen!

“Jiang Chen!”

Someone in the crowd shouted. No one had expected Jiang Chen to arrive at this moment. It looked like the situation was going to become even more chaotic!

“So you’re that Jiang Chen! Fine, you’re finally here, it’s time for you to pay the debt of blood you have with the Shangguan Clan!”

Shangguan Yilong once again unleashed his mighty energy. Without saying anything else, he immediately leapt forwards and struck toward Jiang Chen. With incredible killing intent, he turned his palm strike into a gigantic web which covered toward Jiang Chen, trying to capture him.

## Chapter 334 – I Have A Condition

---

Jiang Chen had finally made his appearance. His appearance immediately made Shangguan Yilong angry. With all his strength, he struck toward Jiang Chen with the Earth Shattering Palm. The blood debt between the Shangguan Clan and Jiang Chen had to be paid, therefore he needed to kill Jiang Chen upon seeing him, and never give the Myriad Sword Sect any chance to kill him before the Shangguan Clan could do so.

Crack...

The Earth Shattering Palm was one of the most ferocious attacks, so when Shangguan Yilong unleashed it, the void started shaking and producing cracking sounds. Powerful winds were created as he charged along his path, and the temperature in the air increased. In just the blink of an eye, his attack arrived in front of Jiang Chen.

“You really are stronger than Shangguan Yilei. But... still not enough.”

A grin emerged onto Jiang Chen’s face. His cultivation was just a little bit away from the Late Divine Core realm, the gap only lacked a few Dragon Marks. Although this Shangguan Yilong was stronger than Shangguan Yilei, Jiang Chen feared him not. If he could kill Shangguan Yilei within just a mere second, defeating Shangguan Yilong wouldn’t require him to waste too much of his effort.

Pop!



Jiang Chen stretched out his arm and threw a powerful punch toward Shangguan Yilong. His fist glowed brightly, and blood red Dragon Marks hovered around it. Each of these Dragon Marks looked like real dragons, causing his fist to emanate a mystical aura.

Bang!

In the blink of an eye, both attacks collided! The powerful punch hit the ferocious palm, causing devastating shockwaves to sweep out from the center of the collision. The powerful shockwaves twisted the space around them, and produced a large amount of sparks.

Plop plop plop...

Being hit by such a violent counter force, Shangguan Yilong was knocked back a few dozen steps before he could stabilize his body. The collision caused his entire arm to start violently trembling, and his face had turned pale. His Qi and Blood was in a messy state, causing him to feel unwell. Shangguan Yilong threw a terrified glance at Jiang Chen. Aside from the feeling of shock, there were no other words that could describe his current feelings.

“Garbage. With such a weak cultivation, you want to kill me? Get the fuck outta here!”

Jiang Chen glanced at Shangguan Yilong, then he just ignored him. In an incomparably imposing manner, he walked step by step

toward Han Yan and group, just like a God of War. He looked around with his bright eyes and said, “Which one of you want to kill my brothers? You can give it a try now!”

Overbearing! Domineering! No one could compare with him!

Jiang Chen’s arrival caused the crowd to feel as if something heavy was pushing down on their chests. His ferocious behavior shocked everyone present! With just a single punch, he had knocked back the genius from the Shangguan Clan, Shangguan Yilong! And now, he was simply looking down on everyone else. Using his domineering manner, he basically told everyone that no one could touch his brothers!

“So strong! Such a powerful man!”

“This is insane, even Shangguan Yilong is no match for him! Perhaps those mighty warriors from the Martial Palace can’t defeat him either! I believe only the two princes from the Martial Saint Dynasty can defeat him!”

“This Jiang Chen really becomes stronger and stronger with each passing moment! I’ve heard he cultivates incredibly quickly, from the Qi Province, which is just a small place, he has reached this level in such a short amount of time!”

.....

Many people were whispering amongst each other. Jiang Chen’s

domineering behavior had influenced the crowd. By just standing there, he caused many people to feel their blood starting to boil.

Looking at Jiang Chen, the trio immediately felt ecstatic. Jiang Chen had clearly become stronger than before, and although there were a lot of geniuses around here, only those two princes had the ability to defeat Jiang Chen.

Swoosh...

The men from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan moved once again. Even Yang Yun and Shangguan Yihong joined in and surrounded Jiang Chen's group. But, it wasn't only them, another young genius from the Martial Palace joined in as well. He was the number one genius from the Qingyi Sect, and he was currently cultivating in the Martial Palace. He had been told by someone when he arrived at the Island of Ice that Jiang Chen was the man who killed all the men from the Qingyi Sect, so of course he also needed to settle this score with Jiang Chen as well.

Putting aside Wu Cong, in just a short moment, there were six Combat Soul warriors surrounding Jiang Chen. Shangguan Yihong and Shangguan Yilong from the Shangguan Clan, Yang Yun, Ling Du, and Xu Shuang from the Myriad Sword Sect, and the Qingyi Sect's number one genius.

Six Combat Soul geniuses, and none of them could be compared to any ordinary Combat Soul warrior. Even though Jiang Chen had the ability to defeat Shangguan Yilong, he would still most likely meet defeat when facing a group of six Combat Soul geniuses.

“Jiang Chen, you’re dead meat today! Now it’s time for you to pay back!”

“You have killed so many Myriad Sword Sect disciples, even if you have a hundred lives, you’re still going to be killed today!”

“Jiang Chen, if you kneel down before me and kowtow, I’ll consider giving you a quick death! This is the consequence of offending the Shangguan Clan! Our clan is a supreme existence, and a tiny ant like you can never humiliate us!”

“Jiang Chen, it’s time for us to settle the blood debt between the Qingyi Sect and you!”

.....

All of these geniuses were filled with extreme killing intent. If their gaze could kill someone, Jiang Chen would already have been torn into pieces by now. What happened in the desert had seriously humiliated both the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan’s sovereignty, and if they couldn’t punish and kill the culprit, their face would be washed down the drain.

Wu Cong who stood on the sidelines was greatly interested by what was happening right now. He looked at the scene with a faint smile on his face.

On the other side, Wu Lang threw his glance onto Jiang Chen as

well. When he thought about Jiang Chen's imposing manner just now, he secretly nodded his head. But, what was happening right now made him furrow his brows.

“Haha, you're all nothing but tiny shrimps in front of me, and you're trying to kill me? This is too puerile! Let me tell you this, I have the last three bronze plates, and without me, none of you are going to enter this ancient pagoda!”

Jiang Chen laughed heartily.

“What did you just say?!”

Jiang Chen's words caused many in the crowd to cry out in surprise, especially Wu Cong. When he heard that Jiang Chen had three bronze plates with him, his eyes immediately lit up.

“You have the last three bronze plates with you?”

Wu Cong asked.

“Of course.”

Jiang Chen flipped his palm and retrieved the bronze plates. Including the previous six bronze plates, all nine of them had finally appeared! As long as they placed these nine bronze plates into the stone door, they would be able to enter the ancient pagoda and start searching for treasures.

“He really has three bronze plates, what a lucky guys! But, how could he have found so many?”

“With those bronze plates, Wu Cong will not let those men from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan kill Jiang Chen. The real treasures are hidden in the ancient pagoda, and perhaps the exit to the outside world is also inside it. If we can’t get the stone door open, we might just be trapped here forever.”

“This Jiang Chen is really lucky! Others only found one bronze plate, but he got three of them!”

.....

A lot of people in the crowd started commenting on the satiation. Each time Jiang Chen appeared before a crowd, he would stir them all up.

“Alright, Jiang Chen, give me all your bronze plates, and I’ll make sure no one here can kill you. What do you think?”

Wu Cong said.

“Bullshit! Who the fuck are you? You have no rights to decide whether I live or die!”

Jiang Chen glanced at Wu Cong from the side of his eyes, giving

him absolutely no face.

Jiang Chen's words once again stirred up the crowd. This Jiang Chen was even more vicious than Big Yellow, he didn't even show any respect to the prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty!

It wasn't difficult to imagine how ugly Wu Cong's expression was even without looking at him. The prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty who had broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm before the age of 30, a respectable person in the Martial Saint Dynasty who had always sat up high, looking down on everyone else! No one had ever dared disobey his will, but someone had just humiliated him! This was unbearable!

“Jiang Chen, how dare you talk to me like that?!”

Wu Cong shouted out loudly.

“Hmph! I'm giving you face just by talking to you! Don't be a poser in front of daddy, I don't like that!”

Jiang Chen showed Wu Cong absolutely no respect! He now had the Ice Demon King as his secret weapon, and if he became angry, he would just kill everyone, including the prince. Wu Cong tried to kill Han Yan and Big Yellow before he got here, and this made Jiang Chen really angry. Those who tries to kill his brothers, regardless of power and status; Jiang Chen would treat them all in the same manner!

“How dare you?! Who gave you the audacity to talk like that to our prince?! You’re seeking death!”

Someone from the Martial Palace shouted. The man was an Early Combat Soul warrior, and he was clearly one of Wu Cong’s boot-lickers.

“Who the fuck are you, shouting in front of me? Did your parents not teach you any manners? If you make me angry, I’ll kill you on the spot!”

With his great energy, Jiang Chen shouted out loudly using the Sonic Hawk Cry. The sound waves flew toward the man and caught him off guard. Being hit by the sound-wave, the man’s body immediately started trembling nonstop.

“Hmph! Garbage.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. If not for the fact that he didn’t want to reveal his secret weapon, the Ice Demon King, he might have begun slaughtering right now. All these smug and self-righteous geniuses who felt themselves superior to everyone else were nothing but farts in front of Jiang Chen, he could kill them all without showing any mercy.

“Enough!”

Wu Lang suddenly shouted out loudly. He unleashed his energy, the energy of a Mid Combat Soul warrior! It instantly frightened



everyone.

“What we have to do now is enter the ancient pagoda. I don’t care what scores you all have, you can settle them once we’ve entered the pagoda. Fighting here will do us no good at all, if any of the bronze plates are damaged, we will all be trapped here forever.”

Wu Lang spoke slowly. After hearing what he said, even Wu Cong didn’t say a word, because he knew Wu Lang was right. What they needed to do now was enter the ancient pagoda. Everyone’s main goal was to find treasures and opportunities in the Island of Ice. Since all nine bronze plates had been found, the pressing matter now was to open up the stone door and enter the pagoda. If not, with Jiang Chen’s character, if these people continued provoking him, he might just destroy all bronze plates, and then no one would be able to leave the place.

“Looks like there is a smart man here.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. Wu Lang had left quite a good impression of him. After all, Wu Lang did help Han Yan before Jiang Chen arrived. Although he had no idea why Wu Lang wanted to help them, he did at least not hit a person who was already down.

“Jiang Chen, place all the bronze plates you have onto the stone door, then we’ll open it together. Once we’re inside the ancient pagoda, in the name of this prince, I, Wu Lang will protect all of you.”

Wu Lang said to Jiang Chen. His words had clearly put him on the same side as Jiang Chen. This made a lot of people feel puzzled! A prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty, helping a rogue cultivator? This was really unusual.

“I appreciate your kindness, prince. But, it’s not that easy for them to kill me. Of course, we need to enter the ancient pagoda, but I have a condition.”

Jiang Chen said.

## Chapter 335 – Humiliating The Prince

---

The crowd once again threw their glance onto Jiang Chen. Even those disciples from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan who were gnashing their teeth in anger had stopped talking, they knew this wasn't the right time to fight with Jiang Chen. He had three bronze plates with him, and including the one Han Yan had, the group had a total of four bronze plates, nearly half of all nine bronze plates.

Four bronze plates were more than enough to give Jiang Chen the right to speak.

“What conditions do you have?”

Wu Cong asked. From his voice, it wasn't hard to understand how angry he was.

“My condition is simple. Once the stone door is opened up, me and my brothers will be the first ones to enter, after that comes the others. You and those from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect will be last, especially you; I want you to bet the last person to enter the pagoda. This is my condition, very simple, right?”

With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen gave out his condition.

“What did you just say?!”

Wu Cong instantly became enraged and shouted out. He was a

prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty, a mighty Mid Combat Soul warrior! None had ever dared walk before him, but this guy asked him to be the last person to enter the ancient pagoda! Not only this, he had to wait until all the Divine Core warriors entered the pagoda, only then could enter. This was simply a big insult!

“The fuck? Jiang Chen is clearly going against Wu Cong, his condition is really cruel! I think it’s just to piss off the prince, and all those men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect.”

“Precisely! Jiang Chen clearly knows there is no way he can stop all these people from entering the ancient pagoda once the stone door opens, that’s the reason why he made this condition. With Wu Cong and all those geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect’s statuses, asking them to be the last ones to enter the pagoda is just a straight up insult to them.”

“Haha, this Jiang Chen is such a vengeful man, no one can afford to offend him! What he really wants is just to vent his anger. He’s a really daring man, looking down on the prince like that. It would be really difficult to find another person who is similar to him. Just wonder, will Wu Cong and those geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect agree to Jiang Chen’s condition?”

“On what grounds can they disagree with his condition? Jiang Chen has four bronze plates with him, almost half of all the required bronze plates; that gives him the right to name his condition! Haha, daddy now has a chance to walk in front of a prince, this really excites me!”

.....

The small condition immediately stirred the crowd. Although it seemed small, when it came to Wu Cong, the whole situation was completely different.

In fact, once the stone door was opened, there was no difference between who enters first or second. If there really were treasures hidden within the ancient pagoda, no one could take them all at once. But for Wu Cong, the Shangguan Clan, and the Myriad Sword Sect, Jiang Chen's purpose wasn't as simple as it seemed. They were all highly-revered men who were used to being respected no matter where they went, but now, they were asked to be the last ones to enter the ancient pagoda; it was no different than directly insulting them!

The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were behaving much better than previously. There was after all a prince standing behind them. On the other side, Wu Cong was extremely furious! He was clenching his teeth so tightly that even cracking sounds could be heard. He almost leapt onto Jiang Chen with the intention of tearing him to pieces.

“Wakaka, Little Chen, you're really cruel! But, I like this condition!”

Big Yellow burst into laughter. He didn't even try to hide his cheerful mood, as he never had a good impression of this prideful prince. This prince was also trying to kill him just moments ago.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you insult me?! Who gave you the audacity to do that?!”

Wu Cong’s energy violently shook for a moment, and he was filled with extreme killing intent.

“Get rid of that look of superiority; what’s wrong with insulting you? Let me tell you, who has the most bronze plates? The one who does will have the right to name his condition! Daddy has four bronze plates right here, and each of us will use one; my condition is that simple. If you guys agree, I’ll place these bronze plates onto the stone door and open it up, but if you guys don’t agree, me and my brothers will leave this place with the bronze plates and find an exit somewhere else. Once we find it, we will leave the Island of Ice. Daddy has found an incredible amount of treasures so far, so I don’t really care about those treasures hidden within the ancient pagoda.”

Jiang Chen was immensely pleased with himself as he spoke.

“Jiang Chen, do you really believe you guys can run away from us? Don’t be so naïve!”

Ling Du pointed at Jiang Chen with the folding fan in his hand.

“Hmph! I will prove you my words. Worst case scenario, all of us die here together. But let me tell you, it’s not certain who will be the first to die!”

Jiang Chen's energy shook violently as well. A blood red dragon emerged from the top of his head, then his Blood and Qi became much stronger. He was like an ancient barbaric beast brimming with explosive energy!

Everyone could tell that Jiang Chen wasn't joking, especially those who had witnessed his approaches. They knew how brutal Jiang Chen could be, and he also had a formidable cultivation which allowed him to kill Shangguan Yilei and defeat Shangguan Yilong with just a single strike. If the situation really entered a worst-case scenario, none of them would be able to enter the ancient pagoda, and the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect would both suffer losses as well.

"I think the condition is acceptable. None of you are going to suffer any losses, it is merely who enters first and who enters last. You guys should just agree to it and stop wasting time. The most important thing right now is to enter the ancient pagoda as soon as possible."

Wu Lang said with a faint smile on his face. At the same time, he gazed at Wu Cong and found his face to be extremely red. This brought him a lot of joy, because this was the first time he had seen Wu Cong take a blow to his face. Wu Lang couldn't help but secretly give Jiang Chen a thumbs up.

"Wu Lang, you are a prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty as well, why are you helping some outsiders?"

Wu Cong shouted toward Wu Lang.

“You don’t have the rights to tell me what to do. I, Wu Lang will help anyone I want to. You can also choose not to agree with Jiang Chen’s condition.”

Wu Lang had never given Wu Cong any face, as they were enemies.

“Prince, why don’t we just agree to the condition first? We can kill them once we’re inside the ancient pagoda.”

Yang Yun said to Wu Cong through his Divine Sense.

Wu Cong threw a snake-like glare toward Jiang Chen. It almost seemed like fire was going to burst out from his eyes. After a short moment of thought, he said, “No one has ever insulted me before, you’re the first! Therefore, I swear I’ll make you die in the most miserable way possible! Once we’re all inside the ancient pagoda... that will be the time of your death!”

“There are many people out there who wants to kill me, but I’m still alive and kicking, right in front of you. Since you’ve agreed to my condition, move aside. Remember, you’ll be the last one who enters the ancient pagoda, and if you enter before anyone else, you are a turtle’s egg.”<sup>[1](#)</sup>

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes as he spoke. If this prince really wanted to kill him no matter what, Jiang Chen couldn’t mind killing him once inside the pagoda. If not for the fact that he was



currently weaker than Wu Cong, he would have already struck him by now, and wouldn't waste his breath on him.

As for the Ice Demon King, that was the biggest secret weapon Jiang Chen had right now, and he wouldn't use it unless the situation absolutely called for it.

Wu Cong's expression became even uglier because the bastard in front of him just wouldn't stop insulting him! He was a proud prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty, but this guy just compared him to a turtle's egg! This was ridiculous! Wu Cong made up his mind, he would definitely tear Jiang Chen into pieces once they were inside the ancient pagoda; he would never allow Jiang Chen to escape from the Island of Ice.

Jiang Chen walked past Wu Cong without even looking at him, then he continued walking toward the stone door. At the same time, Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow followed behind. When they walked past Wu Cong, Big Yellow did not forget to add salt to injury, "Sigh, what a prince! But, he has to walk behind everyone else, how tragic."

Wu Cong nearly exploded from anger. If not for the fact that Jiang Chen was holding four plates, he would have already killed these guys. But now, he could only suppress his anger.

There were nine holes in the stone door, and five of them had been filled with bronze plates. What remained were the last four bronze plates which were in Jiang Chen and Han Yan's hands.

Jiang Chen took the bronze plate in Han Yan's hand, then he place all four of them into the holes in the stone door. For so long, he had no clue what these bronze plates exactly were for, but now he knew; these bronze plates were keys to the ancient pagoda. But, Jiang Chen still felt as if these bronze plates had some other functions, it was just that he didn't know anything about them yet.

Buzz...

A buzzing sound started coming from the stone door. At the same time, it also shot out numerous golden lights. Following the appearance of these lights, the stone door started shaking and producing some cracking sounds.

“Look, the stone door is opening! What a dazzling light, my eyes hurt just by looking at it!”

“The door is finally opening! I wonder what kind of rare and precious treasures we can find inside!”

“I can't wait to enter! Once the stone door is completely open, we'll be able to find those hidden treasures and opportunities! This is the greatest chance that none can afford to miss!”

.....

Every single person was holding their breath, waiting for the stone door to be completely opened.

The golden lights became brighter and brighter, and finally, the stone door started opening up slowly. But at the same time, some changes were happening to all nine bronze plates placed on the stone door! All of them were merging together at an incredible speed, and in just the blink of an eye, they had merged into one single bronze plate. This bronze plate was emanating a golden light, and looked incredibly mystical. Although it was the same size as before, it didn't look broken any longer.

With quick hands, Jiang Chen instantly grabbed the golden bronze plate and stored it into his storage ring. Just as he had expected, the bronze plates did have some other functionality.

Jiang Chen was very fast and smooth, and the golden light was so bright that it covered everything. Also adding the fact that the four of them were standing in front of the stone door, preventing everyone from getting a clear look at it, no one were able to see what happened to the bronze plates, or Jiang Chen quickly placing the new bronze plate in his storage ring.

Crack...

The stone door was slowly opening up, and soon, it was finally opened up completely with a dull banging sound.

“Let's go!”

Jiang Chen shouted, and became the first person to sprint into the ancient pagoda. Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow immediately followed after him and disappeared from the scene.

“Haha, Wu Cong, see you later!”

Wu Lang laughed at Wu Cong, then he followed after Jiang Chen and entered the ancient pagoda. There were also two men from the Martial Palace who followed Wu Lang.

“The stone door has opened up, let’s go find our opportunities!”

“Haha, my fortune is coming! Once I find it, I will be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm!”

.....

Many people burst into a joyful laughter as they sprinted toward the stone door and entered the pagoda.

Looking at this situation, Wu Cong could only clench his fist tightly and let the flames of fury burn inside the heart. In fact, he could actually enter the pagoda right now, but as a proud prince, he cherished his face. There was no way he would let his proud name be associated with a turtle’s egg.

---

Notes:

[1\]](#) Basically a son of a bitch.

# Chapter 336 – Treasure Vault

---

“Prince, we must kill this guy!”

Ling Du gnashed his teeth in anger as he spoke.

“I’ll make sure he dies in the most miserable way possible!”

Wu Cong was clenching his fist so tightly that cracking sounds could be heard from it. What happened today was his life’s greatest insult! If he couldn’t kill Jiang Chen, that humiliation would follow him for the rest of his life!

Within the ancient pagoda, Jiang Chen and his group were the first ones to enter, and when they went past the stone door, they were immediately stunned by what was presented in front of them.

It was an entirely different world behind the stone door! In front of them there was a vast plain field, and beyond the field there were many ancient palaces, and they were built like mazes. Some of them were glowing with strange lights, making them look very unusual.

The world in front of them did not match the ancient pagoda they saw from the outside.

“We are inside the ancient pagoda?”

Han Yan asked in astonishment.

“There were seven levels within the ancient pagoda. Initially, I thought we’d have to find the staircase leading us to the second and third levels as quickly as possible, but now, I don’t think we need to do that.”

Nangong Wentian casually shrugged his shoulders.

“Looks like this is the inner world within the ancient pagoda. It doesn’t have seven levels, like we saw on the outside. This is a completely isolated dimension. Look at those palaces in front of us, I’m sure there are some treasures hidden inside. Let’s go there as soon as possible and try to get as many treasures as we can. If we can’t get them, we’ll just keep going further. Remember, move quickly, and try not to bump into Wu Cong or anyone from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen simply leapt forward and started flying toward the palaces.

“Little Chen, those people won’t let us go easily.”

Han Yan said.

“Hmph! I’m scared of any of them, I just don’t want to fight them at the moment. If they really push me to hard, I don’t care if he is a prince or whatnot, I will still kill him.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. There was no way he could be a match for Wu Cong with his current strength, the gap between them was huge. But, since Jiang Chen got the Ice Demon King, he didn't need to fear Wu Cong. However, the Ice Demon King was Jiang Chen's secret weapon, and he didn't want to reveal it unless necessary. Furthermore, Wu Cong is a prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and also a peerless genius from the Martial Palace! If Jiang Chen really killed him, he would be put into an endless amount of troubles, and Jiang Chen did not want to face that right now.

“Little Chen, do you have any idea why that Wu Lang helped us?”

Han Yan curiously asked.

“Within the Martial Palace and Martial Saint Dynasty, there is only one person who is willing to help us, and that is Wu Jiu. Just moments ago, I heard someone mention that Wu Lang is the son of the Ninth Emperor. My guess is, Wu Jiu is the Ninth Emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and this is the reason why Wu Lang was willing to help us. If not, with the prideful attitudes of these princes, we could call ourselves lucky if they don't come and seek trouble with us.”

Big Yellow said.

“Wu Jiu? Ninth Emperor?”<sup>[1](#)</sup>

What Big Yellow saw was correct, Wu Jiu was from the Martial Palace, and he had quite a prominent position there. Although

Jiang Chen was indeed a genius, he didn't think that the Martial Palace would pay much attention to him just because of that, so if there really was someone helping him out in secret, it must be Wu Jiu. Perhaps it was just as Big Yellow said, Wu Jiu was the Ninth Emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“I never expected it to be like that! Little Chen, did you know that the person you save back in Inferno Hell was the Ninth Emperor, one of the most powerful men in the entire Eastern Continent?”

Han Yan said with mixed feelings.

“We're not sure about Brother Jiu's real identity, and now is not the time to think about that. What we need to do now is take all treasures we can, and find the exit. We need to return to the Black Sect and save Little Yu.”

When Jiang Chen thought about Yan Chenyu, he became really impatient. She had been in a coma for too long, and since Jiang Chen had found the Nine Solar Holy Water, once he left the Island of Ice, the first thing he would do was save her, completing his most important goal.

“Look! There are so many palaces, and all of them are filled with treasures!”

“Haha, some of the palaces are glowing! I'm sure those lights come from the treasures! I'm going to be rich!”



“There are dozens of palaces here, and if all of them are filled with treasures... this is unimaginable!”

.....

Everyone were shocked by what they saw, and they immediately yelled out in joy. This place was the real center of the Island of Ice, all the valuable treasures were hidden here, and if they were lucky enough to find something that could greatly improve their cultivations, once they left the Island of Ice, their statuses and positions would greatly improve as well.

Jiang Chen and his group were the fastest. When the other men came in, they were nowhere to be seen.

Right now, Jiang Chen and his group had come to the maze of palaces. Led by Big Yellow, the group entered a palace.

“Wait, there are defense mechanisms here.”

Jiang Chen stopped Han Yan and Nangong Wentian who were trying to sprint right into the palace. Although they had passed the palace’s main gate, there was a defense mechanism right beyond the gate. They would have to break it if they wanted to proceed further.

“It’s just a simply defense mechanism, let this master dog do the work.”

Big Yellow said, very pleased with him. Breaking defense mechanisms had always been his specialty. Without wasting any time, he stood up on his back legs and used his front legs to draw a few times in front of him. Soon, he created a glowing defense mechanism, then he threw it at the defense mechanism in front of him. With a popping sound, the palace's defense mechanism was immediately broken.

“Big Yellow, you're really good!”

Nangong Wentian gave Big Yellow a thumbs up.

“Of course! This master dog has mastered the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, there are no defense mechanisms underneath the Heavens I cannot break!”

Big Yellow raised his head proudly, staying true to his narcissistic personality.

A path was revealed in front of them after the defense mechanism was broken. Jiang Chen scanned the entire area with the Great Soul Derivation skill and found no dangers. Then, he led the group and walked along the path.

Soon, the group of four came to the end of the path and reached the inner parts of the palace. Within the palace's limited space, there was a tall bookshelf, and on top of this bookshelf there were some neatly placed scrolls. All these scrolls were covered in dust, they had clearly been here for a long period of time.

“So many scrolls! There are also books... this is a library!”

Han Yan was surprised by what they found. He simply took the scroll nearest to him and opened it up.

“Powerful Hegemon’s Three Heavens, a Mid-Ranked Earth Combat Skill! Damn it, don’t tell me everything here is combat skill and cultivation skills? I just picked one at random, and it was an Earth-Ranked skill, this is incredible!”

Han Yan cried out in shock.

“Mid-Ranked Earth Cultivation Skill, the Black Earth Skill!”

Nangong Wentian opened up a scroll as well.

“Domineering Firmament Skill, a High-Ranked Earth Combat Skill, what the fuck!”

“This is a movement skill!”

“Oh Heavens, this is a Low-Ranked Heavenly Combat Skill! Too bad it’s not the complete version, but even so, this is really shocking! Everything here is a cultivation, combat, or movement skill! This is an enormous treasure vault! If we take away everything here, we could grow a superpower in the Eastern Continent!”

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian were extremely shocked! There were hundreds of skills here, and the lowest level was a Low-Ranked one!

“Little Chen, if we take everything here back to the Black Sect, I believe that in just a hundred years, the Black Sect will become a massive existence in the Eastern Continent!”

Han Yan’s eyes lit up.

“Fine, let’s hurry up and store all these skills. There are dozens of palaces here, and this is only the first one we’ve found. I’m sure there are more good stuff in the other palaces, let’s be quick!”

After saying that, Jiang Chen waved his sleeve and stored the entire bookshelf into his storage ring.

---

Notes:

[1\]](#) Jiu (九) means nine. Xuan Ye also called him Lord Jiu (九爷 – Jiu Ye – Lord Ninth)

## Chapter 337 – Second Broken Sword Piece

---

The entire area of palaces was seethed with excitement. Those who had come here had broken the defense mechanisms of some palaces and entered the treasure vaults, and started grabbing everything there like crazy.

“Treasures! These are the real treasures! There are so many pills here!”

“This place is filled with all kinds of rare treasures, I’ll grab as many of them as I can! Once I leave this Island of Ice, I’ll definitely see remarkable progress in my cultivation!”

“Hurry up, we need to be faster! If the men from the Martial Palace, Shangguan Clan, and Myriad Sword Sect get here, they will definitely stop us from getting anything here!”

.....

Everyone had become crazy! None could remain calm when facing such enormous amounts of treasures! There were countless pills, numerous rare treasures, and a huge collection of skills! If any single group were to obtain all the treasures here, they would definitely become a superpower in the Eastern Continent within ten years!

Of course, they could only become a superpower like the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, it was still very difficult to match the Martial Saint Dynasty. It wasn’t easy to break

through to the Combat King realm, after all.

Not long after that, Wu Cong finally arrived with the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. He was so furious that the flames of fury within his heart was about to become real flames. After they arrived inside the ancient pagoda, Wu Cong turned to the men around him and said, “Find that Jiang Chen! Remember, his life belongs to me!”

“Yes, prince!”

The men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect shouted at the same time. After that, they turned into trails of light and flew toward the palaces. Their bodies were covered with powerful energies, and flames of fury burned within their hearts as well. Their hatred toward Jiang Chen was not any weaker than Wu Cong’s hatred. If they failed to kill Jiang Chen on this Island of Ice, all their face would disappear down the drain.

But soon after, their anger toward Jiang Chen had started dimming down because of the treasure vaults’ tremendous attraction. Even Wu Cong was attracted, and started plundering the palaces.

In their eyes, Jiang Chen was dead meat, and they were going to kill him sooner or later, but these treasures couldn’t wait. If they didn’t get as much as possible right now, they wouldn’t be able to find any treasures in the future. These treasures were also simply irresistible.

One day later, all the palaces had been swept clean, and the group of four proceeded further into the ancient pagoda, greatly delighted.

“Wakaka, what a great harvest! This master dog can’t even remember how many natural treasures I ate!”

“Haha, all those palaces were filled with treasures! Although some of them were empty, most of them were just amazing! I completely lost count on how many Mortal and Earth Restoration Pills we found; we don’t have to worry about lacking cultivation resources any longer!”

“If we were to give all these resources to the Black Sect, it would become a real superpower within just a few years, and Sect Chief would be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm!”

The amount of treasures these few guys had obtained was huge, and Jiang Chen was the one who gained the most! The amount of treasures and resources he had right now was simply unimaginable! This trip to the Island of Ice was definitely not a waste of time!

“Jiang Chen, die!”

Right at this moment, a world-shaking shout suddenly sounded out from behind their backs. The group of four immediately turned around and saw Wu Cong flying toward them with intense killing intent.

“Damn it, that prince has finally caught up with us! It looks like he’s going to skin us alive!”

Big Yellow said in a gloomy manner.

“Wu Cong has reached the Mid Combat Soul realm, and he’s also a prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty; I’m sure he has some really powerful skills. We’re no match for him.”

Han Yan furrowed his brows.

“Little Chen, should we run away from him?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“Run where? We still haven’t found the exit, so there’s no way we can get out from here. You guys just stand aside, let me deal with him.”

Killing intent could be found in Jiang Chen’s eyes. If he was pushed too far, he would just use the Ice Demon King and kill Wu Cong. Jiang Chen wasn’t afraid to kill this prince; he was daring enough poke a hole in the Heavens, let alone kill some tiny prince.

Wu Cong came toward him with incredible speed. In just the blink of an eye, he arrived in front of Jiang Chen. Behind him was the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, they were here as well with extreme anger. They were looking to kill Jiang Chen on the spot.



“Jiang Chen, kneel down right now!”

Wu Cong pointed his finger at Jiang Chen and ordered, acting as if he was superior to everyone else.

“Hmph!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he suddenly unleashed the True Dragon Palm toward Wu Cong and the group. When dealing with this kind of man, speaking would only be a waste of time.

“Fine, fine! You’re just a tiny ant, but you still try to attack me, what a reckless guys! Let me teach you the true meaning of death! By offending me, a prince, you are destined to end in a miserable way!”

Wu Cong simply counter-attacked with a bright beam. The beam hit the True Dragon Palm, causing it to shatter in an instant.

This was the huge gap between them! No matter how strong Jiang Chen was, there was no way he could compensate for the large gap between the Peak Mid Divine Core realm and the Mid Combat Soul realm.

Unless Jiang Chen broke through to the Late Divine Core realm, he wouldn’t be able to fight a Mid Combat Soul warrior, and when his opponent was a Mid Combat Soul genius like Wu Cong, Jiang Chen had to at least reach the Peak Late Divine Core realm in order

to fight him.

“You’re just a tiny ant in my eyes, I can easily squeeze and kill you! Since you don’t want to kneel down before me, I’ll crush your knees!”

Wu Cong’s dark hair fluttered in the wind. He stretched his palm forward with tremendous force and pushed it toward Jiang Chen.

“So strong!”

Nangong Wentian’s expression changed. A genius like Wu Cong was incredibly powerful; they could only fight with him after breaking through to the Combat Soul realm.

Nonetheless, an existence like Wu Cong gave both Han Yan and Nangong Wentian tremendous pressure, and a powerful fighting will. They felt like they needed to break through to the Combat Soul realm as soon as possible.

Many people watched what was happening from far. Some of them couldn’t help but let out pitying sighs. In the end, Jiang Chen couldn’t escape from Wu Cong. With this strike, what awaited Jiang Chen was certain death. Unless a miracle appeared, there was no way Jiang Chen would be able to defend against Wu Cong’s attack.

Facing Wu Cong’s formidable attack, Jiang Chen just stood still without moving at all. A cold killing intent could be seen within

his eyes. He had just communicated with the Ice Demon King through his Divine Sense, and since Wu Cong was seeking death, Jiang Chen wouldn't be courteous to him any longer.

“Stop!”

Right at this moment, Wu Lang appeared once again. He unleashed a golden beam which collided with Wu Cong's gigantic palm, shattering it.

“Wu Lang, you again!”

Wu Cong was really angry this time. This interruption did make him forget the cold aura he sensed just now. Right after Wu Lang stopped him, the cold aura had suddenly disappeared.

In Wu Cong's mind, Wu Lang had just saved Jiang Chen. But, little did he know, Wu Lang had actually just saved his life! That cold aura came from the Ice Demon King, and if Wu Long was only just a little bit slower, Jiang Chen would have unleashed the Ice Demon King. With the Ice Demon King's formidable strength, there was no way Wu Cong could defend against its attack.

“Wu Cong, you're a prince, why do you want to kill a Divine Core warrior? This is too embarrassing!”

Wu Lang arrived at the scene and positioned himself in front of Jiang Chen.

The fact that Wu Lang had helped Jiang Chen once again made Jiang Chen feel that he must be related to Wu Jiu, and had been instructed by Wu Jiu to take care of Jiang Chen in here. If not, this prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty would definitely not be so helpful to an outsider.

“Move away!”

Wu Cong shouted loudly toward Wu Lang. A longsword as thin as a cicada’s wing suddenly appeared in his hand. Judging from how Wu Cong was behaving, if Wu Lang really didn’t want to move aside, he would immediately strike.

“If I say no?”

Wu Lang was just as overbearing as Wu Cong was. Both of them were Mid Combat Soul warriors, and he had no fear of Wu Cong.

“Then, you shall die together with him!”

Wu Cong’s eyes turned extremely red. Never in his life had he been so angry at someone. In an instant, the longsword in his hand shot out countless sword energy which weaved into a gigantic web, and slashed toward Wu Lang with a second delay.

Ha!

Wu Lang shouted. He stretched both palms forwards and unleashed a thick and heavy seal, then he threw it toward the

gigantic sword web.

Boom!

It was a tremendous collision between the attacks of two Mid Combat Soul geniuses! The shockwaves were incredibly devastating, and nearly shattered the void!

Bang!

Right at this moment, another loud banging sound was heard. It was so loud that even the ground started shaking.

This loud sound did not come from the collision between the two princes' attacks, it came from somewhere else within this Island of Ice. The people in the crowd immediately threw their glance into the far distance. What they saw was flaming waves soaring into the skies.

Swoosh!

At the same time, a 'swoosh' sound could be heard from the center of the flaming waves. It was the sound of a sword, a sound filled with joyful emotions. It was as if a sentient sword that had been keeping silent for too long had just found its master once again!

Hearing this sound, Jiang Chen's expression changed dramatically! He was really familiar with this sound! As if having

sensed something, the quiet broken sword within his storage ring suddenly jumped up in joy.

It was another broken sword part!

It was the sound produced by a broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword! It had sensed Jiang Chen's aura, that's why it was so happy.

Jiang Chen was unable to suppress the excitement in his heart! Without saying anything, he immediately flew toward the broken sword part.

“A treasure is revealing itself, it is definitely a peerless treasure!”

“Let's go check it out! The sound was so loud, I'm sure it's an extraordinary treasure!”

.....

Many people were shocked and started yelling around. Within this Island of Ice, the most exciting thing was when a treasure was revealed.

Therefore, the huge crowd immediately flew toward the direction of the sound. Of course, such turmoil immediately attracted both princes.

“Wu Cong, something good is coming, are you going to kill Jiang Chen now or get that treasure? Decide yourself!”

Wu Lang retracted his energy, turned around, and flew toward the sound as well.

“Hmph! I’ll get that treasure first then kill Jiang Chen later! Wu Lang, if you keep stopping me, don’t blame me for getting angry with you! I will kill that Jiang Chen today no matter what!”

Wu Cong coldly harrumphed. He put away the longsword and flew forwards with incredible speed. He quickly passed the crowd, and continued flying toward the source of the sound.

Even the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect started flying toward the treasure. The chaotic scene was now left with two men and one dog.

“Why did Little Chen react in such a big way?”

Nangong Wentian was startled.

“Let’s go check it out.”

Big Yellow said. After that, the trio started flying toward the same place as the rest.

## Chapter 338 – Magma's Heart

---

The sound the sword was emitting didn't seem to stop sounding out. The red flames were rolling around the sword and jumping into the sky like gigantic dragons. Within the Island of Ice, a lot of men were increasing the speed. They were all like trails of light as they rushed toward the place where the sudden change had occurred.

Jiang Chen couldn't restrain the excitement within his heart. He was really surprised that he was able to obtain the first broken sword part, but the appearance of the second part was just as surprising. He could sense the excitement coming from the second broken sword part, because it had sensed Jiang Chen.

“Old buddy, it has been a hundred years; we've finally reunited.”

A pleasant smile emerged onto Jiang Chen's face. He was incredibly happy right now! The two broken sword parts were the two most valuable things he had gotten on this Island of Ice! No one could understand how deep his relationship with the Heavenly Saint Sword was.

The two princes, as well as the Combat Soul geniuses from the Martial Palace, Shangguan Clan, and Myriad Sword Sect were the fastest group of people. They flew forwards like shooting stars, and soon entered the lead.

What they saw was a shocking scene.



About 6-7 kilometers in front of them there was a land of red magma. Thick smoke constantly rose from the magma, red colored smoke! And even from this far away, the crowd could feel the intense heat coming from the magma! It was so hot that every single man within the crowd was terrified!

Bang!

Right at this moment, the entire magma land started boiling. The red magma started shooting into the sky like gigantic dragons, and when the magma reached its maximum height, it would fall back into the magma pool, pounding into the magma surface with incredible force, causing the scorching hot magma to splash everywhere. It was a terrifying scene to witness!

“Oh Heavens, who would expect to see such a huge magma land here! Look at those magma pillars, they looked like countless flaming dragons! Their heat is incredible! I think that if a Divine Core warrior is hit by these magma pillars, he will burn to ashes in an instant!”

“This is too frightening! Truly a dangerous spot! Guys, look! There is a broken sword on top of the magma pillar!”

“Such a huge broken sword! I think it’s at least 30 meters tall! The loud sword cry we heard just now came from this broken sword!”

.....

The people in the crowd stared at the raging magma pillars, terrified. This was a dangerous spot, even a Combat Soul warrior would die if he jumped right into it!

Right now, every single person watched the broken sword hovering on top of the magma pillars. The broken sword was letting out loud cries as it emitted dazzling lights. The most shocking thing was, this broken sword was over 30 meters tall, and the energy overflowing from it caused those who looked at it to feel palpitations.

“It’s just a broken sword, but it can still produce such a mighty force, and even cause the magma to boil!”

“I’m certain this broken sword is an extremely rare treasure!”

Even the Combat Soul geniuses were shocked by what they saw.

“I was lucky enough to witness the Majestic Emperor’s King Weapon, but the aura leaking from this broken sword makes me feel as I’m looking at something superior to everything else, even King Weapons! Don’t tell me it’s actually an Emperor Weapon?”

Wu Cong stared at the broken sword, and he couldn’t but feel terrified. He had completely forgotten his intention to kill Jiang Chen, who stood not far away from him.

“What?! An Emperor Weapons?! That’s a weapon used by Combat Emperor warriors! We don’t even have a single Combat

Emperor warrior in the entire Eastern Continent, I've heard they only exist in the Divine Continent far away from us; only there can you find such mighty warriors!"

"The Divine Continent is the center of the Saint Origin Realm, it is a land filled with countless geniuses and great warriors; you can even find Saint Warriors there! In no way can the Eastern Continent compared with the Divine Continent! Remember the legend? The greatest Saint underneath the heavens swung his sword and sliced open the gate leading to the Realm of Immortals! That story always makes my blood boil!"

"If this truly is an Emperor Weapon, even if it's just a broken part of it, it's still an unimaginably mighty treasure!"

.....

No one could remain calm! An Emperor Weapon, even if it was a broken part of a whole, it was still enough to astonish all those who saw it.

Little did they know, they were underestimating this broken sword! In front of them was actually the number one Saint Weapon underneath the Heavens! Of course, a Saint Weapon was just too far away from them, it was so far that they couldn't even imagine that this broken sword was one! But, even though it was just an Emperor Weapon, it was still enough to make them daydream.

"Haha, this Emperor Weapon is mind! If I submit this broken

sword to the Majestic Emperor, I'm sure he will reward me greatly!"

Wu Cong let out a hearty laugh. He took a step forward, then he immediately started flying toward the top of the magma pillars.

Seeing this, although all the other people were tempted to do the same, none of them took a step forward. No one was daring enough to fight with the prince over an item.

"With the prince's ability, I'm sure he'll have no problems resisting the magma's high temperature. The broken sword will be his."

"I'm so envious! That is a broken part of an Emperor Weapon!"

"Once Wu Cong obtains the broken sword and submits it to the Majestic Emperor, I'm sure he'll be rewarded greatly. At that point of time, his status and position is going to move up another level."

.....

Everyone wore the same envious expression on their face. But, Jiang Chen was actually grinning! The Heavenly Saint Sword was a sentient weapon, and underneath the Heavens, no one other than him could control it!

Wu Cong unleashed a barrier made from Yuan energy around his body in order to resist the magma's intense heat. Soon after, he got

close to the broken sword.

“Haha, the Emperor Weapon, it is mine now!”

Wu Cong let out another hearty laugh. He stretched out his hand and grabbed toward the broken sword. Within a split second, he had completely grabbed the broken sword with his palm.

Hsss! The broken sword cried out and started violently trembling, as if it was calling for something, or someone.

“Hmph! Trying to take my Heavenly Saint Sword? You’re not fit for it!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He took a step forward and immediately appeared above the magma pillars. With the protection of the True Dragon Flame, the intense heat coming was nothing but a great supplement to him!

“Come!”

Jiang Chen softly shouted. Sensing the calling, the broken sword instantly escaped from Wu Cong’s grip and fell into Jiang Chen’s palm. In the blink of an eye, the sword that was original over 30 meters tall shrunk down into the size of a normal sword and laid down on Jiang Chen’s palm without moving a bit, as if it had entered its deepest slumber.

“What?!”

Wu Cong cried out in disbelief. He looked at Jiang Chen with a shocked expression.

“Jiang Chen, you again?! Give me back my Emperor Weapon!!”

Wu Cong felt like he was about to throw up a mouthful of blood.

“Haha, you want the sword? Come with me!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. He stored the broken sword into his storage ring, then he unleashed some flaming dragons and made them circulate around his body. After that, under the shocked eyes of the crowd, he immediately dived into the magma pool underneath him.

The magma immediately covered Jiang Chen, and he was suddenly nowhere to be found. Since the broken sword had been taken by Jiang Chen, all the magma pillars had finally fallen back into the magma pool, and everything became calm afterwards. However, the magma's intense heat was still there, and it stopped everyone from coming further.

“What happened just now? How did Jiang Chen take away that Emperor Weapon?”

“The fuck, Jiang Chen again?! This guy is truly amazing, even the Emperor Weapon was taken by him! He just jumped into the magma pool in order to escape from Wu Cong, I wonder if he can

withstand the deadly temperature?”

“The magma’s temperature is deadly, it’s not something anyone resist, only those Combat Soul warriors can do so, and I don’t think they can last for a long period of time.”

Everyone were shocked by what just happened; it had just happened too quickly. Just when the crowd thought Wu Cong was going to get the Emperor Weapon, Jiang Chen moved and took away the broken sword. After that, he just immediately dived into the magma in order to run away from Wu Cong.

Of course, it was the crowd’s opinion that Jiang Chen was trying to run away from Wu Cong, but only Jiang Chen himself knew the real reason for why he jumped into the magma pool.

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

All the Combat Soul warriors flew over and hovered above the magma pool. A Yuan energy barrier existed around all these warriors. While staring at the rumbling magma, they all wore ugly expressions.

“Prince, the magma’s temperature is extremely high, even we can’t stay in it for too long, so I think Jiang Chen will come out soon.”

Yang Yun said.

“I’m definitely going to kill him!”

Wu Cong’s hatred toward Jiang Chen reached new heights.

“Look, whirlpools are starting to emerge in the magma, it’s as if flaming dragon are swimming around within! The temperature is incredibly high, so the magma pool has obviously existed for a long time. If my prediction is correct, the magma pool has produced a Magma’s Heart!”

Someone said.

“Magma’s Heart?”

Hearing those words, looks of excitement immediately emerged on the faces of the Combat Soul warriors.

“The Magma’s Heart is indeed a rare treasure! If anyone can absorb it, not only can it help quench the body, it will also allow the person to control Fire Source, as well as give a great cultivation boost!”

Shangguan Yihong explained.

“Prince, it would be bad news for us if that Jiang Chen finds the Magma’s Heart! He already has the Emperor Weapon, and if he truly finds the Magma’s Heart, he will have benefited the most from this trip to the Island of Ice.”



Ling Du told Wu Cong.

“Hmph! I won’t let him find it, he’s still going to die by my hands, even if he hides within the magma! I’m going to kill him right now!”

Wu Cong coldly harrumphed. He took a step forward and dived into the magma pool, like a falling star.

After Wu Cong jumped into the magma pool, the other Combat Soul warriors immediately followed him. The Magma’s Heart was a rare opportunity for everyone, no one would let go of such a great opportunity.

In the blink of an eye, all the Combat Soul warriors had dived into the magma pool. As for the Divine Core warriors, they could only watch, as the temperature was simply too high. For them, diving in was no different from committing suicide. Although the Magma’s Heart was extremely valuable, their lives were still more important.

“Big Yellow, why did Little Chen dive into the magma? Is it really because he wants to run away from Wu Cong?”

Nangong Wentian asked, puzzled.

“Impossible, Little Chen doesn’t fear the Wu Cong, I’m sure he has his own reasons. The broken sword is such a mystical item, but

Little Chen managed to obtain it so easily, as if that sword originally belonged to him... This is truly hard to understand.”

Big Yellow shook his head. He couldn't find the exact reason behind this.

# Chapter 339 – Extremely Ruthless

---

“Big Yellow, is that broken sword really an Emperor Weapon?”

Han Yan curiously asked.

“Daddy has no idea, I only feel that it’s really awesome!”

Big Yellow shook his big head.

Nangong Wentian and Han Yan immediately looked at Big Yellow with disdain. Even an idiot could tell that the broken sword was awesome!

Bang!

Explosive sounds kept sounding out from the magma pool, and the magma waves were constantly rolling above the surface. No one knew if this was caused by those Combat Soul warriors, and the crowd could only watch from far away. Right at this moment, those Combat Soul warriors were the main characters, and the Divine Core warriors were the audience.

“An Emperor Weapon... do you guys think Jiang Chen will be able to keep it for himself?”

“I think that will be really difficult, he has too many enemies. Further, he has offended the prince, and with Wu Cong’s temper,

there is no way he will let Jiang Chen off. Not only is Jiang Chen not going to be able to keep the Emperor Weapon, he would have to be incredibly lucky in order to keep his own life.”

“That Wu Lang seems like he’s helping Jiang Chen, this makes me curious. I think, if Wu Lang is still on that Jiang Chen’s side, he might be able to keep his life.”

Everyone discussed the situation. For this trip to the Island of Ice, the young man whose name was Jiang Chen was no doubt the true main character. Grudges and kindness, it was all directly related to him. Everything so far had happened all because of him.

.....

Within the magma pool, after Jiang Chen dived in, he started swimming toward the bottom of the magma. He was searching for the spot with the highest temperature.

It was just like what Big Yellow had said; Jiang Chen was not afraid of Wu Cong. The reason he jumped into the magma pool was not because he wanted to run away; he wanted to utilize the environment to produce the new Heavenly Saint Sword!

“I have several hundred Combat Weapons right now, and I just found some more in the palaces. Since I have two parts of the Heavenly Saint Sword, I can just utilize this magma environment and merge all Combat Weapons with the Heavenly Saint Sword, giving it a new life. The True Dragon Flame and the magma around me is more than enough to do so.”

Jiang Chen's two eyes shone brightly. He had never thought he'd be able to see the Heavenly Saint Sword so quickly. Luckily, he had prepared everything for it! All the Combat Weapons he had were more than enough for him to give the sword a new life.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen felt he was really lucky. In order to merge the Heavenly Saint Sword, he needed to be in a special environment, and this magma pool was the best place he could pick. The temperature here could help him merge all those combat weapons very quickly.

Jiang Chen was searching for the warmest spot here. Not only can it help him temper his Combat Weapons, it could also help temper his body. Most importantly, he was protected by the True Dragon Flame, and he had a strong body, that's why he didn't fear the magma's intense temperature. An environment like this was actually beneficial to him.

The magma behind Jiang Chen was violently moving. Jiang Chen knew it was Wu Cong and the other Combat Soul warriors.

"This magma pool is more than 300 meters deep, and the intense temperature down there is not something all of you can resist. If you want to find me, come to the bottom, if you can."

Jiang Chen sneered. He didn't take Wu Cong and the other men seriously. In an environment like this, he was like a fish in the ocean.

Soon, Jiang Chen reached the bottom of the magma pool. With the Great Soul Derivation skill, he could easily sense everything around him. Within a split second, he had found the warmest spot. Upon finding that spot, he turned towards it direction, and swam toward it like a fish. This his surprise, he found something not far in front of him, a human-head sized flaming red crystal! It just hovered in the middle of the magma, constantly rotating.

“Magma’s Heart!”

Jiang Chen cried out in surprise. With his vast knowledge, he could easily tell that this red crystal was a matured Magma’s Heart!

“Fuck, why does daddy have such good luck? This is like money falling down from the sky! If I absorb this Magma’s Heart, I’ll be able to break through to the Late Divine Core Realm, or perhaps even reach the Peak Late Divine Core Realm!”

Jiang Chen was incomparably excited! His luck simply defied the Heavens! After absorbing the Magma’s Heart, not only would he see a great surge in his cultivation, he would also be able to control all the magma here freely. With this ability, he would be able to perfectly temper the Heavenly Saint Sword!

It was all because of this Magma’s Heart that this area had the highest temperature within the entire magma pool. Without hesitating, Jiang Chen immediately took the Magma’s Heart. It was such a rare treasures that no one could really hope to find one.

“It’s going to take me some time to absorb this Magma’s Heart. If

Wu Cong and the rest of the men can't find me during that time, they will definitely attack Brother Yan and his group. I need to inform Big Yellow, ask them to hide first."

Jiang Chen thought to himself. Due to the harsh environment here, it was unrealistic to inform Big Yellow via his Divine Sense. But, with the help of the Great Soul Derivation Skill, it was a completely different story.

"Big Yellow, I found the Magma's Heart, and I need to absorb it in the bottom of this magma pool. You guys find a place to hide, wait for me before we leave this place."

Outside the magma pool, Big Yellow wore a calm expression. But when he suddenly received Jiang Chen's message, both his ears stood up in an instant.

"Brother Yan, Brother Nan, Little Chen has found the Magma's Heart, and he's going to absorb it down there. I think that will take some time, so he asked us to hide somewhere first."

Big Yellow whispered to the other two men.

"Little Chen truly has great luck, he actually got the Magma's Heart! But, the Island of Ice's exit obviously won't appear anytime soon, and since we can't leave... where should we hide?"

Han Yan asked.

“Just leave this place.”

Big Yellow Dog replied.

The trio prepared to leave the place and go hide somewhere, but suddenly, Nangong Wentian stopped Big Yellow and Han Yan.

“Brother Nan, what are you doing?”

Han Yan asked.

“Hehe, it would be really boring if we just left like this, look at them.”

Nangong Wentian let out a sinister laugh, then he threw a malicious glance toward the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect who stood not far in front of them.

Kakaka...

The trio started laughing all together. After that, they started walking toward the two superpowers. Since all the Combat Soul warriors had entered the magma pool to search for the Magma's Heart, only Divine Core warriors remained outside. The trio could easily finish them off.

Excluding those few men from the Shangguan Clan who were killed in the Sky Garden, there were still a few dozen men here



from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. When they saw the trio walking toward them, their expressions immediately changed.

“What are you guys trying to do?!”

A Peak Divine Core disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect cried out.

The cry immediately drew the crowd’s attention. Many people threw their glances over in hopes of finding out what was going on. With their understanding of this trio, they could easily tell that the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were in trouble.

“Don’t tell me these three guys are taking the opportunity where all Combat Soul warriors aren’t here to attack the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect?”

“Fuck, that’s highly possible! There is nothing this trio doesn’t dare do, especially that dog! I believe the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are finished!”

“All of them are geniuses, and if they all die here, the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect will suffer great losses!”

.....

The crowd was filled with mixed emotions.

“What are we trying to do? Can’t you guys tell?”

Han Yan said with a sneer.

“Did you guys think that daddy came here to chit chat?”

While saying that, a giant ruler suddenly appeared in Nangong Wentian’s hand. With great speed, he simply swung it toward the leading man.

Bam!

The miserable Late Divine Core disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect was no match for Nangong Wentian, he could only let out a miserable shriek before being killed by Nangong Wentian’s giant ruler.

Everyone from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword were shocked. Their opponent had just killed one of their friends without any warning, showing absolutely no mercy.

“You guys are courting death! Taking the opportunity where senior disciple Ling and senior disciple Yang aren’t around to attack us, you guys are going to die miserably!”

“Let me warn you, don’t get yourself into trouble! The Shangguan Clan is not something you can afford to offend!”

These arrogant geniuses were clearly all afraid. They had finally met some truly ruthless men, and they couldn't suppress the fear within them.

“You're still so arrogant even at this moment, this is enough!”

Nangong Wentian attacked with great speed once again, and the razor sharp Myriad Star Ruler pierced another guy's body, shattering all his vitals with the energy within.

Roar!

Big Yellow roared out, then he threw his majestic body into the group, ramming into all those who stood in his way. At the same time, Han Yan stretched out his devil claws and started attacking. The trio were like three hungry wolves in the middle of a pack of sheep; they slaughtered like there was no tomorrow!

Wahh! ...

Miserable shrieks constantly sounded out from the scene. In just a few breaths time, all the Divine Core disciples from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect had been killed by the trio. The trio left the place after completing the task. Of course, Big Yellow didn't forget to take away the storage rings of all those who had died.

The enmity between the two sides had long ago reached a state

where it could only be resolved with the death of the other, that's why Han Yan and Big Yellow showed no mercy. They knew one fact that was for sure; if they were the ones captured by them, their ending would be no less miserable than that of those they just killed, especially Big Yellow. The enemy would definitely tear off his skin and cook him alive.

Looking at the departing trio, the people in the crowd all wore the same ugly expression. It wasn't difficult to imagine how angry those Combat Soul warriors from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect would be once they came out from the magma pool.

“Killing all the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, they are truly daring! I really wonder where they found that courage!”

“Serves them right! Those men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are too arrogant, they simply looked down upon everyone else! I respect those three guys!”

“Precisely! The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are both so determined to kill them, so why can't they fight back? Why are only the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect allowed to kill them? What kind of logic is that?”

.....

Many people agree with the trio's actions. Of course, they could only do so in mind and heart. If they were involved in this conflict, none of them would dare do as they pleased.

Wu Cong and the other Combat Soul warriors were still swimming around within the magma pool, restlessly searching for the Magma's Heart. None of them knew what had just happened outside.

# Chapter 340 – Late Divine Core Realm

---

The scorching magma was furiously boiling within the magma pool. As the Combat Soul warriors dived deeper, they started feeling uncomfortable, and their Qi and Blood was being severely agitated. Even breathing became hard for them.

“Can’t do it, this magma pool is too deep, my Divine Sense can’t even reach its bottom. The deeper I go, the higher the pressure and temperature becomes; I’m approaching my limit!”

Although there was a Yuan energy barrier protecting Shangguan Yilong’s body, he was sweating all over while rapidly panting.

The other peoples’ conditions weren’t any good either. Except for Wu Lang and Wu Cong who could still remain calm, all of them were in states similar to Shangguan Yilong.

“Can’t go any deeper, this is my limit! My body is going to be severely injured if I go any further. I wonder where Jiang Chen actually is... Never mind, I’ll just search for the Magma’s Heart at this depth, if I am lucky enough to find it; it will be my greatest fortune!”

Ling Du from the Myriad Sword Sect thought to himself. He quickly stopped diving deeper, and instead started searching from the Magma’s Heart at the depth where he currently stood.

On the other side, Wu Cong continued diving deeper. Not only did he want to find the Magma’s Heart, he also wanted to find out

where Jiang Chen was, and kill him.

None of these Combat Soul geniuses could use their Divine Sense within the magma, so they could only search a small area at a time. However, with the Great Soul Derivation skill, Jiang Chen could clearly see what these people were doing. When he found out what they were up to, a sneer immediately emerged onto his face.

“What a bunch of morons! The Magma’s Heart is the hottest part of the magma, the place it stays is the place with the highest temperature. These guys can’t even reach the bottom of this magma pool, and they still dream about finding it; what a joke!”

Jiang Chen wore a ridiculing expression. Not only was he staying at the warmest place, it was also the place where the pressure was the greatest. Within this magma pool, the high temperature wasn’t the only threat, even more frightening than the temperature was the pressure coming from the heavy magma. It carried an intense temperature that was more than enough to kill any living beings in an instant. Under such tremendous pressure, only Jiang Chen who had a strong body tempered by the Dragon Transformation Skill could stay for a long time. The two Mid Combat Soul warriors, Wu Cong and Wu Lang couldn’t do it at all.

Firmly believing that he wouldn’t be disturbed at this spot, Jiang Chen finally felt relieved. With his legs crossed, Jiang Chen sat down on the bottom of the magma pools. Countless fiery dragons were flying around his body, and on top of his head, the Magma’s Heart was rotating by itself.

“Magma’s Heart, I’m going to absorb you right now. Where I

land within the Late Divine Core realm is all up to you.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes shone brightly. Under the Dragon Transformation skill’s circulation, the Magma’s Heart started slowly melting. It turned into fiery red beams and entered Jiang Chen’s body from the top of his head.

Bang!

Right when the Magma’s Heart entered Jiang Chen’s body, a heat wave suddenly exploded out from within his body. It was very sudden, and very powerful! If it was any other person, his internal organs might have already been burned to crisps.

But since Jiang Chen had quite a few different flames within his body, as well as the mighty True Dragon Flame, he had a certain degree of immunity toward all flames, and it was also the reason why after the Magma’s Heart entered his body, all its scorching energy was immediately absorbed by the Dragon Transformation skill.

Buzz...

Right after the Magma’s Heart was absorbed, buzzing sounds immediately started sounding out from Jiang Chen’s body. It was the sound that only appeared whenever new Dragon Marks were formed. The Magma’s Heart carried the essence of the entire magma pool, and the energy it contained was extremely powerful. It made Jiang Chen feel like yelling out because of the pleasant feeling it gave him.



“What a powerful energy! 3,200 Dragon Marks, I’m going to break through!”

Jiang Chen was really excited. Only two minutes had passed by, and he was about to break through to the Late Divine Core realm. The required 3,200 Dragon Marks had all been fully formed, and with that, the Divine Core floating in his Qi Sea started violently trembling. Jiang Chen knew he needed an enormous amount of energy when breaking through, so he dared not hesitate. He immediately retrieved an enormous amount of Mortal Restoration Pills and swallowed them all like they held absolutely no value. Right at this moment, he had once again become a bottomless hole, and this hole could only be filled by an enormous amount of energy.

“My breakthrough is going to cause powerful fluctuations. If that Wu Cong finds out where I am, he will definitely come to stop me.”

Jiang Chen’s expression became serious. Without hesitating, he unleashed numerous mystical defense mechanisms, then he fused them together, turning them into a formations. After that, he placed the formations around him, perfectly hiding his aura so that no one could discover him.

If this formation was created outside the magma pool, anyone would easily be able to find it with their Divine Sense. However, the magma pool’s harsh environment prevent anyone from using their Divine Sense. Therefore, Jiang Chen was safe here.

Within the magma pool, Wu Cong swam around like an extremely fast fish. But too bad, not only could he not find out where Jiang Chen was, he didn't even find any signs of the Magma's Heart.

“Damn it! Even I can't hold on for too long at this depth, that Jiang Chen surely can't do it either! I don't believe he has the ability to go any deeper!”

Sweat poured down from Wu Cong's forehead. Obviously, even he couldn't get used to this depth. If he dived any deeper, the magma's pressure and temperature would kill him.

“Damn it, he must be hiding somewhere! I'm going to dig you out and tear you to pieces!”

Wu Cong said while gnashing his teeth in anger. He turned around and continued searching in another direction. But, he was still searching at the same depth, not daring to dive any deeper. Yet, trying to find Jiang Chen at that depth was just fat chance.

“The Yuan energy here is consumed too fast, my Qi and Blood is in an awful state, I need to leave!”

Ling Du from the Myriad Sword Sect couldn't hold on any longer. With a leaping motion, he immediately jumped out from the magma pool. At the same time, all the other Combat Soul warriors left the pool one after the other. When they came out of the magma pool, everyone single one of them were panting, and their bodies were soaked in sweat.

“I can’t stay any longer, if I don’t leave as soon as possible, I feel like I’m going to explode at any moment!”

Yang Yun panted while saying that. The temperature and pressure within the magma pool was too powerful!

Suddenly, Shangguan Yilong felt that something wasn’t right. He immediately turned around and looked into the distance, and what he saw was a few dead bodies piled up in a pool of blood. When he saw the clothes on those dead bodies, an indescribable anger immediately erupted within his heart.

“Bastard!”

Shangguan Yilong furiously shouted out. He took a step forward, instantly arriving next to the dead bodies. Right at this moment, all the other Combat Soul warriors had also seen the dead bodies. They too flew to the scene, fury erupting within their hearts.

“Who did this?!”

Ling Du growled. The majority of these dead warriors were from the Myriad Sword Sect.

“Who did this?! Who are daring enough to do this?!”

Xu Shuang became completely furious as well. This was a plain

challenge, no one had even done this to any disciple of the Myriad Sword Sect! All those who came to the Island of Ice were geniuses from the Myriad Sword Sect, each and every single one of them were extraordinary talents! All of them were pretty much guaranteed to become Combat Soul warriors in the future, but now, all of them had been mercilessly killed by someone!

Swoosh!

Shangguan Yihong threw his glance at a man nearby. With just a glance, that man immediately began trembling, as if he had just fallen into an ice cold cave.

“It’s Big Yellow, Han Yan, and that other guy!”

The man said without delaying even a split second. He dared not hide anything from them.

“After all of you dived into the magma pool, that trio walked up to them. After that, the trio just killed them... killed them all.”

The man continued speaking in a hesitating manner.

“Arghh! Those bastards! We were so focused on entering the magma pool that we forgot about those three bastards!”

Shangguan Yilong furiously growled.

“Damn it! We should have killed those three bastards before entering the magma pool! If we killed them, this would have never happened!”

Ling Du was furious as well. There was no way he couldn't be angry.

“Which direction did those three bastards run away to?”

Yang Yun asked.

“They went that way, but they left quite some time ago, I don't think you guys can find them.”

A warrior said.

“Hmph! They can't run away! The Island of Ice's exit hasn't emerged yet, and once the time comes, all of us will have to leave this place, and I'm sure they will come back here at that point of time.”

Shangguan Yilong coldly harrumphed.

“Hack them into a thousand pieces! I'm doing to do so when I see them!”

Fury! This was a completely unprecedented fury! As disciples from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, their positions

had always been prominent, no one had ever dared do anything like this!

“We have to settle this score no matter what, and we need to kill that Jiang Chen right now! Shangguan Yihong, let’s work together for now; we’ll find that Jiang Chen in the magma pool and kill him, what do you think?”

Yang Yun turned to Shangguan Yihong and asked.

“Alright.”

Without hesitating, Shangguan Yihong agreed to the proposal. For the first time in history, the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were working together, and it was all because of Jiang Chen! All of them knew how formidable Jiang Chen was, and it was extremely difficult to defeat him one versus one. But, if they worked together, it would be a completely different story. They also had the Combat Soul warrior from the Qingyi Sect to help them. A Divine Core warrior would never be able to withstand six Combat Soul warriors’ attack.

The group of Combat Soul warriors who left the magma pool just a moment ago, extremely furious, jumped into the magma pool once again. This time, their primary goal was to kill Jiang Chen.

At the bottom of the magma pool, Jiang Chen’s cultivation had completely stabilized at the Late Divine Core realm. But, new Dragon Marks were still constantly forming. Only a small part of the Magma’s Heart had been used.

“I’ve broken through to the Late Divine Core Realm, and in order to break through to the Combat Soul Realm, I will need a total of 5,000 Dragon Marks. The Magma’s Heart is enough to make me reach the Peak Late Divine Core Realm.”

Jiang Chen was surprised by this. Previously, the amount of Dragon Marks required to break through to the next stage/realms was always the double of the previous, but this time, he only needed another 1,800 Dragon Marks in order to break through to the Combat Soul Realm. This also meant he only needed a total of 5,000 Dragon Marks.

Jiang Chen had no idea what the requirement to break through to the late stage of the Dragon Transformation skill was. What he knew was that in order to reach the peak stage of the Dragon Transformation skill, he would need 100,000 Dragon Marks. As for the requirements between that, he only found out whenever he broke through to another stage/realms.

Just like now, he just broke through to the Late Divine Core realm, and he immediately found out how many Dragon Marks he needed in order to break through to the Early Combat Soul Realm.

Of course, the Dragon Transformation skill was a supreme skill! The further Jiang Chen’s cultivation progressed, the more difficult it became for him to break through to the next stage and realm. Each new Dragon Mark also contained more energy than the previously formed Dragon Mark, so it also required more energy to form. Jiang Chen didn’t really care about the pattern, all he cared about was breaking through to the next stage.

## Chapter 341 – Black Altar

---

During the next two day, all the Early Combat Soul warriors would come out from the magma pool every hour, regulate their breath and energy, then dive right back into the pool. They were very determined to find Jiang Chen and kill him.

“Damn it, what exactly is that Jiang Chen made of? He’s too insane! It has been two days since he entered the magma pool, but I have yet to see him come out. Perhaps he died in there?”

“Impossible! If he couldn’t withstand it, I’m sure he would have come out! But, two days is a long time, and even the two Mid Combat Soul princes has come out five times during these two days.”

“He’s a monster, but Wu Cong and the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are determined to kill him, and I’m sure they won’t give up easily.”

.....

Many people discussed the events amongst each other. Since it wasn’t time for the exit to appear yet, none of them would be able to leave. Therefore, they could only spectate from an audience’s point of view. They all watched with mixed emotions as those Combat Soul warriors jumped in and out from the magma pool, and yet, none of them were able to find out where Jiang Chen was.

As for those Combat Soul warriors, after two days of searching,



they had almost gone through every single inch of the entire magma pool, but they hadn't been able to find a single trace of Jiang Chen.

“Fuck, could this guy really have disappeared into nowhere? Don't tell me he's really staying at the bottom of the magma pool?”

Shangguan Yilong said in a depressed manner.

“Impossible! This magma pool is more than 300 meters deep, the temperature at the bottom is incredibly high, and the pressure is enough to crush any one of us! Even the two princes can't go down there, let alone Jiang Chen who is only a Divine Core warrior!”

“I think Jiang Chen perhaps died in there, and his body has already been burned to ashes. If not, I don't see how he could possibly stay in there for more than two days.”

All the Combat Soul warriors were feeling gloomy. They had restlessly spent two days searching for Jiang Chen, and they had almost searched every single inch of the magma pool. But, not only Jiang Chen, they hadn't even found the Magma's Heart that they were all longing for.

Bang!

Suddenly, a magma pillar erupted from the surface of the magma pool. It was Wu Cong, who had just leapt out. His expression was even uglier compared to two days ago, and although he had found

some good things during his trip to the Island of Ice, he had basically lost all his face because of Jiang Chen. And now, after restlessly searching for two days, he had yet to discover Jiang Chen's whereabouts. It made him really angry.

“Prince, since we still can't find that Jiang Chen, what should we do now?”

Yang Yun asked.

“Hmph! It's highly possible that Jiang Chen died down there. But, just in case, we'll just wait here.”

Wu Cong coldly harrumphed and said, “The Majestic Emperor said this before, the Island of Ice will only remain open for seven days. After that, the exit will appear, and we only have one more day until the exit appears. Since this place is the center of the Island of Ice, we'll just wait here. If that Jiang Chen still doesn't come out from the magma pool after one day, we'll leave the Island of Ice.”

“Prince, what if Jiang Chen is still alive?”

Shangguan Yilong asked.

“Hmph! I'll kill him no matter what! When the exit appears, I'll stay there until it's almost completely shut, and if he appears, I'll kill him in an instant! If he doesn't come out, that means he died in the magma pool. The Island of Ice only appears once every

hundred years, I don't believe he will risk getting trapped in here for 100 years."

Wu Cong coldly harrumphed once again. No matter what, he was not going to let Jiang Chen slip away easily.

"Not only Jiang Chen, also that big yellow dog and those other two bastards! We need to kill them all, break their bones, and burn them into ashes!"

Ling Du gnashed his teeth in anger.

"Prince, we've searched for two days, but we still haven't found the Magma's Heart. It looks like it isn't fully formed yet."

Shangguan Yihong said.

"The Magma's Heart is the hottest part of the entire magma pool. Even if there really is one, it can only be found at the deepest depth within the magma pool, and with our abilities, we can't reach that depth. That's why we're unable to find it."

Wu Lang said.

"Wu Lang, you've been helping that Jiang Chen all this time against me! I hope you don't get in my way the next time, otherwise I'm going to fight you to the death!"

Wu Cong warned Wu Lang.

“Wu Cong, don’t threaten me, I don’t need you to tell me what to do.”

Wu Lang replied with a sneer, giving absolutely no face to Wu Cong.

.....

At the same time, at the bottom of the magma pool, Jiang Chen had completely transformed. After two days, the entire Magma’s Heart had been completely absorbed by him, and the benefits it brought was enormous!

Explosive sounds could be heard from Jiang Chen’s body. There were countless blood red dragons flying around his body. Within his Qi Sea, he had now formed 4,500 Dragon Marks! The Magma’s Heart had given Jiang Chen 1,500 new Dragon Marks, and not only did that make him become a Late Divine Core warrior, it had also stabilized his cultivation at the Peak Late Divine Core realm, just one step away from the Combat Soul realm!

In order to break through from the Divine Core realm into the Combat Soul realm, Jiang Chen would need a total of 5,000 Dragon Marks. That meant, Jiang Chen was only 500 Dragon Marks away from the Combat Soul realm. However, obtaining another 500 Dragon Marks was no easy task.

Crack...

Jiang Chen clenched his fist tightly, causing it to produce cracking sounds. After breaking through, he felt like his body possessed endless amounts of strength. Just how strong was he now that he had 4,500 Dragon Marks? Only Jiang Chen himself knew.

“With my current combat strength, I don’t think Wu Cong is my match any longer. If I successfully give birth to a new Heavenly Saint Sword, I can even kill him within a second.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes shone brightly. It was a feeling of having an incredibly strong cultivation. Being able to kill a Mid Combat Soul warriors with just a Peak Late Divine Core cultivation, and it was not an ordinary Combat Soul warrior, but a genius... Perhaps Jiang Chen was the only person in the Saint Origin Realm capable of such a feat.

In fact, with Jiang Chen’s current combat strength, he could easily kill any ordinary Mid Combat Soul warrior, but against a genius like Wu Cong, well, the difference between them was small. However, if the Heavenly Saint Sword was successfully reborn, it would be a completely different story. With that sword in his hand, Jiang Chen’s combat strength would easily be doubled.

“My cultivation has experienced a great increase this time, and not only was my foundation not affected, the Magma’s Heart also tempered my body and made it even stronger. Now, it is time for the Heavenly Saint Sword’s revival using the environment here.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. This trip to the Island of Ice had given him an enormous amount of benefits, it was something he had never dreamed about. Since his cultivation was taken care of, it was time for him to focus on the Heavenly Saint Sword.

With a flip of his palm, Jiang Chen retrieve two broken parts of the Heavenly Saint Sword. After that, he also took out every single Combat Weapon within his storage ring.

The appearance of several hundred Combat Weapons, just the auras released by them caused the magma to react violently. Some Low-Ranked Combat Weapons were even showing signs of melting upon being covered by the magma.

“I’m going to melt every single one of you!”

Jiang Chen shouted. After that, he immediately unleashed the True Dragon Flame and adjusted its temperature to match the magma, then he formed it into a gigantic flame net which covered every single Combat Weapon.

There was actually not a huge difference between concocting pills and making Combat Weapons, the process was pretty similar. Jiang Chen as the previously greatest Saint underneath the Heavens, not only was he an alchemy expert, he was also a master at making Combat Weapons.

Superior Weapons were difficult to melt, but since Jiang Chen had the help of this unique environment, as well as the Heavenly Saint Sword’s help, the melting process became really simple.

The magma was flowing around these Combat Weapons, and together with the True Dragon Flame's intense temperature, many Combat Weapons slowly started melting. On the other side, the two broken sword parts were the easiest to merge together, as they belong to a single sword before this. Also, with the existence of Jiang Chen's aura, merging the two pieces was just a piece of cake.

“Judging from these two broken parts, it looks like the Heavenly Saint Sword broke into seven parts. I wonder where I can find the other five parts. But, no matter what, I'm really lucky I have two parts with me right now. With them, I can easily make a true ultimate weapon. As for the other five parts, I'll just have to find them in the future.”

Jiang Chen knew the Heavenly Saint Sword really well, that's why he could easily make the conclusion that it had broken into seven parts. He had found two right now, and as for the rest, he had to find them in the future.

Within the bottom of the magma pool, Jiang Chen had thrown all his attention into making the brand new Heavenly Saint Sword, causing him to completely lose track of time. Soon, one day passed by. Wu Cong and the other Combat Soul warriors were still waiting for him outside the magma pool. It had been three days since Jiang Chen dived in, but he was still nowhere to be seen. The situation made all their expressions turn extremely ugly.

“It's been three days, that guy still hasn't come out.”

“I guess he must have died within the magma pool and turned into ashes.”

“With his cultivation, it’s impossible for him to stay down there for more than three days. But, killing himself down there, at least he won’t have to suffer from Wu Cong’s hands.”

.....

The men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect really hated Jiang Chen. They really wished they could eat his flesh, that’s why they felt Jiang Chen was really lucky to have died in the magma pool.

“It’s been seven days, I think the Island of Ice’s exit is going to emerge soon.”

Right after Wu Cong finished speaking, an explosive sound immediately sounded out from far into the distance. At the same time, a huge amount of black smoke rose up into the sky about 5 km away from where he sat, causing the place to look like a scene straight out of doomsday.

Boom!

Within a split second, an ancient looking black altar suddenly appeared right in front of the crowd. Above the altar, a black gate slowly opened up. There was an ancient teleportation formation right next to the black gate, leading to an unknown location.



“The Island of Ice’s exit is finally here, let’s hurry up and leave!”

Someone said.

“The exit has finally appeared! I’ve found some good stuff here, once I leave this place, I’ll immediately enter secluded cultivation and break through to a higher stage!”

“Let’s go! Don’t waste any more time here, I think that Jiang Chen died down in the magma pool, there doesn’t seem to be any more shows for us to watch.”

At the moment, the people in the crowd started flying toward the black altar.

“Prince, what should we do now? We have no idea what Jiang Chen’s situation is like, and there’s also those two bastards and that dog who have gone missing as well.”

Shangguan Yihong asked.

“Let’s leave this place. I’ll guard the exit, I don’t believe that trio will continue hiding.”

Wu Cong threw one last glance at the magma pool underneath. After that, he flew toward the altar.

# Chapter 342 – Heavenly Saint Sword's Rebirth!

---

The ancient black altar looked like a black mountain, it had just appeared out of nowhere, and black fog hovered around it, causing it to look extremely eerie. Above the altar, there was a black gate which led to an unknown place.

The people in the crowd looked at the gate, trembling. They couldn't help but feel somewhat scared when looking at it.

“What an eerie gate! If I didn't know that this was the gate that leads us outside the Island of Ice, I would have thought it might bring us to hell!”

“This is the Island of Ice's exit. Since there's only one gate here, I don't think there will be any dangers at all.”

.....

Many people felt their souls trembling as they looked at the gate. All of them had stopped right below the altar, none had the courage to enter first.

Right at this moment, many warriors suddenly appeared in the center of the Island of Ice. Each of them wore the same puzzled expressions.

“What happened? I was fighting those monsters on that path, why am I suddenly here?”

“I’ve just been here for a day, why was I suddenly brought here?”

All of the newcomers wore the same puzzled expressions. They were in the middle of the nine paths before this, some of them had even entered the Gates of Life and Death. But suddenly, all of them had been brought here by a mysterious force.

“Once the exit appears, the entrance will be completely shut. All of you are latecomers who had yet to reach the center of this island, so once the exit appeared, every single human who had yet to reach the center would be automatically be teleported here. If not, you’d be completely trapped here for at least another hundred years, forced to wait for the Island of Ice’s next opening.”

Someone explained.

The crowd finally understood. They were teleported here because the Island of Ice’s exit had appeared.

Bang!

The dark altar continuously produced ‘bang’ sounds. The black gate became even eerier following each ‘bang’ sound, causing all those who looked at it to feel frightened.

At this moment, at a spot far behind the place where the crowd

stood, three figures sneakily appeared. The three figures stared at the black altar. They were none other than Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow.

“The exit has appeared, what should we do now? Do we just go there?”

Han Yan asked.

“Are you idiot? If we go there right now, they will definitely tear us apart!”

Nangong Wentian glared at Han Yan. Han Yan’s head must have been kicked by a donkey for him to make such a suggestion. Wu Cong, as well as the Combat Soul geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were waiting to eat them alive. If they showed themselves in front of these men, only certain death would await them. Even their bodies wouldn’t be left in one piece.

“We can’t go there right now, let’s just wait for Little Chen.”

Big Yellow said.

“It has been three days since Little Chen dived into the magma pool, but he still hasn’t come out. Could there have been any problems?”

Han Yan was a bit worried about Jiang Chen. It wasn’t only he who was worried, in such a situation, even Nangong Wentian was

starting to worry.

“Don’t worry, Little Chen has the True Dragon Flame to protect him, and his body is also extremely powerful. The magma won’t be able to hurt him a bit. If my guess is correct, he must have found the Magma’s Heart, and is in the middle of absorbing it. Once he comes out, his cultivation will have reached new heights, and Wu Cong won’t be his match then.”

Big Yellow said while shaking his head. He knew Jiang Chen really well.

.....

Underneath the ancient black altar, dark fog was hovering around. Everyone were holding their breaths, not daring to say a word.

“What should we do now? We need to act fast, if we don’t leave now, the gate might close at any time.”

Shangguan Yilong said.

“I’ll be the first.”

A genius from the Martial Palace leapt onto the altar. In the blink of an eye, he disappeared right into the black gate. The gate seemed to sway a little, before returning to normal.

“Nothing happened, this is just a gate that leads to the outside world. Let’s go!”

After the first guy left without any signs of danger appearing, more and more people followed behind, dashing right into the black gate and disappearing from the scene. In just a few minutes time, all the Divine Core warriors on the Island of Ice, with the exception of Jiang Chen and his group, disappeared into the black gate.

Wu Cong, together with the ones from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were still looking at the magma pool. It was still calm, and nothing unusual could be seen.

“Prince, Jiang Chen must have died in there.”

Ling Du said.

“It really is a pity that we didn’t get that Emperor Weapon.”

Shangguan Yihong shook his head.

“Damn it, those two bastards and that vile dog still aren’t here! Don’t tell me they really want to stay here for another hundred years?”

Shangguan Yilong cursed. This trip to the Island of Ice was a

really depressing journey for them. All the Divine Core geniuses they brought been killed. The Myriad Sword Sect was facing the same situation, all that remained were only a few Combat Soul warriors. They had suffered tremendous losses, and they couldn't even find the culprit. If they went back like this, there was no way they could explain it to their respective sects, and they might receive serious punishments when they returned.

“Haha, you guys just keep waiting here, I don't think they're going to come here.”

Wu Lang started laughing, then he turned around and disappeared into the black gate.

A gloomy expression could be seen on Wu Cong's face. He too felt extremely depressed. Throwing his glance once again at the calm surface of the magma pool, and the empty land behind him, he said, “Let's go, I think Jiang Chen really died in the magma pool. As for those three guys, if we keep standing here, they would rather be trapped here for another hundred years than show up in front of us.”

“Precisely. They know they're going to get killed if they show up in front of us, so let's leave here and wait for them outside the Island of Ice. I'm sure those three bastards aren't willing to be trapped in here for a hundred years, they will definitely be the last ones to leave this place. When they come out, they're going to get killed by us either way.”

Yang Yun from the Myriad Sword Sect said with a sneer.

After that, Wu Cong led the group and entered the black gate.

The restless and chaotic center of the island suddenly became extremely peaceful and quiet. Three figures appeared next to the magma pool in a ghostly manner.

Bang!

The Black Altar suddenly started violently trembling, and the gate on top of it was trembling even more violently. It was starting to look faded, as if it would disappear at any time soon.

“Look, the exit is going to disappear. Why hasn’t Little Chen come out yet? If we don’t leave this place soon, we’re going to be trapped in here for a hundred years!”

Han Yan said.

“You guys wait here, I’ll go down and have a look.”

Big Yellow said.

“Alright, be careful!”

Nangong Wentian said. With his and Han Yan’s current cultivation, it was impossible for them to dive to the bottom of the magma pool. But, Big Yellow was different, he had an incredibly powerful body, and with his Dragon Horse bloodline, he would



have no problems reaching the bottom of the magma pool.

Boom!

Right at this moment, an explosive sound suddenly emerged from the bottom of the magma pool. After that, a flaming pillar shot up into the sky. At the same time, a bright longsword emerged into the sky together with the flaming pillar.

Swoosh!

The longsword let out a sharp cry, shocking the trio. They immediately raised their heads to look at the longsword. The longsword was 2.5 meters long, and it was 5 fingers wide. It was emitting an incomparable radiance from all over, and when it shook, splendid lights would rain down.

The longsword itself was unleashing a supreme aura, as if it was above every other sword underneath the Heavens, the noblest existence amongst all weapons.

“What an amazing sword, it has reached the peak Perfect-Rank! But at the same time, it’s emitting a noble aura that exceeds all other sword underneath the Heavens! Judging from its energy, it can perhaps even compete with those King Weapons!”

Nangong Wentian was instantly attracted to this longsword.

“Damn it, this is such a mighty weapon! Don’t tell me this is

Little Chen's Natal Weapon?"

Big Yellow was shocked by what he saw as well.

Haha...

Right at this moment, a wild laughter suddenly sounded out from the bottom of the magma pool. In a split second, a man covered with flames suddenly shot out like a razor sharp sword, instantly turning into a handsome young man dressed in white.

Swoosh!

Sensing the aura of this young man dressed in white, the longsword once again let out a loud cry. It flew rounds around this young man, showing signs of intimacy.

"What the fuck, this sword is sentient! It has actually submitted itself to Little Chen!"

Nangong Wentian was even more shocked right now.

"This sword is called the Heavenly Saint Sword, my Natal Weapon!"

Jiang Chen wore a bright smile on his face. He stretched out his arm and grabbed onto the Heavenly Saint Sword's handle. His joy had reached the maximum level.

The Heavenly Saint Sword was only a peak Superior Weapon right now. Although the two parts of the previous sword contained the Great Saint Laws, but with Jiang Chen's current cultivation, there was no way he could utilize them. What he could utilize was the strength of the Heavenly Saint Sword itself, though. Even so, it was still an extremely powerful weapon. Ordinary Superior Weapons were nothing but farts in front of the Heavenly Saint Sword.

With the current strength of the Heavenly Saint Sword, it was more than enough to fight with ordinary King Weapons, and it might even be stronger than them. Furthermore, the Heavenly Saint Sword was linked to Jiang Chen's life, it would continue upgrading itself following Jiang Chen's increase in cultivation. Once Jiang Chen breaks through to the Combat King realm, the Heavenly Saint Sword would break through as well and become a King Weapon.

Also, Jiang Chen had yet to find the other five parts of the Heavenly Saint Sword. If he really gathered them all one day, the Heavenly Saint Sword would be completely reborn.

“Little Chen, I can feel that the aura coming from you is extremely powerful! What is your cultivation level right now?”

When Nangong Wentian sensed Jiang Chen's aura, he couldn't help but feel slightly frightened.

“I found the Magma's Heart, and I've broken through to the Peak

Late Divine Core realm, only one step away from the Combat Soul realm. Together with the sword in my hand, if that Wu Cong keeps disturbing me, I can kill him with ease.”

Jiang Chen spoke with extreme confidence in himself.

“Monster!”

The trio cried out at the same time. As geniuses with incredible potential, they rarely admired someone else, and they were also very prideful. But, Jiang Chen really changed their minds. He’s just a Late Divine Core warrior, but he is able to kill a Mid Combat Soul warriors. Perhaps only Jiang Chen possessed this kind of combat strength.

“Little Chen, where is that broken Emperor Weapon you got?”

Han Yan asked, curious.

“I merged it into the Heavenly Saint Sword. I used several hundred Combat Weapons, as well as the broken King Weapon we got back on the Blissful Island, and merged them all together, making this Natal Weapon – the Heavenly Saint Sword. It’s an invincible weapon that no one can defend against.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What?!”

The trio cried out at the same time. Using several hundred Combat Weapons to make a new Combat Weapons; that was a huge investment! Even more shocking, Jiang Chen knew how to make a Combat Weapon! This put a question in all their minds; was there anything Jiang Chen couldn't do?

# Chapter 343 – Sacrificing The Blood Of Geniuses To The Sword

---

“Damn it, a broken part of an Emperor Weapon, a broken part of a King Weapon, as well as several hundred Combat Weapons to make this sword? This sword defies the Heavens!”

Even Big Yellow couldn't help but say. What Jiang Chen had accomplished was huge! No one could make a Combat Weapon with all these materials, only Jiang Chen had this amazing ability.

They could only admire him!

Bang!

The black altar was trembling even more violently. The black gate on top of it was fading more and more, and it looked like it was about to disappear.

“Hurry up, the gate is going to disappear!”

Han Yan cried out.

“Didn't know the exit had appeared. I think Wu Cong and the other guys have left. Let's get out of here as well.”

Jiang Chen stored the Heavenly Saint Sword back into his storage ring, then he flew toward the black altar. In the blink of an

eye, Jiang Chen and group arrived on top of the altar.

“Little Chen, Wu Cong and the other guys must be waiting for us out there, we need to be extra careful later.”

Nangong Wentian warned Jiang Chen.

“No worries, if they really challenge me, today will be their last day. Let’s go!”

After saying that, Jiang Chen flew into the black gate. Suddenly, he gazer at the huge circular formation next to the black gate, and he couldn’t help but tremble.

“There is a teleport formation here, but it looks like it hasn’t been used for quite some time. I wonder if it’s still working... wait, there is a slot right in the middle of the formation, it seems like a perfect fit for the bronze plate!”

Jiang Chen threw his glance onto the ancient teleportation formation. To his surprise, he discovered a slot where the bronze plate would perfectly fit in right in the middle. It made him think about the bronze plate he currently had.

No one knew he still had a bronze plate with him. This bronze plate was not the same as those previous nine bronze plates used to open the ancient pagoda, it was an item made by the merging of all nine bronze plates. Judging from what he was looking at, it seemed like it had something to do with this teleport formation.

“Little Chen, hurry up! What’s so special about that broken formation? The gate is closing soon!”

Han Yan urged Jiang Chen.

Finally, Jiang Chen was pulled out from his own thoughts. He immediately saw the black gate in front of him violently shaking, and it looked really faded, as if it would disappear in the next second. If the gate disappeared, none of them would be able to leave this place, and they would be trapped for at least another hundred years.

“Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen removed his glance from the teleport formation. He took a step forward and disappeared into the gate. There was no time left to study the relationship between the bronze plate and the formation. Jiang Chen had always felt that there was something unusual about the bronze plate he had, it must have some usage.

The group entered the gate at the same time. Right after they passed through the gate, it immediately disappeared, and the dark altar stopped shaking. Once again, peace had returned to the center of the island.

The group were shot out by a tremendous dimensional force. They immediately circulated their Yuan energy and stabilize their bodies. After that, they looked around, and to their surprise, they



were not longer at the ocean, they were now in a desert outside the ocean, and the Island of Ice was no longer in their sight. There was only a calm water surface behind them.

Those who left the Island of Ice before them were still around. When they saw the appearance of these four guys, many had a change in their expression.

“It’s Jiang Chen and his friends! He’s still alive! Looks like a great show is about to appear!”

“They’re dead meat! Wu Cong, together with the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are still here, waiting for him! They’re going to kill Jiang Chen for sure!”

“That Jiang Chen is truly a lucky guy, he actually survived for three days in the magma pool; this is a miracle!”

.....

Many people were astonished. Most of them had the same thoughts as Wu Cong; Jiang Chen had died in the magma pool. The reason why they were still here was because Wu Cong and group were still waiting for Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow. The crowd was waiting to witness another good shot, but none of them had expected to see Jiang Chen as well.

“Jiang Chen, you’re really lucky to have survived in there! Good, give me the broken part of the Emperor Weapon, and I’ll consider

giving you a quick death! If not, I'll make sure you die without a proper burial ground!"

Wu Cong immediately warned upon seeing Jiang Chen. Not only was he not disappointed, he was actually feeling extremely excited. This was because now, he could finally kill Jiang Chen personally. Only by doing so could he save his face. And, that broken part of the Emperor Weapon was still with Jiang Chen, it was the most valuable treasure, and he needed to get it and submit it to the Majestic Emperor. With that, he would definitely be rewarded handsomely.

"Wu Cong, I don't want to be the Martial Saint Dynasty's enemy, but you better not challenge me, because I don't care if you're a prince."

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent tone. This was his last warning, if Wu Cong still didn't want to back off, he would have no choice but to teach him a lesson.

"Haha, Jiang Chen, you surely know how to make fun of yourself, this is the funniest joke I've ever heard! You're just a small ant, with what are you going to fight me? Kneel down before me, right now!"

Wu Cong shouted out loudly. He was pressuring Jiang Chen with his superior status, he wanted Jiang Chen to surrender underneath his feet. That would give him an overwhelming joy. He really wanted to use this arrogant method to show off his status as a noble prince.

“Wu Cong, enough, you’re making a joke off yourself by bullying a rogue cultivation using your status!”

Wu Lang said.

“Wu Lang, today I’m going to kill Jiang Chen no matter the cost! If you continue defending him, I will kill you as well!”

Wu Cong pointed his finger at Wu Lang. It looked like he was really angry. Wu Lang continuously defended Jiang Chen ever since they first met on the Island of Ice, challenging him without stop. Now, all of them had left the Island of Ice, and Wu Lang was still siding with Jiang Chen. This really caused Wu Cong to lose a lot of face.

“We know you’re the imperial prince, but still, you have to consider our feelings! Because of these four guys, the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect have both lost countless elite disciples! Prince Wu Lang, you not helping us is no big deal, but not only are you not helping us, you’re helping our enemy fight us! In your eyes, in the eyes of the Martial Saint Dynasty, can the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect really not compare with this Jiang Chen?”

Shangguan Yihong said to Wu Lang. He really couldn’t stand Wu Lang defending Jiang Chen any longer. If not for the fact that Wu Lang was a prince, they might have long ago taken him as their enemy.

“That’s right! We, the Myriad Sword Sect are going to go all out against these four guys. If prince really doesn’t care about the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, please go ahead and attack us, we’ll just stand here and let you attack, we won’t fight back.”

Yang Yun from the Myriad Sword Sect turned to Wu Lang as well. All the geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were staring at Wu Lang.

Wu Lang furrowed his brows. His expression didn’t look good, the current situation was not one he wanted to see. Jiang Chen had not only offended Wu Cong, he had also offended the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. Both were superpowers from the Jian Province, and they were so powerful that even the Martial Saint Dynasty had to give them some respect. The Shangguan Clan’s Clan Chief and Myriad Sword Sect’s Sect Chief had also personally met the Majestic Emperor before. Even Wu Lang’s father, the Ninth Emperor had to give them face. Therefore, although Wu Lang was a prince, he wasn’t qualified to ignore these two superpowers’ influence.

“Looks like Wu Lang is in a dilemma. He wants to help Jiang Chen, but the men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect have now challenge him. Even if he is a prince, he can’t just completely ignore both superpowers.”

“Precisely. The Shangguan Clan and the Myriad Sword Sect have suffered great losses this time, all those Divine Core warriors from their powers who entered the Blissful Island were killed, and all those young geniuses who came to the Island of Ice died as well,

that's why they need to kill Jiang Chen. If Wu Lang still wants to side with Jiang Chen and prevent them from attacking, he will publicly become the enemy of both superpowers."

"Wu Lang should just stay out of this. The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect's chiefs are not someone easy to deal with, even the Ninth Emperor has to give them face, let alone Wu Lang who is just a prince."

Many people started whispering amongst each other. Clearly, Wu Lang was in a dilemma right now. He really wanted to defend Jiang Chen, but the current situation had forced him to step out from the conflict.

"Prince, I appreciate your kindness, but it looks like there isn't an easy way out today. Since that is the case, we'll just let our strength do the talking. Jiang Chen is thankful for your help, but for now, prince, I urge you to stay out of this, don't get yourself involved in this dilemma. The scores between myself, the Shangguan Clan, and the Myriad Sword Sect; I, Jiang Chen will settle them myself."

Jiang Chen cupped his hand toward Wu Lang. He had guessed Wu Lang's identity, Wu Lang's father was the Ninth Emperor, who was most likely Wu Jiu. This was certainly the reason why Wu Lang had been helping him, he had been instructed by Wu Jiu. Jiang Chen really appreciated the help, however, he just couldn't drag Wu Lang any further into this. After all, there was no easy way out of the conflict between himself, the Shangguan Clan, and the Myriad Sword Sect. He had killed so many of their men, and he didn't mind killing a few more.

“Alright, Jiang Chen, you can still be considered a man because of what you said. Let me see what amazing skills you have!”

Shangguan Yihong shouted out loudly. As long as Wu Lang stayed out of this, only certain death awaited Jiang Chen.

Boom!

Shangguan Yihong was the first one to attack. He turned into a trail of light as he rushed toward Jiang Chen. With incredible killing intent, he drew out a gigantic blade and sliced down toward Jiang Chen’s head from up high with tremendous force. It looked like the void was on the verge of being destroyed.

It all happened so fast. If it was any other ordinary man, perhaps he would only have time to react by the time Shangguan Yihong’s attack had already sliced him in half.

Shangguan Yihong was stronger than Shangguan Yilong, but compared to Jiang Chen, the gap between them was not small. With 4,500 Dragon Marks, with just his bodily strength alone Jiang Chen would be able to unleash a 4.5 million Jin force. With this tremendous force, he could easily shatter a mountain with just a single strike.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen moved his arm and drew out the Heavenly Saint

Sword. As if having sensed Jiang Chen's fighting intent, the Heavenly Saint Sword started shaking violently. An extremely joyful emotion came from it.

The Heavenly Saint Sword by itself was a sword of slaughter. It had followed Jiang Chen in his previous life, fought countless battles, and stained its body with the blood of countless enemies. After having gone to sleep for a hundred years, it finally received the chance to fight together with Jiang Chen once again. It was hungry for blood!

“Today, I'll use the blood of these geniuses to quench the sword in my hand!”

An intense killing intent leaked out from Jiang Chen's body. The Heavenly Saint Sword had finally been reborn, and fresh blood was the best at quenching it!

# Chapter 344 – Unstoppable

---

When the sword appeared, the entire area was filled with sword energy!

With a wave of his hand, Jiang Chen struck with a usual sword skill. However, it was an extremely fast strike, as if it was the fastest sword skill underneath the Heavens! It was so fast it left behind an illusionary trail!

Clang!

The Heavenly Saint Sword collided with Shangguan Yihong's giant blade. In an instant, the giant blade was sliced into two halves.

When the Heavenly Saint Sword struck; what could stand in its way without breaking?

The entire crowd shook just from this single strike! Everyone stared at the sword in Jiang Chen's hand as if they were looking at a ghost, eyes wide open and shocked.

“What?!”

Shangguan Yihong immediately let out a cry of disbelief. A storm was raging within his heart, this was too frightening! The giant blade in his hand was a real Superior Weapon, and although it wasn't the best amongst all the other Superior Weapons, it was



still a Perfect-Ranked Weapon!

What was a Superior Weapon? It was a weapon that only Combat Soul warriors could use! But now, the mighty Superior Weapon had been sliced in two by his opponent's sword! What kind of sword was that? It was the nightmare of all Superior Weapons!

“Oh Heavens, what is that sword Jiang Chen is using? It is incredible!”

“This is amazing, a Superior Weapon was just destroyed in an instant! Don't tell me he's using a King Weapon? Impossible, there are only a handful of Combat King warriors in the entire Eastern Continent, and they are all from the Martial Saint Dynasty! I'm sure Jiang Chen doesn't have a King Weapon! But, the sword he uses is really frightening, if I wasn't here to see it with my own eyes, I wouldn't believe it at all!”

“It's a divine weapon! Being able to destroy a Superior Weapon with just a single strike, that sword is incredible!”

.....

Many people were shocked by what they had just witnessed. The scene caused a turmoil within the crowd. No one would be able to believe this if they weren't here to see it themselves.

“Shangguan Yihong, face your death!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. With a wave of his arm, he slashed at Shangguan Yihong one more time. It was the same lightning like speed, and the sword reached Shangguan Yihong in the blink of an eye, pointed toward the center of his brows.

Shangguan Yihong was shocked by this attack. He never expected Jiang Chen to possess such formidable combat strength. The energy leaking from Jiang Chen's body truly caused his heart to tremble, and the approaching sword also brought him a tremendous sense of danger. Without hesitating, he quickly unleashed a Yuan energy barrier around his body, while holding the remaining now short blade in his hand in front of his body.

Clang!

Without any resistance, the broken blade was penetrated by the sword!

Slash!

The sword didn't slow down. After piercing through Shangguan Yihong's Yuan energy barrier, it instantly pierced through the center of his brows, poked through his brain, and came out from the back of his head.

Shangguan Yihong opened his mouth as if he was trying to say something, but he was no longer able to speak any words. His life force was diminishing at a fast rate, and the color in his eyes was fading away. At the last moment of his life, fear and unwillingness could be seen in his eyes, but the majority of his expression was

that of disbelief. Never in his wildest dreams did he think he would ever be killed by a Divine Core warrior, without even being able to fight back! He was killed in one move!

Pu!

Jiang Chen pulled the Heavenly Saint Sword out, then he casually shook it, causing the blood to escape the blade. Shangguan Yihong's body fell back and hit the ground. Blood gushed out from the center of his brows, staining the ground underneath him.

Silence! Dead silence! Although the place was filled with people, none of them were able to utter a single word at this moment. Everyone's eyes were wide open, staring at Shangguan Yihong. Shock and fear filled their eyes.

Even Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's mouths were wide open in shock. They expected Jiang Chen to be really strong, but not this strong! His opponent was Shangguan Yihong, a rare genius from the Shangguan Clan, and Jiang Chen had just effortlessly killed him with such great speed! This was truly shocking.

Furthermore, the Heavenly Saint Sword was even more incredible! A Superior Weapon was like tofu in front of it! Perhaps only the best Superior Weapon could resist a blow from the Heavenly Saint Sword, but only resist it. The Heavenly Saint Sword's mighty power could only be matched by King Weapons.

Wu Lang's mouth was slightly open. He finally realized why Jiang Chen didn't want his help just now, it was all because Jiang

Chen possessed such formidable combat strength. When the Ninth Emperor told him that Jiang Chen was the number one genius he had ever met, Wu Lang was not at all convinced, but the scene in front of him proved the Ninth Emperor's words. At least, when Wu Lang was at the same level as Jiang Chen, the gap between their combat strengths was like the gap between Heaven and Earth.

“Brother Yihong!”

Shangguan Yilong yelled out. Both his eyes had turned red, and he stared angrily at Jiang Chen. He was gripping the longsword in his hand so tightly that it started produced cracking sounds. But, he didn't have the courage to attack. On the other side, the three men from the Myriad Sword Sect, and that genius from the Qingyi Sect, they all wore the same expression. They were all shouting, wanting to kill Jiang Chen, but it seemed like they had completely lost all their courage.

“Who is next?”

Jiang Chen raised the sword in his hand and pointed it toward the few men standing opposite of him.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen, never thought your cultivation would progress so much. Looks like you really found the Magma's Heart.”

Wu Cong coldly harrumphed. Right at this moment, only he alone had the possibility of defeating Jiang Chen.

“Good, you aren’t stupid after all.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders, not revealing too many details.

“I hate to admit this, but you’re the most incredible man I’ve ever seen. However, no matter how strong you are, you’re still just a Divine Core warrior right now. Although you just killed Shangguan Yihong, when facing me, you can only expect death to come!”

Wu Cong said with a loud voice.

“Why don’t you give it a try? I promise you, if you really attack me, I’ll kill you regardless of your status.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent expression. He didn’t want to become the Martial Saint Dynasty’s enemy. Just having the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect as enemies alone had already given him a headache. If the mighty Martial Saint Dynasty was added to his list of enemies, his life would for sure become much tougher.

But, since this Wu Cong continuously pushed him, and didn’t know when to back off, Jiang Chen wouldn’t show any mercy when attacking.

“Yang Yun, Ling Du, leave this Jiang Chen to me, you two go kill those three bastards!”

Wu Cong's expression became cold as he spoke to Yang Yun and the others.

“Alright!”

The men unleashed their energies, then their eyes locked onto Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow. They were no match for Jiang Chen, but when it came to these three guys, dealing with them was a piece of cake.

Swoosh!

Right after these men replied to Wu Cong, Jiang Chen once again struck in a ghostly manner. He was incredibly fast, and he gave the opponent no time to react. Or perhaps, the opponent didn't expect Jiang Chen to suddenly launch an attack at this moment.

Puchi!

The Heavenly Saint Sword struck once again. It impaled Yang Yun's body with a 'puchi' sound. An Early Combat Soul genius was so vulnerable in front of Jiang Chen.

“Those who wants to hurt my brothers; die!”

Jiang Chen said, his voice extremely cruel. In his past life, he was a loner. He spent his entire life as a martial art maniac, seeking

nothing but strength. But now that he was given another chance, a new life, he wanted to live a different life. He really cherished every single person around him; the father son relationship with Jiang Zhenhai, the romantic relationship with Yan Chenyu, and the brotherly relationship with Han Yan, Big Yellow, and Nangong Wentian.

All of them were the most important people in Jiang Chen's life. Anyone who tried to hurt them or came at them with the intention to kill; Jiang Chen would never let them go.

Therefore, Yang Yun was the first who died because of this.

Feeling his life force constantly diminishing, Yang Yun finally realized how horrifying it was to offend such an abnormal monster. His eyes were filled with fear. It wasn't until one faced true death that one understood how frightening death truly was.

“Bastard, how dare you kill someone in front of me?!”

Wu Cong furiously growled. Jiang Chen killed Yang Yun immediately after he had given the order, this was like ripping Wu Cong's face off and washing it down the drain. He was a noble prince, a mighty Mid Combat Soul warrior, but he couldn't even protect his own subordinate.

Boom!

Wu Cong instantly struck out with his palm, unleashing a bright

palm resembling a huge mountain towards Jiang Chen.

“Hmph!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He swung the Heavenly Saint Sword upwards, slicing the giant palm in two pieces, as if he was slicing a piece of tofu.

Extremely terrifying, extremely sharp! No matter how powerful the attack was, nothing could withstand Jiang Chen’s sword!

“Chaotic Metal Palm!”

Wu Cong’s dark hair violently danced within the air, and he once again furiously cried out. He flew above Jiang Chen and unleashed another palm toward Jiang Chen, a huge golden palm that carried a tremendous force. It crashed down toward Jiang Chen from the sky above.

“Let me see how strong you are. True Dragon Palm!”

Wu Cong’s powerful attack ignited Jiang Chen’s fighting will. He simply stored the Heavenly Saint Sword away, and unleashed the True Dragon Palm to counter Wu Cong’s Chaotic Metal Palm.

Bang!

Two combat skills carrying tremendous force collided, causing a



massive shockwave to spread across the entire desert and shake everything. The void shook, and the earth was torn open, causing thick smoke to erupt from the cracking.

Everyone stared at the scene, terrified. None could remain calm any longer, Jiang Chen's actions caused every single person's jaw to drop to the ground. A Peak Divine Core warriors could actually fight a Mid Combat Soul genius; this was unbelievable!

“Breezeless Waves!”

Wu Cong was extremely shocked as well. He never thought Jiang Chen's cultivation would progress so much, it seemed like the Magma's Heart had brought him a huge amount of benefits. This caused Wu Cong to be really jealous of Jiang Chen. Without hesitating, he immediately unleashed another attack.

Swoosh...

Invisible waves carrying formidable power swept toward Jiang Chen.

“Nine Murdering Flood Dragons!”

Jiang Chen's energy was incredibly great, and his fighting spirit was unbeatable. He was unstoppable! The Flood Dragon's bloodline instantly started circulating, and this time, he unleashed five Flood Dragon, shattering Wu Cong's attack with this

formidable counter attack.

On the other side, Ling Du from the Myriad Sword Sect exchanged a glance with Shangguan Yilong, he then brought Xu Shuang and the Qingyi Sect genius with him, dashing toward Han Yan and the other two while unleashing attacks.

“You’re courting death!”

A cruel killing intent emerged into Jiang Chen’s eyes. He had never taken his eyes off Ling Du and the others. When he saw they were going to attack the trio, Jiang Chen instantly became furious.

Jiang Chen moved his body and started sprinting toward the trio with lightning like speed. However, Wu Cong jumped in his way and stopped him from going further.

“Your opponent is me! Those three are dead meat; show me, how are you going to save them?”

Wu Cong said with a sneer on his face.

“Is that so?”

Jiang Chen replied with a sneer as well. He shook his body, producing another eight identical Jiang Chens right in front of Wu Cong.

“What?!”

Wu Cong was momentarily distracted by the nine Jiang Chens in front of him, he never expected this from Jiang Chen, and he couldn't immediately identify which Jiang Chen was the real one.

When he finally realized which Jiang Chen was the real one, Jiang Chen had already arrived on the other side of the battlefield.

# Chapter 345 – Dazzling Combat Strength

---

Ling Du and the other three men were emitting killing intent powerful enough to reach the heavens. Each of them carried a powerful Combat Weapon in hand, and within a split second, they arrived in front of Han Yan and Nangong Wentian. Each of them were gnashing their teeth in anger, inwardly swearing that they were immediately going to kill these three. Initially, they didn't want them to die so easily, they planned to give them good torture before finally killing them. However, with Jiang Chen's performance, it looked like even Wu Cong would be unable to kill him. Therefore, they wanted to use this opportunity where Jiang Chen was busy fighting Wu Cong to kill these three men before they could react.

However, just as they arrived in front of the group, a man suddenly descended from the sky above them and blocked their path. He stared at them with a pair of cruel eyes, like a deadly poisonous snake. His incredible killing intent caused the hearts of these men to tremble.

“Not good!”

Ling Du immediately sensed something bad was going to happen. He stopped moving further, and instead turned around to start running. The monster in front of him was too powerful, he was so strong that even Yang Yun and Shangguan Yihong were killed by him with just a single strike. If Ling Du were to face Jiang Chen, there was no doubt he would receive the same ending as Yang Yun.

Puchi!

But it was too late! Just as Ling Du turned around, a merciless longsword pierced through his body.

Ling Du lowered his head and looked at the longsword that came out from his chest. The terrified expression in his eyes instantly reached a new peak. He couldn't help but cry out in fear, "NO!!"

Too bad, it was too late. His destiny was decided the moment he launched an attack at Han Yan.

Boom!

The Heavenly Saint Sword shook, unleashing countless devastating sword energies which instantly shattered all of Ling Du's internal organs. After that, the sword energies continue ravaging, causing his body to explode into a bloody mist, terrifying everyone watching.

"Bastard!"

When Wu Cong finally destroyed all eight Jiang Chens and saw Ling Du's death, he became even angrier, and once again unleashed the Chaotic Metal Palm, furiously striking at Jiang Chen.

"Hmph!"

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. With a sway of his body, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared once again. With that, he easily dodged Wu Cong's attack, while at the same time appearing behind the Qingyi Sect's genius. The longsword in his hand shook, then it thrust forward like a poisonous snake.

The Qingyi Sect's genius had long ago prepared his countermeasure, but when he recalled Jiang Chen's cruel approaches and the terrifying longsword, extreme amounts of fear still filled his heart in an instant. Without hesitating, he unleashed all his Yuan energy and injected it into the Combat Weapon in his hand, then he swung it toward the Heavenly Saint Sword with the intention of defending himself.

Clang!

As expected, the Combat Weapon was cut into two halves following a loud 'clang' sound. The longsword continued moving forward just like a dragon, and it did its job; piercing through the man's body.

The longsword moved upward, slashing through the man's body, cutting him into two parts with ease.

Out of the four geniuses who wanted to attack Han Yan and the group, only Xu Shuang from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Yilong from the Shangguan Clan were still alive. The other two had been killed by Jiang Chen without any chance to fight back.

Xu Shuang and Shangguan Yilong were completely frightened by Jiang Chen; their arrogance was long gone by now. Jiang Chen's terrifying strength had completely gone beyond their limit of comprehension. There was no way they could fight someone like this, it would be a one-sided slaughter.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The two men turned into two separate trails of light and flew off into two different directions. Right at this point of time, there was nothing more important than keeping their lives.

“Wish to run? Stay!”

Jiang Chen shouted out. He would never let any of these people leave alive; that would be a huge potential threat to him in the future. Jiang Chen was clear about this fact; there was no way the resentment between himself and the two superpowers from the Jian Province could be solved. Since they had become life and death enemies, he might as well poke a hole in the skies; he was NOT going to let these enemies leave here alive.

“Jiang Chen, you've killed so many people today, and yet, you're still trying to kill more people in front of me?!”

Wu Cong was completely enraged right now. He was feeling really ashamed right now. With his cultivation, he actually couldn't stop Jiang Chen at all, causing both the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect to lose so many geniuses at the same time.

Clang!

Finally, Wu Cong took out a powerful Combat Weapon. It was a nearly 3 meter long silver white halberd. It shone brightly, and looked really extraordinary. With intense killing intent leaking out from his body, Wu Cong simply swung it at Jiang Chen with tremendous force.

“I’m going to kill them all, let’s see if you can stop me or not!”

Jiang Chen was completely without mercy. He swung the Heavenly Saint Sword at Wu Cong’s halberd. At the same time, he unleashed the Six Solar Fingers toward Xu Shuang who was crazily running for his life.

Six huge golden fingers suddenly appeared, and within just a split second, all of them merged into a gigantic finger that carried a devastating force. It flew past Wu Cong with incredible speed and caught up to Xu Shuang in an instant.

Ha!

Xu Shuang shouted. He raised the Combat Weapon in his hand and hit the Six Solar Finger.

However, the gap between Xu Shuang and Jiang Chen was too big. The Six Solar Finger was an extremely powerful long distance attack, so even though Xu Shuang countered the attack with his Superior Weapon, he still couldn’t hold it back.



Bang!

The void around Xu Shuang became completely twisted because of the massive force. Xu Shuang's Combat Weapon was knocked away by the Six Solar Finger, and then the gigantic golden finger crashed into his body like a gigantic hill. Following a miserable shriek, the gigantic golden finger flew past where Xu Shuang originally stood, leaving behind a huge bloody mist in the air.

Another Combat Soul genius had fallen!

The minds of the people in the crowd went completely blank. What happened in front of them was just like a dream, no one could believe it was real. Those guys who just died were all peerless Combat Soul geniuses, the elites of the Eastern Continent, talented peers from the Martial Palace. In the eyes of all ordinary warriors, these guys were supreme existences they could only look at from below. But now, these dazzling elites had died like ants, with absolutely no ability to fight. This actually put a thought in the minds of the crowd: Combat Soul warriors aren't actually unbeatable!

Jiang Chen was completely stopped by Wu Cong after killing Xu Shuang with the Six Solar Fingers, so he couldn't unleash an attack toward the last man, Shangguan Yilong. However, right as Jiang Chen attacked Xu Shuang, Han Yan, together with Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian, had prepared to attack.

A pair of wings appeared on Big Yellow's back, allowing him to

fly forward with extremely great speed. In just a few breaths time, he had caught up to Shangguan Yilong who was currently fleeing for his life.

“Damn dog, fuck off!”

Shangguan Yilong was completely frightened by Jiang Chen, he just wanted to leave this place as soon as possible and give up all thoughts of revenge. When he saw Big Yellow getting in his way, he immediately slashed toward him with the sword in his hand.

Kaka...

Big Yellow burst into laughter. He opened up his mouth and spat out a golden beam toward Shangguan Yilong. With his current cultivation, although he had the Dragon Horse's bloodline, he was still no match for Shangguan Yilong. However, Big Yellow wasn't trying to kill him, he only wanted to prevent him from leaving.

Big Yellow knew Jiang Chen's temper really well. Jiang Chen rarely killed people at random, but once he decided to kill someone, that enemy would end up dead. He never let anyone who is a potential threat to him stay alive. Therefore, Shangguan Yilong must die. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had already killed so many people, so killing another one made no difference.

Bang!

Big Yellow was knocked back by Shangguan Yilong's sword. But,

since he had thick skin and powerful muscles, the attack didn't hurt him a bit. But, because of this small exchange, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian had caught up as well. The trio were blocking Shangguan Yilong's path, preventing him from leaving the place.

“You bastards, how dare you to stop me here!?”

Shangguan Yilong furiously growled at the three guys in front of him. At the same time, he couldn't help but throw his glance over his shoulder. When he saw that Jiang Chen was engaged in a fierce fight with Wu Cong, he could finally feel a little relieved. However, it seemed like it would be impossible for Wu Cong to kill Jiang Chen. After obtaining the Magma's Heart, Jiang Chen had grown into someone whom none of them could really defeat. Therefore, the most important thing Shangguan Yilong needed to do was run away from here.

Shangguan Yilong strengthened his energy, then he raised the longsword high up into the air and slashed at the trio.

“Let's just stall him, we don't have to fight him face to face.”

Holding the Myriad Star Ruler that shone in a dazzling blue light like the stars, Nangong Wentian unleashed an attack that looked like a rainbow with Shangguan Yilong's longsword as the goal. On the other side, Han Yan unleashed a black devil dragon, and Big Yellow unleashed the Soul Crunching Tune. The trio worked together against Shangguan Yilong, who was alone.

It was impossible for a group of three ordinary Peak Divine Core

warriors to fight Shangguan Yilong, because he could easily kill them with just a finger. However, Han Yan, Big Yellow, and Nangong Wentian were no ordinary Late Divine Core warriors.

With their current combat strength, any one of them could fight with an ordinary Early Combat Soul warrior alone, and if they worked together, they would have no fear of a genius like Shangguan Yilong.

Bang!

The entire desert had become the battlefield for these people. Jiang Chen and Wu Cong were fighting each other with their combat skills, constantly unleashing the most powerful skills they knew, locking themselves in a fierce fight and frightening all those who were watching aside.

“So powerful! This is insane, can he still be considered a human?”

“Jiang Chen is definitely the most monstrous guy I have ever met! He isn’t a Combat Soul warrior, but his combat strength is extremely formidable, and more than enough to fight with Wu Cong who is a Mid Combat Soul warrior!”

“Looks like it’ll be impossible for Wu Cong to kill Jiang Chen and retrieve his lost face. The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect’s losses are also enormous, all the geniuses who came here have been killed, with the exception of Shangguan Yilong. But, he is trapped by that trio, and although they don’t have the ability to

kill Shangguan Yilong right now, once Jiang Chen's hands are free, he will definitely kill Shangguan Yilong!"

.....

The people in the crowd were extremely shocked by what was happening. It was a rare battle, and nothing similar had even been seen before, and would most likely never be seen again. It was also the first time in the history of the Eastern Continent that a monstrous genius like Jiang Chen had appeared. As long as he didn't die, no one would be able to predict how great his future achievements would be.

Wu Lang and the other two geniuses from the Martial Palace were absolutely shocked, especially Wu Lang. They couldn't take their eyes away from Jiang Chen and his fierce fight with Wu Cong.

"What kind of monstrous genius is he? He hasn't even reached the Combat Soul realm! If he really breaks through, doesn't that mean he will be even more formidable?"

Wu Lang muttered to himself.

Bang!

Jiang Chen and Wu Cong once again exchanged powerful attacks. Under the powerful collision, both men were forced back a few steps.

“Jiang Chen, I never thought you would be so strong! But, since you’ve offended me, what awaits you is certain death! Next, I’ll kill you with my halberd!”

The silver white halberd once again appeared in Wu Cong’s hand. It shone brightly, and was ready to attack.

“What comes next is your death!”

The Heavenly Saint Sword was vibrating within Jiang Chen’s grip. He didn’t want to waste more time with Wu Cong right now.

# Chapter 346 – Fame Spreads Throughout The Eastern Continent

---

Buzz...

Buzzing sounds could be heard from the two Superior Weapons. The cold killing intent leaking out from the two caused shivers to run down the spectators' spines. Jiang Chen and Wu Cong stood face to face, and as the crowd held their breaths in anticipation, they knew; the final moment was here, the moment where only one man would remain standing.

“Can you guys guess who the winner will be?”

“I think Wu Cong will win. He is after all an elite Mid Combat Soul genius, as well as a prince from the Martial Saint Dynasty, and the son of the Tenth Emperor. All of these things make him an extraordinary warrior with amazing skills. Although Jiang Chen is a monstrous warrior with insane abilities, he is still only at the Divine Core realm; there is still a gap between their cultivation.”

“I don't think so, I think Jiang Chen will win the fight. You guys clearly saw that they were both fighting a battle where none of them were able to get any advantages, but the sword Jiang Chen is using is clearly stronger than the halberd used by Wu Cong. At this final moment, I don't see how Wu Cong is going to defeat Jiang Chen.”

.....

Many people started whispering amongst each other. Some thought that the gap between the Divine Core realm and the Combat Soul realm was difficult to overlook, and although Jiang Chen's combat strength was formidable, it didn't mean he would be a match for Wu Cong.

But at the same time, another group of people thought Jiang Chen was stronger. Wu Cong was after all unable to defeat him in the battle before this, and the sword Jiang Chen was using was clearly stronger. In fact, the winner could be determined by who had the stronger Combat Weapon, and with this foundation, Jiang Chen actually had an advantage over Wu Cong.

“Tiangang Halberd, kill!”

His dark hair dancing in the wind, Wu Cong cried out loudly. He waves the silver white halberd in his hand with tremendous force, unleashing numerous bright lights which formed into a gigantic energy web, completely shrouding Jiang Chen within. At the same time, the extremely sharp halberd came crashing down toward Jiang Chen in an earth-shattering manner.

“Let me show you the Heavenly Saint Sword's true power.”

Jiang Chen was brimming with energy. With the Heavenly Saint Sword in hand, he was filled with confidence. If he was fighting without the Heavenly Saint Sword, he would at most be equally matched with Wu Cong, and would require some unique skills, like the Great Illusion Realm, in order to defeat him. However, since he



had the sword in his hand, he was confident he would be able to defeat Wu Cong in this one versus one fight.

Jiang Chen's anger rose. He raised the longsword in his hand, then it immediately cried out loudly as it unleashed sword energy into the sky.

Swoosh!

The sword energy was mighty as a dragon. Jiang Chen swung the sword in his hand in a simple manner. He never used any complicated sword techniques when dealing with his enemies; it was always the simplest strike. However, it did contain Jiang Chen's sword intent; fast and brutal.

Boom!

The Heavenly Saint Sword collided with Wu Cong's Tiangang Halberd. It was amazingly sharp, and could tear through anything. In an instant, it violently tore the giant energy web unleashed by the Tiangang Halberd into half. After that, the two weapons collided with each other in the most brutal manner.

Clang!

A huge amount of sparks exploded out from the center of the collision, and an astonishing scene was revealed to the crowd. Just like all the previous Combat Weapons, the mighty silver halberd was sliced in half by the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Tap tap tap...

Wu Cong was knocked back a dozen steps before he could stabilize his body. His eyes were wide open as he stared at the broken halberd in his hand. The shock in his heart had reached new heights.

“No, this is impossible!”

It was like Wu Cong had just witnessed the most terrifying moment underneath the Heavens. In fact, the silver halberd in his hand had been given to him by his father when he broke through to the Combat Soul realm, and it was one of the best Superior Weapons, a proven invincible weapon. However, never in his wildest dreams had he thought that it would be destroyed today, this was simply unbelievable.

“Bastard, how dare you break my precious halberd?!”

Wu Cong's eyes instantly became red, and he became extremely furious, like a lion who had just lost its child. This halberd was his most precious item, it was even considered a part of his body! Not only that, he was also cultivating the Tiangang Halberd Combat Skill, making the halberd the perfect weapon for him. And now, it was completely destroyed by Jiang Chen! This caused Wu Cong's heart to start bleeding.

“Not only your precious halberd. Today, I'll destroy you as well!”

With powerful energy, Jiang Chen thrust the sword in his hand toward Wu Cong like a shooting star. The Heavenly Saint Sword was too fast, and in the blink of an eye, it reached Wu Cong, pointing directly at the center of his brows.

The scene once again brought the crowd to a turmoil. Every single person watching was greatly frightened; it seemed like Jiang Chen really wanted to kill Wu Cong! This was an incredibly daring act! If he really killed the Martial Saint Dynasty's prince, he would become the dynasty's enemy!

Extremely fierce! This guy was simply a maniac! In the Eastern Continent, when a person offended both the Myriad Sword Sect and Shanguan Clan at the same time, it signified that the person would be exterminated. And, if the person also offended the Martial Saint Dynasty... it was an act no different from courting death!

“Breezeless Waves!”

Wu Cong was greatly terrified. When facing Jiang Chen's longsword, he could feel a great danger from the bottom of his heart, and that caused a question to pop up into his mind, ‘what kind of divine weapon is this? Why can its power match a King Weapon?’

Chi!

That proven, Wu Cong's counter attack was useless. No matter

how powerful his combat skill was, nothing could stay unhurt in front of the Heavenly Saint Sword. Jiang Chen easily shattered Wu Cong's Breezeless Waves with just a single strike, and with tremendous force, he continued thrusting the longsword in his hand forward, like a deadly poisonous dragon.

Puchi!

A 'puchi' sound was heard, and the sound almost represented death. However, Wu Cong was a man with great talent, so at the most critical moment, he avoided being hit on his vital point. Jiang Chen's sword only managed to pierce Wu Cong's shoulder.

"You dare hurt me?"

Wu Cong furiously gazed at Jiang Chen. He moved back about 40 meters, then a stream of blood shot out from his shoulder.

"Yes I hurt you, so what? I'm going to kill you eventually."

Jiang Chen replied with a sneer on his face.

"I am a prince from the Martial Saint Dynasty, and my dad is the Tenth Emperor! You really have the guts to kill me? What a joke!"

Wu Cong sneered, showing absolutely no signs of being afraid. With his imperial background, no one in the Eastern Continent would dare kill him. However, he was still feeling extremely gloomy right now. What happened today brought him great

shame, and Jiang Chen's formidable strength truly shocked him.

“Too bad, you'll never have the chance to laugh again.”

Jiang Chen had never showed his enemies any mercy. Once again, he struck with the Heavenly Saint Sword. Judging from the way he was attacking, it looked like he was going to kill Wu Cong.

“Stop!”

Right at this moment, a loud shout was heard. A tremendous force came from the side, hitting the Heavenly Saint Sword and pushing it away, causing it to miss its target.

A man appeared in front of Wu Cong, stopping Jiang Chen from attacking. The man was none other than Wu Lang!

“Brother Jiang, give me some face, don't kill him.”

Wu Lang said.

Right now, Wu Cong's face had turned extremely pale, and his arrogance was completely gone. Jiang Chen had just used action to tell him one thing; his status was useless in front of Jiang Chen! If Wu Lang hadn't stepped in and pushed the attack away, Wu Cong would have been killed by that terrifying sword!

Jiang Chen held the sword in front of his chest, looking at Wu

Lang with a frown on his face. Wu Cong had repeatedly tried to kill him, and if Jiang Chen didn't eliminate him right here, this prince would definitely become a huge future threat.

“Brother Jiang, listen to me, you can't kill Wu Cong! His status is not normal, and he represents the Martial Saint Dynasty here. If you kill him, you'll become an enemy of the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, trust me! Don't be impulsive, Brother Jiang.”

Wu Lang said to Jiang Chen through his Divine Sense.

Jiang Chen didn't say a word, but the sword in his hand slowly lowered down. Wu Lang had made his point, it was a fact that Jiang Chen couldn't kill Wu Cong right now. He was after all not alone; he had his friends and family, brothers and sect behind him. With Jiang Chen's current strength, he was far from able to fight the Martial Saint Dynasty, and if he truly killed Wu Cong out of impulse, not only would he not be able to stay in the Eastern Continent any longer, he would also drag all his loved ones into trouble.

It wasn't hard to tell that Wu Lang and Wu Cong's relationship was bad. While it seemed like Wu Lang had stepped in to defend Wu Cong, he was in fact protecting Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen could easily see this.

“Haha, I knew it! You don't have the guts to kill me!”

Seeing Jiang Chen's hesitant look, Wu Cong once again started laughing.

“Shut your filthy mouth!”

Wu Lang responded with a loud shout. Even the people in the crowd thought Wu Cong was a dumbass! Up until now, he still had no clue who Jiang Chen was? Jiang Chen was a maniac, and he was currently hesitating on whether or not he should kill Wu Cong. However, not only did Wu Cong not shut up, he added oil to the fire! If Jiang Chen was pushed too hard, he might just kill Wu Cong without considering the consequences.

“Wu Cong, Brother Jiang has spared your life, now hurry up and get the hell out of here!”

After saying that, Wu Lang simply grabbed Wu Cong’s shoulder, then he leapt up into the air and started flying far into the distance.

“Brother Jiang, once you’ve settled your matters, come to the Martial Palace and look for me.”

Wu Lang said to Jiang Chen through his Divine Sense.

Jiang Chen sighed, then he gave up the thought of killing Wu Cong, and slowly put away the Heavenly Saint Sword. Putting aside everything else, he did have to give Wu Lang some face, and the reason why Wu Lang asked him to find him in the Martial Palace was for Jiang Chen’s own good.

He had completely offended the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, so not long after this, he would have to face the devastating wrath of these two superpowers. Only entering the Martial Palace could ensure his safety.

This was also the reason why Wu Lang didn't let him kill Wu Cong. By hurting Wu Cong, the Martial Saint Dynasty might become angry, but with Wu Jiu's status, he was still able to defend Jiang Chen. However, if Wu Cong was killed by him, even Wu Jiu wouldn't be able to help him anymore.

Therefore, although Jiang Chen was unwilling to let Wu Cong off the hook, he was forced to do so.

Bang!

On the other side, the trio were still delaying Shangguan Yilong. With a leap, Jiang Chen arrived in front of Shangguan Yilong.

“Jiang Chen... you... please don't kill me!”

Facing Jiang Chen, Shangguan Yilong could only feel his throat drying up, and his heart palpating like crazy. Not once in his life had he been so frightened before. He had seen the fight between Jiang Chen and Wu Cong; even Wu Cong was no match for him, and almost got killed, let alone Shangguan Yilong who was much weaker than Wu Cong.

“Hmph!”



Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. Without saying anything, he raised his hand and unleashed the True Dragon Palm, capturing Shangguan Yilong with the huge blood red dragon claw.

“I have already killed so many from the Shangguan Clan, do you really think I’ll let you go?”

With an indifferent expression, Jiang Chen made the dragon claw squeeze with tremendous force. In an instant, Shangguan Yilong let out a miserable shriek and exploded into a blood mist, dying in a miserable way.

“Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand at Han Yan and the group. After that, they just flew into the distance, disappearing from the crowd’s sight.

After today’s battle, Jiang Chen’s famous name would definitely shine throughout the entire Eastern Continent.

# Chapter 347 – Returning To The Black Sect

---

Staring at the back of the four figures in the far distance, everyone at the scene felt it difficult to breathe. Their journey to the Island of Ice allowed them to witness the rise of a dazzling genius; today's battle had completely catapulted Jiang Chen to an unshakable position amongst the younger generation.

The journey to the Island of Ice was not an event that could be compared with Inferno Hell, those who came here were all geniuses! Jiang Chen's amazing achievements would definitely cause his name to be heard throughout the entire Eastern Continent!

At the same time, these people predicted that a chaotic situation was soon going to appear in the Eastern Continent. Putting aside the fact that Wu Cong and the Tenth Emperor will definitely hate Jiang Chen for what he had done, the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan would definitely not let Jiang Chen off easily.

Those two superpowers had suffered tremendous losses! Each of their geniuses were cultivated with an enormous amount of resources, but now, all of them had been killed by Jiang Chen. It was an uncountable loss! In other words, Jiang Chen had eliminated the future of these two superpowers.

“Sigh... Chaos is coming, we better return as quickly as we can.”

“Back in Inferno Hell, Jiang Chen also killed my fellow disciples from the Ming Sect. I think I should inform them about what I saw

here, we should just give up on revenge. With Jiang Chen's current strength, we've simply lost the ability to so."

"Right, I also need to ask my sect to give up on revenge. With the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan both aiming at Jiang Chen, I'm sure he won't have a peaceful life. From now on, the resentment will only exist between the two superpowers and Jiang Chen. We can only step aside and watch the show from the sidelines."

.....

Many people were still unable to awaken from the great shock. Jiang Chen's fierceness and formidable combat strength had cast a permanent shadow in their hearts.

The Island of Ice had once again disappeared. No doubt, Jiang Chen was the one who benefited the most from this event. As for the rest of the people, as long as they managed to stay alive and put effort into their cultivation, with all they had gained in this trip, they would also have limitless futures.

Soon after, all the people left the desert, flying in all directions, returning from where they originally came from. As for Master Blissful, Golden Lion, and the other older warriors, they never truly entered the Island of Ice, and they found the exit a few days ago.

.....

“Little Chen, where are we going now?”

In the far distance, four figures were flying at great speed. While flying, Han Yan asked Jiang Chen about their next destination.

“We’re going back to the Black Sect to save Little Yu.”

Jiang Chen responded. He was too impatient to return, as he had waited for this for too long. Now, not only did he possess the Nine Solar Holy Water, he had also obtained the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm, a huge amount of Demon Souls from the Ice Demons, and the Black Ice Talisman. All of this was prepared for Yan Chenyu.

When Yan Chenyu awakens from her coma, she would definitely experience a great surge in her cultivation, and the Nine Yin Meridians’ potential would completely awaken. Jiang Chen really wished for Yan Chenyu to become stronger, as he knew what he was going to face in the future. It would be a long journey filled with danger and hardship, and those who followed him would become important characters in this journey. Jiang Chen could only be at peace when Yan Chenyu became stronger.

“Wakaka, this journey to the Island of Ice was amazingly exciting!”

Big Yellow joyfully laughed out. He was still excited, and hadn’t pulled himself out from the previous mentality.

“It indeed was an exciting journey, but I think we’re going to face some hardships soon.”

Nangong Wentian said with a laugh.

“That’s true. Putting aside that prince, Wu Cong, I think the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan are extremely furious, and can’t wait to eat our flesh.”

Han Yan said.

“No worries. When I withdrew myself from the Black Sect, the Martial Palace had promised to protect it. Therefore, the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan won’t have the courage to touch them. Furthermore, with the status of these two superpowers, they won’t be as disgraceful as to attack a small sect like the Black Sect, their target is me. After Little Yu wakes up from her coma, we’ll proceed to the Martial Palace.”

Jiang Chen laid out his future plans.

“You’re going to get protection from Wu Jiu.”

Big Yellow said.

“Yes. Compared to the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, our overall strength is still too low. There is no way we can fight them, and the Martial Palace is the only place where we can truly be safe. Furthermore, I do want to check out that place.”

Jiang Chen replied.

“Little Chen, who is this Wu Jiu?”

Nangong Wentian asked in a puzzled manner.

“If my guess is correct, Wu Jiu is Wu Lang’s father, the Martial Saint Dynasty’s Ninth Emperor. And he might also be the Palace Chief who controls the Martial Palace.”

Jiang Chen explained with a smile. He had a small idea regarding Wu Jiu’s real identity, and if his guess was correct, Wu Jiu was the current Palace Chief of the Martial Palace.

In fact, the most important reason why Jiang Chen wants to visit the Martial Palace was because of the important people in his life. He needed to find the safest place for them, and with his relationship with Wu Jiu, Wu Jiu would definitely protect them at all costs.

As for himself, Jiang Chen didn’t really consider that part too much. With his own strength and abilities, he didn’t really care too much about the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan. If he fought them in a guerilla style, these two superpowers would be the biggest losers in the end. There were a lot of people who had tried to kill Jiang Chen, but in the end, none of them ended well.

Jiang Chen was no longer a loner, like he had been in his

previous life. He needed to take his friends and family into consideration, so that he could continue his journey to the top without too many worries.

“Fuck, this is incredible! Little Chen, saving Wu Jiu’s life in Inferno Hell is truly something good; you’ve created a backup plan for yourself!”

Han Yan was surprised. Big Yellow had told him about what happened back in Inferno Hell, and the most important part of their story in Inferno Hell was Wu Jiu. However, Han Yan had no clue about Wu Jiu’s real identity, that’s why he was surprised when he heard Jiang Chen’s explanation.

“Brother Jiu did help me a lot. If not for him protecting the Black Sect with the Martial Palace’s name, perhaps the Black Sect would be destroyed by now.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. Wu Jiu was a loyal person, this was something Jiang Chen had no doubts about. Not only had he provided protection for the Black Sect so that Jiang Chen could leave with no worries, he had also sent Wu Lang here to help him. All of this proved that Wu Jiu was a friend whom he could trust.

The group continued flying with great speed. With the help of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, the group was able to fly much faster than when they first flew toward the Blissful Island.

When they reached the ocean north of the Black Sect, it took Jiang Chen twenty days to reach the Blissful Island. But now, Jiang

Chen, Big Yellow, and Han Yan, all of them had experienced a great surge in their cultivation, at least doubling their speed. Also, since they were sent to the border of the ocean after leaving the Island of Ice, it only took them between one and two days to reach the Black Sect.

.....

## The Black Sect!

Right now, the entire Black Sect had almost completely moved to the new sect grounds. The Black Sect's new heart was located at the Redsun Town, and the underground energy vein had been completely activated, causing the place to be covered with white fog, resembling the Immortal Realm. It was clearly a perfect place for cultivation.

Numerous majestic palaces, many rows of exquisite houses; the entire Black Sect was portraying a noble aura. The current Black Sect was no longer the same old Black Sect, it had become a true superpower of the Qi Province, the one and only Black Sect.

Because of Jiang Chen, those from the Redsun Town's younger generation had joined the Black Sect, and the elders and ordinary townspeople had also been properly relocated, and were under the Black Sect's protection.

A grand square was purposely built right in the center of the Black Sect. In the middle of the square, a tall statue stood tall. It was built using precious stones, and carefully crafted into a young



man dressed in white clothes. The young man had one hand placed behind his back, and he was looking up into the skies with a prideful expression on his face. This statue was of none other than Jiang Chen!

This statue was first built by the Redsun Townspeople, but the Black Sect had given it a revamp.

For those from the Black Sect, this young man was like an immortal existence. Without him, there would be no Black Sect. If Jiang Chen hadn't arrived at the final moment of the ultimate battle, everyone from the Black Sect would now be dead! Each and every single person from the Black Sect had been given a new chance at life, a new birth, and in their hearts, there lived a mighty warrior!

Right now, the Black Sect was flourishing! They had merged all the resources from the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect, and because of that, the disciples were cultivating intensively, and Daoist Black was currently attempting to break through to the Combat Soul realm. Furthermore, because the Martial Palace had a good opinion of them, the sects from the neighboring provinces had all paid them a visit, to show their good favor.

There was a mountain located near the center of the Black Sect. This mountain was designed exactly like Guo Shan's previous mountain, and a courtyard was built right on top of this mountain. Herbs and plants could be seen everywhere.

Right now, in front of these herbs, two men stood side by side.

They were Daoist Black and Guo Shan.

“Jiang Chen left over a month ago, but he still hasn’t come back. Hopefully, he hasn’t bumped into any trouble.”

Daoist Black said in a worried tone.

“He’s a man who never lacks trouble. After killing so many men in Inferno Hell, it’ll be impossible for him to go anywhere without bumping into trouble. However, those who do bring him trouble, they will only end up suffering.”

Guo Shan responded with a smile. His confidence in Jiang Chen’s ability was extremely strong, he was a young man who seemingly knew everything, and there was nothing he couldn’t achieve. Until now, none of those who had brought Jiang Chen trouble had seen good endings.

“The Island of Ice reappeared not long before this. My guess is, Jiang Chen must have gone there. With his abilities, if he is able to come out from the Island of Ice unhurt, I’m sure he will have a great surge in his cultivation.”

Daoist Black said. The news about the reappearance of the Island of Ice had spread across the entire Eastern Continent, so the Black Sect had naturally gotten the news as well.

“With Jiang Chen, I’m sure the Black Sect will prosper in no time!”

A smile bloomed onto Guo Shan's face.

Right at this moment, four figures suddenly appeared in front of these two men in a ghostly manner. Both men were stunned for a moment, but when they saw the faces of these four figures, a joyful expression immediately emerged onto their faces.

“Brother, you're back!”

Guo Shan was really happy to see them.

“What a strong aura, I can't believe you've all seen such huge progress in your cultivation!”

Daoist Black threw an examining look at Jiang Chen, Han Yan, and Big Yellow. Even with his cultivation, he could still feel a faint pressure coming from these men. The trio's progress since he had last seen them was very shocking to him.

“Haha, Sect Chief, Sect Elder Guo, we went to the Island of Ice and obtained some enormous benefits, allowing us to see a great surge in our cultivations! Also, Little Chen has killed many Combat Soul warriors!”

Han Yan started laughing out from his heart.

# Chapter 348 – Nine Yin Body’s Eruption

---

“What?! He killed Combat Soul warriors?!”

Daoist Black and Guo Shan both cried out at the same time. They turned to Jiang Chen at the same time and started at him with shocked expressions. They had no idea how it felt to kill a Combat Soul warrior, as that was the realm both of them were longing for.

“Look at your faces! That’s nothing, Little Chen can even kill those Mid Combat Soul geniuses from the Martial Palace with ease!”

Big Yellow said with a prideful expression, as if it was him who had killed those Combat Soul warriors, and not Jiang Chen.

“What?!”

Once again, Daoist Black and Guo Shan were struck by this shocking faces. Aside from feeling shocked, it seemed like they didn’t know how to react at all.

“Sect Chief, when we first reached the Blissful Island...”

Han Yan told them about what happened back on the Blissful Island and Island of Ice, including the amount of great warriors Jiang Chen had killed, the enormous benefits Jiang Chen had gotten from obtaining the Magma’s Heart, and how he and Big Yellow had broken through to the next stage. After listening to

what had happened, Daoist Black and Guo Shan both started breathing heavily, and their eyes open wide. They couldn't remain calm after listening to Han Yan.

“The Jian Province's Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, the Martial Saint Dynasty's prince... this...”

Daoist Black was stunned by Jiang Chen's incredible progress in his cultivation. This was the most abnormal guy he had every met or heard about, and he was also the Black Sect's biggest pride. This was supposedly something one should be excited over, and something that deserved a grand celebration, but Daoist Black just couldn't happy, because the enemies Jiang Chen had were extremely powerful. How were they going to face these formidable foes?

“Sect Chief, don't worry. Once I've healed Little Yu, we'll proceed to the Martial Palace. With their protection, the Black Sect won't face any danger at all. As for the resentment between me and the two superpowers, that's my own matter. Sect Chief, you just need to run the Black Sect properly.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Brother, can the Martial Palace truly ensure your safety? They were after all established by the Martial Saint Dynasty, and the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan are their biggest dependent power. But now, you've offended their prince... Isn't going to the Martial Palace the same as walking right into a trap?”

Guo Shan expressed his worries to Jiang Chen.

“Old brother, rest assured, I saved the Palace Chief’s life in Inferno Hell, that’s why the Martial Palace will be the safest place for us.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“Good. Brother, you’re no longer the same guy as when I first met you, your cultivation speed is just unbelievable! Until now, your older brother I has always believed that those who choose to become you enemies are the unluckiest people in the world!”

Guo Shan patted Jiang Chen on his shoulder. For him, being able to meet a little brother like this was the biggest fortune of his life.

“Jiang Chen, who is this?”

Daoist Black turned to Nangong Wentian, who had yet to say anything since arriving.

“Nangong Wentian.”

Nangong Wentian cupped his fist toward Daoist Black and spoke his name.

“Sect Chief, we met Brother Nan on the Blissful Island. He is now a brother whom we can share hardships with.”

Han Yan patted Nangong Wentian's shoulder as he spoke.

"Alright, let's save our time, where is Little Yu?"

Jiang Chen asked Guo Shan.

"She is still in her room."

Guo Shan replied.

"Alright. I'm going to go heal Little Yu now, you guys just stay here and guard the place, don't let anyone come close."

Jiang Chen said.

"Rest assured!"

Han Yan patted his own chest as he promised.

Jiang Chen turned around and walked toward the courtyard. The layout of this place was exactly like the one back on the Black Mountain, so Jiang Chen didn't feel unfamiliar at all.

When he arrived in front of the door, he took a deep breath. He had waited for this day for too long. He suddenly felt somewhat nervous.

Pushing the door open, Jiang Chen walked into the room. After entering, he carefully shut the door, as if he was scared he would accidentally wake up someone sleeping. Although, he knew no matter how much sound he made, he had no way to wake the sleeping beauty.

On the soft bed, the beauty dressed in white was still peacefully lying. Her face looked calm, as if she was having the sweetest dream in the world.

This was a magnificent girl, her beauty was out of this world. Even when she was just lying on the bed, she still looked like the most elegant fairy.

“Little Yu, I’m back.”

Jiang Chen stood next to Yan Chenyu’s bed, informing about his arrival with the gentlest voice he could muster. After that, with a flip of his palm, three drops of Nine Solar Holy Water immediately floated out from his storage ring, filling the entire room with a pure Yang aura.

Under the pressure coming from Jiang Chen’s Yuan energy, these three drops of Nine Solar Holy Water instantly exploded into a layer of golden mist. After that, Jiang Chen sprinkled the golden mist onto Yan Chenyu who was lying on the bed, injecting it all into her body.

Just the Nine Solar Holy Water alone wasn’t enough to save her,



and since the pure Yang energy was simply too strong, it would immediately conflict with Yan Chenyu's Nine Yin Meridians and have a violent conflict. However, since she had consumed the Profound Six Solar Pill earlier, all Jiang Chen needed to do now was add the Nine Solar Holy Water and merge it with the Profound Six Solar Pill. It was no different from giving her a complete Profound Nine Solar Pill. There were many herbs contained within the Profound Nine Solar Pill, and they all served the purpose of blending the Nine Solar Holy Water with the Nine Yin Meridians. Therefore, it would wake Yan Chenyu up while not causing her any harm.

Buzz...

After all the Nine Solar Holy Water entered Yan Chenyu's body, she started violently trembling, and a buzzing sound could be heard from within her body.

Blergh!

Suddenly, Yan Chenyu who had been in a coma for quite a long time sat up from her bed, opened up her mouth, and puked out a stream of blood. This was the reaction coming from the impact of the medicinal strength; not a conscious response from her. In other words, Yan Chenyu was still in a coma.

Following that, Yan Chenyu's trembling became even more violent, and her face started twisting. Clearly, she was experiencing severe pain right now. Jiang Chen stood next to the bed, unable to do anything at all. Right now, it all depended on Yan Chenyu.

Furthermore, this condition was perfectly normal. It was a painful process that came from using the Nine Solar Holy Water to stimulate the source of the Nine Yin Meridians. Jiang Chen firmly believed that Yan Chenyu would be able to endure it, she was a strong girl, and she already has a lot of experience with pain.

She has experienced the nine painful transformations of the Nine Yin Meridians, causing her mind to be far above that of her peers. Her resilience was buried deeply within her marrow, and even her soul.

The pain lasted for about half an hour. During this time, Jiang Chen had stood next to Yan Chenyu without moving a bit. However, he had circulated the Great Soul Derivation skill to the maximum, so if there were any signs of danger, he would be able to immediately react.

Half an hour later, Yan Chenyu's body suddenly stopped trembling, and an extremely ice-cold energy suddenly erupted from her body.

“It is done!”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up, and he couldn't but let out a sigh of relief. The condition she currently was in signified the source of the Nine Yin Meridians in Yan Chenyu's completely awakening. What would happen next was that the Nine Yin Body would automatically reconstruct her internal organs and meridians, giving her a new life. Furthermore, all the medicinal strength of

the Profound Nine Solar Pill would be absorbed by her as well.

This was an amazing transformation, a new birth after death. It was hard to imagine how strong Yan Chenyu would become when she woke up.

The ice-cold energy became stronger and stronger, it eventually started leaking out from the room, as well as covering it in frost and a layer of white fog.

“What a terrifying cold! The Nine Yin Meridians truly deserves its reputation.”

Outside the courtyard, Daoist Black wore an expression of shock.

“Haha, perfect! Seems like the Nine Yin Body’s bloodline has been completely activated! Little Yu is safe now!”

Guo Shan heartily laughed out. Finally, the huge burden in his heart could be lifted. He hadn’t fulfilled his promise to protect Yan Chenyu, and he even caused Han Yan to almost be killed. This was something that had continuously pestered his mind, but with the awakening of Yan Chenyu, he could at last finally have a peace of mind.

“I wonder, how strong will Little Yu become when she awakens?”

Han Yan said with mixed emotions.

“I’ve heard about the Nine Yin Body before, it is one of the coldest physiques underneath the Heavens, and it only exists amongst women. According to the legends, the Nine Yin Body is a Divine Body. Once the bloodline is fully awakened, the person possessing it will have limitless achievements in the future!”

Nangong Wentian spoke with a great amount of shock. His journey to the Eastern Continent had given him a group of monstrous friends.

Within the room, even the air was frozen. The temperature had been lowered to an incredible level. On the soft bed, a huge silver white cocoon was formed outside Yan Chenyu’s body, completely covering her body within.

Jiang Chen was the one who stood closest to Yan Chenyu. He just let the ice-cold energy surround him like it was nothing. His body was amazingly strong, and was brimming with powerful Blood and Qi, as well as pure Yang energy all over. Therefore, he had no reason to fear this ice-cold energy.

Suddenly, something within one of Jiang Chen’s storage rings moved, startling him for a moment. It was the storage ring where the Ice Demon King was hiding.

With a thought in his mind, Jiang Chen released the Ice Demon King’s head, keeping the rest of its body inside the storage ring. This was because the Ice Demon King was over 30 meters tall, so if he let his entire body out, it would poke a huge hole in the roof.

“What a strong ice energy! This is Ice Source Energy!”

The Ice Demon King’s thoughts reached Jiang Chen’s ear, filled with shock. Right now, the Ice Demon King had finally found the source of this ice energy, so it turned its featureless face toward Yan Chenyu.

“Ice Demon, this is the true inheritor of the Ice God. I told you, I wouldn’t lie to you.”

Jiang Chen said.

“She’s just a mere human, but she can actually unleashed Ice Source Energy from her body, this is incredible! It indeed looks like she is the inheritor of the Ice God, you weren’t lying to me; you’ve brought me to the real inheritor of the Ice God, thank you!”

The Ice Demon King nodded his head at Jiang Chen, expressions its gratefulness.

“Of course I wouldn’t lie to you. There was nothing within the isolated world of glaciers, but if you can follow the real inheritor of the Ice God, you will have limitless achievements in the future.”

Jiang Chen continued.

“Yes, you’re right, being able to serve the inheritor of the Ice God

is my greatest honor. But, what about the Black Ice Talisman?”

The Ice Demon King asked.

“Don’t worry, this inheritor of the Ice God is my wife, there is no difference between serving me or her. She has suffered from a severe injury, and is currently in the middle of recovering. Once she awakens, I’ll give her the Black Ice Talisman. I know, only the inheritor of the Ice God has the right to possess the Black Ice Talisman.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. From now on, the Ice Demon King would become Yan Chenyu’s servant, it was really good outcome. With its protection, Jiang Chen would have fewer worries.

# Chapter 349 – Peak Early Combat Soul Realm

---

After hearing what Jiang Chen told him, the Ice Demon King finally felt relieved. It then hid its head back into the storage ring. Actually, after it had agreed to follow Jiang Chen and leave the world of glaciers, it hadn't felt at ease at all, because it wasn't sure if the Ice God's inheritor truly existed, or if it was just a lie told by Jiang Chen.

However, when it saw Yan Chenyu today, its mind was finally at peace. It firmly believed that this young girl was the real Ice God's inheritor, and serving the Ice God's inheritor was much better than staying in the isolated world of glaciers.

One day later!

Cracks suddenly appeared all over the huge silver cocoon outside of Yan Chenyu. After that, it simply shattered with a loud 'bang' sound, causing countless ice cold blades to shoot out in all directions.

Bang!

The entire room exploded in an instant! The explosion even shook Guo Shan's mountain, and the ice-cold energy covered both sky and ground. Within a few breaths time, the entire Black Sect was covered by this ice-cold energy! When those disciples who were in the middle of cultivating felt the drop in temperature, the expressions changed dramatically.

“What’s going on? Such an ice-cold aura, it seems like it’s coming from Sect Elder Guo Shan’s mountain. Who can tell me what exactly is going on?”

“I’m sure it’s because senior disciple Yan Chenyu has awakened. I heard she has the rare Nine Yin Body, the coldest physique underneath the heavens. She has been in a coma because of a severe injury, but it looks like she’s finally waking up. I think that’s the reason why we’re covered by such an intense cold.”

“This is frightening, just the aura alone is enough to send chills down my spine! The Nine Yin Body is incredibly powerful!”

“I heard that only the Nine Solar Holy Water can save senior disciple Yan, that’s why senior disciple Jiang went to the Northern Ocean in search for it. It looks like he has returned. I wonder how stronger senior disciple Yan Chenyu will become after she wakes up, the Black Sect is going to have another peerless genius!”

.....

What was happening brought a great turmoil to all the disciples of the Black Sect, the intense ice-cold energy caused the entire sect to become freezing, and the temperature had dropped to a new low. However, when all the Sect Elders and disciples realized what the source of this incident was, not only did they stop worrying, they actually started feeling joyful.

On Guo Shan’s mountain!



Han Yan and rest of the people were stunned by what they saw. After the room had collapsed, Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu were revealed to them. They walked closer, all eyes on Yan Chenyu.

Currently, Yan Chenyu was like the ultimate source of all ice-cold energy. Her body continuously emitted energy, causing her to look both cold and holy, as if she was a goddess sleeping within a glacier, and was about to wake up.

“What a beautiful woman.”

When Nangong Wentian saw Yan Chenyu, he also couldn't help but praise her beauty, “Only a girl like this is a suitable match for Little Chen, no wonder he works so hard for her.”

“The Nine Yin Body's bloodline has completely awakened. Look, Little Yu's aura has started rising!”

Big Yellow said.

Everyone at the scene watched with eyes wide open, staring at Yan Chenyu who was lying on the soft bed. They could clearly feel Yan Chenyu's aura constantly rising.

When Yan Chenyu was injured, she was only at the Late Mortal Core realm, but now, her cultivation had broken through to the Early Heavenly Core realm.

What happened next immediately stunned them, because they were basically witnessing a miracle!

Yan Chenyu's aura started rising with great speed, similar to the fiercest ocean waves rising higher and higher.

One minute later, Peak Early Heavenly Core realm. Two minutes later, Mid Heavenly Core realm. Another two minutes later, Peak Mid Heavenly Core realm. After that, it simply just shot up to the Peak Late Heavenly Core realm.

“Oh Heavens, how can anyone break through like this?”

Daoist Black felt like his brain was about to cramp up. He had spent most of his life in cultivation, and he was only at the Peak Divine Core realm. He knew very well how difficult it was to break through to a higher stage. What was happening to Yan Chenyu right now was simply a huge blow to his face.

“Little Yu has consumed the Profound Six Solar Pill and the Nine Solar Holy Water, and her Nine Yin Body's bloodline is fully awakened. It can be said that she is going through a transformation after death. However, the benefits brought to her by the transformation are far from this, the Peak Heavenly Core realm is not her limit.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Look, Little Yu's aura is rising again!”

Guo Shan shouted.

Crack!

A crystal clear cracking sound could be heard from Yan Chenyu's body, it was the sound of breaking through a bottleneck. With that sound and incomparable speed, Yan Chenyu's aura broke through to the Early Divine Core realm!

But, this wasn't the end! Yan Chenyu's momentum was like a gigantic tsunami, it wouldn't stop so easily! In just a dozen minutes, her cultivation had risen from the Early Divine Core realm to the Peak Late Divine Core realm!

“My Heavens... this...”

Daoist Black was suddenly feeling dizzy, he felt like he was going to faint at any time. What had he just witnessed? In just half an hour, a girl had broken through to the Peak Divine Core realm from the Late Mortal Core realm, this was extremely unusual event! If he hadn't witnessed it himself, he would never have believed anything like this to be possible!

Guo Shan on the other side also felt similar emotions. Both he and Daoist Black were so shocked that they felt difficulty breathing. Seeing Yan Chenyu breaking through to a new stage again and again, they started feeling like they had wasted all their life.

It wasn't only them, even Han Yan and Nangong Wentian felt cold sweat running down their bodies. Both of them were considered peerless geniuses, but not once in their lives had they seen such a terrifying way of levelling up.

When Yan Chenyu reached the Peak Divine Core realm, her momentum finally slowed down, causing everyone to breath out sighs of relief. If she truly broke through to the Combat Soul realm, all of them mighty faint on the spot.

Slowly, Yan Chenyu opened up her eyes. Two extremely cold beams instantly erupted from her big beautiful eyes, causing the surrounding air to vibrate. At this moment, Yan Chenyu had finally awakened, and she had experience the complete transformation of her Nine Yin Body.

“Little Yu still has the ability to break through, perhaps she can reach the Combat Soul realm in one go!”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Yan Chenyu's condition was under his full observation, so he knew she could actually break through to a higher level. Without hesitating, Jiang Chen took out the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm from his storage ring.

“Little Yu, absorb this crystal, use it and break through to the Combat Soul realm in one go.”

Jiang Chen quickly handed the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm over to Yan Chenyu. She threw her glance at Jiang Chen; she had

just seen the person she wanted to see the most right after waking up, this was no doubt the happiest moment of her life. However, before she could experience this moment for a longer time, she immediately took the crystal and swallowed it.

Buzz...

After swallowing the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm, solid ice flakes started appearing outside Yan Chenyu's body. At the same time, her aura started rising again.

Soon after, a palm-sized human appeared above Yan Chenyu's head. This tiny human was wearing pure white clothes, and looked cold and holy. She was simply a tiny Yan Chenyu.

Witnessing the appearance of this tiny human, everyone immediately let out a cry of astonishment.

"Combat Sou! She just formed her Combat Soul! Oh Heavens, this is incredible!"

Daoist Black nearly coughed up a mouthful of blood. He had spent all his life restlessly cultivating, trying to form his own Combat Soul and become a true great warrior of the Combat Soul realm, and he knew very well how difficult it was to step into that realm. However, in just half an hour, this young girl in front of him had done what Daoist Black had spent nearly half his life attempting to do. Not only that, she actually went beyond that!

“That is a Combat Soul? It looks so miraculous!”

Han Yan threw his glance onto Yan Chenyu’s Combat Soul. It felt really mystical.

“The Combat Soul realm is the most critical step for all warriors, and it is also the most difficult step. When stepping into this realm, the Divine Core will transform into a real Combat Soul, completely breaking away from the foundation realm. When a Peak Combat Soul warriors comprehends the Dimensional Power, the Combat Soul will transform once again, and will start carrying King’s Aura. At that point of time, one will be a real Combat King warrior. In this realm, the Qi Sea in the warrior’s body will become a dimension by itself, and the warrior won’t need to use a storage ring any longer, as he can just place all his items within the Qi Sea.”

Jiang Chen explained.

“Little Chen, how do you know all this so well, as if you were a mighty Combat King warrior before?”

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian were really surprised, especially Nangong Wentian. Han Yan had been following Jiang Chen for quite some time, so he knew Jiang Chen was a man who knew almost everything.

Jiang Chen didn’t respond to their surprise, he only replied with a smile on his face. The Combat King was nothing to him, as he was once the greatest Saint underneath the Heavens, the mightiest

warrior in the Saint Origin Realm.

Yan Chenyu's Combat Soul was dancing above her head like an Ice Goddess who had just descended to the realm of mortal. Obviously, she was also curious about her newly formed Combat Soul, that's why she was controlling it and trying to play with it.

“Little Yu, put your Combat Soul away.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

Swoosh!

Right after Jiang Chen's words left his mouth, the tiny Combat Soul jumped back into Yan Chenyu's body. After that, the ice-cold energy that covered the entire Black Sect started retracting back into Yan Chenyu's body, like ocean waves.

In the blink of an eye, peace returned to the Black Sect. The pressure that caused all disciples to suffer disappeared as well, causing them to let out sighs of relief. Being under such a low temperature pressure felt really awful.

“Chen Gege!”

[TL: Big Bro Chen]

Yan Chenyu suddenly leapt up from the floor and threw herself into Jiang Chen's arms. She wrapped both her arms tightly around

Jiang Chen, and placed her beautiful face close to his shoulder. She was unable to prevent tears from leaking out, just like a child who had been bullied by someone and suddenly saw the most precious person in her life.

“Alright, Little Yu, everything is fine now.”

Jiang Chen gently patted Yan Chenyu’s shoulder.

Cough, cough...

Han Yan faintly coughed a few times, trying to remind Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu that there were still a few lively men around them whom they couldn’t just ignore.

Only now did Yan Chenyu notice that there were other men around. She immediately pushed Jiang Chen away like a scared rabbit, her face blushing.

Haha...

Looking at this, Nangong Wentian the others started heartily laughing out. Even Jiang Chen was laughing at the side. Today was one of his happiest days, because Little Yu had finally woken up and fully recovered.



# Chapter 350 – Black Ice Talisman Bonds A Master

---

“Little Yu, while you were in a coma, all of us were really worried about you.”

Big Yellow walked up to Yan Chenyu and spoke. He just couldn't hold down his excitement. He and Yan Chenyu both came from the other side of the Origin Mountain Range, just like Jiang Chen. He had established a deep friendship with her, that's why he was worried about her when she was in a coma.

[TL: Just going to call Origin Mountain Range 'Mount Origin' from now on.]

“Puppy dog, how long have I been in coma?”

Yan Chenyu asked.

“About half a year.”

Big Yellow said.

“What? Half a year? It has been so long? Where is that bastard Fan Kun?”

When mentioning Fan Kun, an expression of anger immediately emerged onto Yan Chenyu's face. What she remember now was the last moment before she entered the coma, and she had no idea

what had happened during this half year.

“Haha, Little Yu, do you really think Fan Kun would be able to stay alive until now? Even the Qi Province has a new master. Let Little Chen tell you about what had happened while you were in your coma.”

Han Yan started laughing.

“Let’s go, we have to leave them some room to talk.”

Guo Shan dragged Daoist Black, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian, leaving the courtyard and going somewhere else. These two lovers had been separated for such a long time, so it felt wrong for them to stay there

However, Big Yellow still stood there with tongue hanging out of his mouth, showing absolutely no signs of leaving. Han Yan and Nangong Wentian who had left immediately turned back, grabbed his ears, and dragged him away.

“Hey!! You two bastards, why are you pulling me away?!”

Big Yellow was really unsatisfied.

“Don’t you see they need room for some sweet talk? Why are you still standing here with your tongue hanging out from your mouth?”

“Precisely! What a poor observant!”

Both men dragged Big Yellow and left the place. Of course, they remembered to shut the courtyard’s gate.

“Chen Gege, quickly, tell me what had happened in this this half year.”

After the others left, Yan Chenyu was facing Jiang Chen all alone, so she immediately became very lively. She pulled his hand and sat down next to a stone table within the courtyard.

“Let’s start with the Blood Devil that was wreaking havoc in Yellowstone. I accepted the mission given to me by the Black Sect and went to Yellowstone to eliminate all Blood Devils. After I killed that Lord Bloodmoon and returned, I was told that you and Brother Yan had been severely hurt by Fan Kun. After that.....”

Jiang Chen started explaining, from the events where he wreaked havoc in the Black Sect, to his journey to the Qian Province, and then Inferno Hell, then his return and the Qi Province’s change, the perish of the Heavenly Sword Sect and Burning Sky Pavilion, his ultimate battle with Nanbei Chao, and then, his most recent journey to the Blissful Island and Island of Ice. He told Yan Chenyu every single detail of what he had gone through.

Jiang Chen told all these events in the most detailed way he could, and only finished when the sky had turned dark. In fact, if

he had used his Divine Sense to explain, he would be able to compress all the details and make Yan Chenyu understand everything in just a split second.

But, Jiang Chen wanted to enjoy the moment of talking to Yan Chenyu, continue feeling that he had been longing for.

After Jiang Chen finished speaking, Yan Chenyu's mouth was slightly open; she was stunned. All these events were extremely shocking, and she couldn't just digest them all at once.

Eliminating the Blood Devils, slaying Firethorn Savage, sweeping across the Inferno Hell, defeating the Earth Devil, uniting the entire Qi Province, showing his mightiness in the Blissful Island, his fame sweeping across the Eastern Continent from the battle on the Island of Ice. All of these incredible events were major events that ordinary people couldn't even imagine, but they were all things Jiang Chen had gone through.

Yan Chenyu didn't understand the exact details of these events, but she did know one thing: her Chen Gege was the best!

Yan Chenyu didn't care about how formidable the enemy was, or how they were going to face them in the future. She only knew that no matter how invincible an enemy was, Jiang Chen would always find a way to deal with them. Back in the day, Nanbei Chao was a mighty warrior, and Jiang Chen was just a tiny ant he could easily kill, but in the end, he was still beaten by Jiang Chen, and could only flee with his Immortal Spirit Body, severely wounded.

“Chen Gege, I’m a Combat Soul warrior now! From now on, I can help you beat those bad guys!”

Yan Chenyu waved her fist around as she spoke. Although she looked funny, Jiang Chen knew that the current Yan Chenyu was not someone anyone could mess with. With the powerful Nine Yin Body, even Wu Cong wouldn’t be a match for her right now.

“Little Yu, I don’t expect you to help me beat those bad guys, I just hope you can be strong enough to protect yourself, then I can be free of worries.

Jiang Chen said with a laugh. This was what he hoped for the most; the stronger Yan Chenyu became, the happier he would be. Only when she was strong enough would his mind be at peace.

“Rest assured, Chen Gege! I already have the strength to protect myself now.”

Yan Chenyu said in a prideful manner.

“Oh right, I need to show you something.”

Jiang Chen flipped his palm and retrieved the Black Ice Talisman, handing it over to Yan Chenyu.

“This is the Black Ice Talisman. Even I can’t tell what it exactly is, but I’m sure it’s an amazing treasure. Also, it has the same element as you, give it a try and see if you can control it.

The Black Ice Talisman was not an ordinary talisman. An item capable of creating a world of glaciers, and even give birth to Ice Demons, how could it be something ordinary?

“Alright.”

Yan Chenyu took the Black Ice Talisman, but when it touched her palm, it instantly disappeared straight into her body.

“Ah?! What’s going on?”

Yan Chenyu exclaimed. The Black Ice Talisman had only touched her palm, she hadn’t tried to control it, but it just went straight into her body.

“The Black Ice Talisman is a sentient item, it just entered your body by itself. Looks like it has chosen you as its master, this is good news! Try and see if you can find it in your body.”

A look of excitement emerged onto Jiang Chen’s face. The Black Ice Talisman going straight into Yan Chenyu’s body meant it had actually accepted her. For Yan Chenyu, this would only bring benefits, and no harms.

Yan Chenyu closed her eyes. After a few minutes, she opened them up and said, “The Black Ice Talisman has sunken into my Qi Sea. No matter how I call for it, it just doesn’t want to come out.”

Yan Chenyu spread her arms and showed a helpless expression.

“I think it’s because your cultivation isn’t enough to control it right now. Just let it stay in your body, it isn’t going to harm you.”

Jiang Chen was puzzled as well. The only explanation he could think of was because Yan Chenyu was still too weak. Although the Black Ice Talisman had accepted her as its master, Yan Chenyu still lacked the required cultivation to control.”

“Ice Demon, come out!”

Following Jiang Chen’s shout, a bright white beam suddenly appeared within the courtyard. The 30 meter tall Ice Demon King made its debut in front of Yan Chenyu.

“What kind of monster is this?”

Yan Chenyu was shocked by it. The Ice Demon King’s appearance was really frightening, it didn’t even have basic facial features. She had never seen anything like this before.

“Ice Demon, I believe you saw what happened just now, the Black Ice Talisman has chosen Little Yu as its master. Now, it’s your turn.”

Jiang Chen told the Ice Demon King.

Although the Ice Demon King was staying inside the storage ring, it had noticed the scene where the Black Ice Talisman bonded Little Yu as its master. Therefore, it had no more questions regarding whether or not Yan Chenyu was the Ice God's inheritor, causing it to be really excited.

“Master!”

The 30 meter tall Ice Demon King bowed deeply toward Yan Chenyu. At the same time, it addressed her as master using the special communication method.

“Chen Gege, this...?”

Yan Chenyu asked with a doubtful look. With her current cultivation, she was able to tell the actual strength of this monster; it was a Peak Combat Soul existence! Even if she fought it with all her strength, she would still be no match for it! But now, this mighty monster had bowed down before her, and accepted her as its master. This caused Yan Chenyu to be slightly panicked.

“Don't panic, Little Yu. I brought this Ice Demon from the Island of Ice. The Black Ice Talisman that entered your body just now is the source of its faith, and since you've been accepted by the talisman, you are naturally the master of the Ice Demon.”

Jiang Chen explained.

“I see!”



Yan Chenyu finally understood why this big monster was bowing at her, it was all because of the Black Ice Talisman.

“Alright, Ice Demon, your appearance is too frightening, I think it would be better if you just stayed within my storage ring for now. If you behave well, I’ll give you to Little Yu, then you’ll be able to completely follow the Ice God’s inheritor.”

Jiang Chen told the Ice Demon King. His current foes were extremely strong, and he could face life threatening situation at any time, therefore, he needed the Ice Demon King to stay by his side so it could help him when the time comes.

“Yes.”

The Ice Demon King bowed toward Yan Chenyu once again, then it returned to Jiang Chen’s storage ring. Now, the Ice Demon King had finally completely surrendered itself to Jiang Chen. Even if Jiang Chen hadn’t planted the Divine Sense Seed within its body, it would still obey all his orders.

At last, Yan Chenyu’s matters had been fully settled. Before leaving the courtyard, Jiang Chen gave her all the Demon Souls of the Ice Demons he had. Then, he had some other important things to attend to. Once he had settled his matters in the Black Sect, he would proceed to the Martial Palace.

Outside the courtyard, a few men were sitting around a stone table in front of the herb plantation, drinking fine wine brewed by

Guo Shan. No ordinary men would be able to enjoy such premium quality drinks.

When they saw Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu coming out, Nangong Wentian immediately waved his hand at them and said, “Little Chen, Little Yu, come here quickly, let’s drink a few toasts together!”

Yan Chenyu smiled back at Nangong Wentian. Jiang Chen had told her everything that had happened during this half year, including all the men he had met along the journey, and this Nangong Wentian was one of the men. Therefore, she wasn’t unfamiliar with him.

“Perfect! It’s been quite a long time since I got to taster older brother’s wine!”

Jiang Chen walked to the stone stable, grabbed a glass of wine, and drained it in one gulp. After that, he threw his glance at Daoist Black and said, “Sect Chief, we need to leave for the Martial Palace at once. I’m sure the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are preparing to hunt me down, so we’ll need to reach the Martial Palace before they strike. All these treasures and combat skills were found on the Island of Ice, I’ll give them to you now. If you put them to good use, I believe the Black Sect will soon become much stronger.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen waved his hand and threw out a bookshelf, as well as some rare herbs, pills, and Combat Weapons, instantly dazzling both Daoist Black and Guo Shan.

# Chapter 351 – Orders To Kill

---

When these items appeared, they immediately attracted Daoist Black and Guo Shan's attention. Without even looking at the bookshelf filled with combat skills, just the precious pills, herbs, and combat weapons alone were more than enough to make it difficult for them to breath. Jiang Chen took out over 30 Combat Weapons from his storage ring, and among them, three of them were actually Superior Weapons! This was amazing!

Superior Weapons! Even Daoist Black himself didn't have one!

Some of these combat weapons were the ones leftover from when the Heavenly Saint Sword was remade, and the rest were from Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow. They found them when they were on the Island of Ice, but they were pretty much useless to them. However, it was a completely different story for the Black Sect.

“Sect Chief, older brother Guo, each of you pick a Superior Weapon that suits yourself. The rest of them, including these pills and herbs, you guys can just keep them and distribute them later on. As for the cultivation and combat skills, they are the most valuable resources, the root that will allow the Black Sect to rise.”

Jiang Chen said.

Daoist Black and Guo Shan exchanged a glance. They were feeling as if they were dreaming right now. Superior Combat Weapon! They knew its exact value, it was the Combat Weapon

that could only be used by Combat Soul warriors! They never thought they would be able to get one at the current level, the excitement in their hearts was indescribable.

After that, Daoist Black simply glanced at some cultivation and combat skills. What he saw shocked him even more.

“Oh Heavens! This is a Heavenly Cultivation Skill, and it suits my element perfectly! If I cultivate this skill, in at most one month, I’ll be able to break through my bottleneck and reach the Combat Soul realm!”

Daoist Black held the scroll with both his hands, his entire body violently trembling, as if he had just seen his life’s biggest hope. Every part of his body was struck with excitement.

“This is a High-Ranked Earth Combat Skill! The lowest level of all these skills is a Low-Ranked Earth Skill! Oh Heavens, this is just an enormous treasure!”

Guo Shan was struck dizzy, he couldn’t believe what he was looking at.

“Cultivation and combat skills are the roots of any sect, only with a huge amount of powerful and advanced skills can one produce all kinds of different geniuses. The future of the Black Sect depends on these. Sect Chief, take these skills and distribute accordingly.

Jiang Chen reminded.

“Jiang Chen, rest assured, with all these valuable treasures, I am confident that within ten years, I’ll make the Black Sect very powerful! I will bring the Qi Province to the top of the entire Eastern Continent!”

Daoist Black tried his best to suppress his excitement as he promised Jiang Chen with an utmost solemn voice.

“Little Chen, when will we be leaving?”

Han Yan asked.

“We’ll leave right now, and we’ll press on with the journey at night so we can arrive at the Martial Palace as soon as possible.”

Jiang Chen’s energy shook. They had delayed for quite some time after leaving the Island of Ice. Perhaps his name had already spread across the entire Eastern Continent by now, meaning that both Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect will be extremely furious right now. Their time was tight, so they had to rush to the Martial Palace as soon as possible.

“Brother, do you really have to rush?”

Guo Shan asked.

“Yes. My stay will not bring any good to the Black Sect. Some

time ago, I announced publicly that I had withdrawn from the Black Sect, and you also have the protection of the Martial Palace. As long as I'm not here, even the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan will be unable to do anything harmful to the Black Sect; their target is me."

With Jiang Chen's current situation, staying in the Black Sect would just bring them unnecessary trouble. The Black Sect was currently protected by the Martial Palace, so after he leaves, their safety would be no issue at all.

Without delaying any longer, Jiang Chen and his group stepped into the sky and flew away, disappearing into the darkness of the night. During his return to the Black Sect, Jiang Chen had never shown himself publicly or alerted anyone. He left quickly without notifying any of the disciples or elders in the Black Sect.

Staring at Jiang Chen who was disappearing into the dark sky, Daoist Black and Guo Shan couldn't move their gazes away.

"This man being one of the Black Sect's disciples is a lucky thing for us."

Daoist Black let out a long sigh.

"I got a feeling that in the near future, he will be the one to overturn the entire Eastern Continent."

Guo Shan said as he squinted his eyes.

“Overturn the entire Eastern Continent? Is that really possible?”

Daoist Black gasped. Overturning the Eastern Continent was incredibly difficult, as the Martial Saint Dynasty had an extremely solid foundation. It was simply impossible to overturn.

“Half a year ago, would you dare believe that what has happened until now would happen? Did you ever think that this young man, who made his debut in the Qi Province competition, would be able to change the Qi Province’s structure in such a short amount of time?”

Guo Shan asked while laughing.

Daoist Black didn’t say anything. That’s right, this man was a miracle! In just a little over half a year, Jiang Chen had done the seemingly impossible to many times!

.....

It was a dark and gusty night. Four people and a dog were flying through the skies as the mighty breeze swept over their bodies. They were all filled with some unknown excitement, especially Han Yan and Nangong Wentian. Both of them were men who loved adventures, and when they followed Jiang Chen, they never failed to find the excitement and adventures they sought.

Their destination was the Martial Palace, the most powerful

existence in the Eastern Continent, and it was solely built by the Martial Saint Dynasty. It was also the gathering point for all the elite geniuses.

Right at the same moment, in the Jian Province!

Within the Shangguan Clan's meeting hall, the atmosphere was extremely oppressive. Two men were sitting in the master seats. One of them was a middle aged man who looked to be in his forties, his appearance was imposing, and he had a powerful look on his face. Just by sitting there, he had already caused the other people to feel a tremendous pressure.

This man was none other than the Shangguan Clan's Clan Chief, Shangguan Sheng! As for the old who sat next to him, that was the Shangguan Clan's respectable Great Elder, Shangguan Qingming.

These two men stood tall at the peak of the Combat Soul realm! Besides these two men, there were another twenty Combat Soul warriors sitting in the meeting hall as well, and among them, three were Late Combat Soul warriors. This was the Shangguan Clan's foundation, it was extremely solid, and also one of the main reasons why they were one of the Jian Province's superpowers. In the entire Eastern Continent, only the Martial Saint Dynasty had the power to defeat the Shangguan Clan.

Right now, the atmosphere in the meeting hall was incredibly oppressive, and everyone felt extremely depressed. An old man stood in the middle of the meeting hall, sweat pouring down all over his forehead. Although he was a Mid Combat Soul warrior, and was a man who held an important role within the Shangguan



Clan, he now resembled a child who had just done something wrong, and was standing straight, waiting to be punished.

“Clan Chief, Great Elder, this is how it all happened. The Island of Ice had a selective mechanism, it wouldn’t allow anyone older than thirty to enter. Therefore, I just returned after leaving the desert! I never expected Jiang Chen to be such a madman, he actually killed all our genius disciples!”

This old man was the Sect Elder who had brought Shangguan Yilong and the other disciples to the Island of Ice, his name was Shangguan Hui. When he learned that all the disciples from the Shangguan Clan had been killed on the Island of Ice, he had almost fainted on the spot. As the leader of the journey, he held responsibility for what had happened.

“Including Yihong, three Combat Soul warriors, and dozens of Divine Core warriors who had the greatest potential were killed by that Jiang Chen, our losses are too huge! We need to settle this debt at all costs, that Jiang Chen must be killed and torn into a million pieces!”

A Sect Elder whose anger was soaring higher and higher with each passing moment said. With a slap, he shattered the table next to him.

“Clan Chief, we can’t blame Sect Elder Hui for this! I heard that Jiang Chen was able to defeat Prince Wu Cong! I think, even if Sect Elder Hui was at the scene, he would be unable to save them. He might also have been killed by Jiang Chen.”

“Precisely, we can’t blame Sect Elder Hui for this! He didn’t even have the chance to enter the Island of Ice! But, no matter what, we have to get revenge! I’ll kill Jiang Chen myself!”

All the Sect Elders in the meeting hall were filled with righteous indignation. An intense killing intent had erupted among them, all of them swore they would kill Jiang Chen.

Shangguan Sheng waved his hand, signaling for everyone to be quiet. He too was wearing a gloomy expression. As one of the Jian Province’s superpowers, not once had the Shangguan Clan suffered such a great loss! In the entire Eastern Continent, no one was daring enough to kill their men!

“Where is that Jiang Chen now?”

Shangguan Sheng asked.

“I heard he went missing after leaving the Island of Ice, no one really knows where he has gone. However, this guy was a disciple of the Black Sect, a small sect from the Qi Province. Because he had offended too many people in Inferno Hell, in the end, he withdrew from the Black Sect.”

Shangguan Hui said.

“Hmph! A small sect from the tiny Qi Province! Sect Elder Hui, bring your men and proceed to the Qi Province, I want that Black

Sect to be eliminated!”

Shangguan Sheng coldly harrumphed.

“Clan Chief, the Black Sect is under the Martial Palace’s protection, I don’t think attacking them is a good idea.”

Shangguan Hui furrowed his brows.

“The Martial Palace is protecting the Black Sect?”

Shangguan Sheng was startled for a moment. As the Shangguan Clan’s Clan Chief, he wouldn’t spend his precious time paying attention to a tiny sect from a small province, that’s why he didn’t know that the Black Sect was under the Martial Palace’s protection. Shangguan Hui, however, had all the details regarding Jiang Chen.

“Yes! The moment Jiang Chen withdrew from the Black Sect, the Martial Palace immediately announced that the Black Sect would be under their protection. Also, the current Ninth Emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty, the Martial Palace’s Palace Chief had suddenly returned after having gone missing ten years ago after entering the Inferno Hell. I think his return might be related to Jiang Chen.”

Shangguan Hui continued.

“Clan Chief, if the Black Sect is protected by the Martial Palace, I

think we shouldn't touch them. Also, it would be pretty disgraceful for us if we attacked such a small sect. Since Jiang Chen has withdrawn from the sect, I don't think he will stay there any longer. He might have predicted our decision, and is looking for a place to hide right now.

Another Sect Elder spoke.

“Hmph! Send out our men and find out where that Jiang Chen is, I don't care what price we have to pay! The sovereignty of the Shangguan Clan cannot be challenged at all! Fighting the Shangguan Clan is no different than committing suicide!”

Shangguan Sheng coldly harrumphed.

“Understood, Clan Chief!”

Shangguan Hui cupped his fist, turned around, and left the hall. At the same time, many Sect Elders left as well. The Shangguan Clan had started getting busy, attempting to find out where Jiang Chen was with all their resources.

During the same period of time, something similar was happening at the Myriad Sword Sect. Overnight, both superpowers from the Jian Province had given out the orders to kill. No matter where Jiang Chen, even the most remote corners of this world; they would find him, and they would kill him!

# Chapter 352 – Mount Tianyuan, Gathering Of Skynet

---

Both Jian Province superpowers had given out orders to kill. The news immediately spread like a tornado, bringing a great storm to the entire Eastern Continent. In just a day, nearly all 28 provinces had heard about it.

Because of this, Jiang Chen's fame rose to a new height, and the events and battles on the Island of Ice had been heard by even more people. This ignited a great interest toward this young genius.

In the Eastern Continent, the Jian Province was the second most powerful province, and the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were its iconic symbols. They were simply two ferocious tigers, and for so many years, no one had ever challenged these tigers' dignity. But now, not only had someone slapped their butt, he had also sat down on top of their heads and pulled out their whiskers. It had been a long time since the Jian Province experienced such turmoil. At the same time, both superpowers had given out order to kills, for the first time in the Jian Province's history.

During all these years, the conflicts and battles that happened in the Jian Province originated from fights between the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. But now, for the first time in history, both superpowers had agreed to do something together, and it was all because of that young man whose name was Jiang Chen.

“Did you guys know this? Both Shangguan Clan and Myriad

Sword Sect has given out orders to kill at the same time, they want that Jiang Chen dead! Anyone who can provide them information regarding Jiang Chen's whereabouts will be rewarded handsomely by them!"

"Yea, I heard that as well, and if anyone can provide accurate information about Jiang Chen, he will be able to join the Myriad Sword Sect or Shangguan Clan to cultivate, and enjoy the rich cultivation resources provided by the superpowers. Also, they're giving out a Superior Weapon, and the option to choose a High-Ranked Earth Combat Skill! The rewards are really attractive, it simply means a bright future for whoever gets them!"

"Indeed, it looks like both superpowers are very determined to kill that Jiang Chen. I wonder what he looks like. Rumors say he is only a young man about 17 years old, but how can a young man like that have the ability to shake both superpowers? Does he have three heads and six arms?"

"You don't know about the battles on the Island of Ice? All the geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were killed by that Jiang Chen! Someone told me that Jiang Chen is an incredibly terrifying man, and he is using a devastating longsword that can easily destroy any Superior Weapons! None of the Combat Soul geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword were his match, even the crown prince, son of the Tenth Emperor, Wu Cong was defeated by him! He is such an amazing man!"

"Sigh, such a genius! I don't think we're going to see anyone like him for thousands of years, this is the first time in the Eastern Province's history that someone like him has appeared, what a

pity. But, this Jiang Chen is too arrogant, he simply has no respect for the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, isn't this behavior something that will just get him killed? Now, both superpowers have given out orders to have him killed. They are so determined to kill him that even if he does have three heads and six arms, I am afraid he is still going to die."

.....

Such comments could be heard everywhere. Along Jiang Chen's journey, he had secretly heard a lot of discussions about himself.

"Little Chen, you're really famous now, I'm so jealous of you!"

Nangong Wentian couldn't help but tease Jiang Chen.

"I'd rather not have this kind of fame."

Jiang Chen could only respond with a bitter smile. There were plenty of famous people in this world, but it was rare to see someone so famous like him because of his enemies. He really didn't want this kind of fame.

"I knew the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect wouldn't let us off so easily, but I never thought they would create such a big hassle. They're paying so handsomely just to get any info on Little Chen, it looks like they are really determined to kill Little Chen."

Han Yan said.

“Where are we right now?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“I think we’re at the Qing Province.”

Han Yan checked around and answered.

“I think the Qing Province’s Qingyi Sect wants to kill me as well.”

Jiang Chen said with a laugh. Now, no matter where he went, he would be able to find some enemies who wished to eat him alive.

“Don’t worry, if they Qingyi Sect isn’t stupid, they will give up the idea of getting revenge. Out of all those powers you offended back in Inferno Hell, I think only the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are still hunting for you. As for the rest of them, they don’t have the ability to kill you any longer.”

Big Yellow said. What he said was correct, after learning about what happened back on the Island of Ice, the Qingyi Sect had already given up on all thoughts of revenge. The reason was simple, although the Qing Province was the fifth strongest province, and the Qingyi Sect was a superpower from the Qing Province, their strongest warrior was only a Mid Combat Soul warrior. Jiang Chen was capable of defeating Wu Cong, and with that formidable combat strength, he could easily defeat anyone in the Qing Province. Those who sought revenge would have to



evaluate their own strength, Jiang Chen was an incredibly fierce guy, and if he was pushed too hard, he might just destroy the entire Qingyi Sect, and they would have to cry because of this.

Furthermore, since the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect had decided to attack, it meant Jiang Chen would certainly face death. They didn't have to get their feet wet in this matter anymore, as Jiang Chen was going to die soon anyways. There was no difference in who killed him in the end, therefore, many big powers gave up all thoughts of getting revenge. They just backed off and decided to watch until the end.

“With our current speed, how long would it take for us to reach the Martial Palace?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“The Martial Saint Dynasty solely rules a big province, it is really far from the Qi Province. Even with our current speed, I'm afraid it will take us at least three days to arrive. Furthermore, in order to reach the Martial Palace, we will have to cross the Jian Province. I think there will be a trap waiting for us ahead, it won't be a smooth journey.”

Han Yan said with a frown on his face. Certainly, both Shangguan Clan and the Myriad Sword Sect must have their men stationed all over the Jian Province. If Jiang Chen and the group flew past openly like this, they would immediately be noticed by those men, and at that point of time, it would be a devastating situation.

“Big Yellow, I think it would be best if you changed your appearance again.”

Jiang Chen turned to Big Yellow and said. In this group, Big Yellow was the most iconic symbol. If he still looked the same, anyone would be able to instantly recognize them.

“Alright.”

Big Yellow didn't object this time. Without any complaints, he immediately transformed into a much smaller size.

“Wa! Puppy dog, you're so cute!”

Yan Chenyu cheered and immediately pulled Big Yellow into her arms. This dog had a pretty good relationship with Yan Chenyu. Right now, he was comfortably lying in her arms, causing Jiang Chen to feel angry. A desire to punch Big Yellow in his face rose into his mind.

Without delaying any longer, the group continued flying with lightning like speed. In just two days of time, they had entered the Jian Province. When they reached this place, they immediately slowed down.

Presented in front of them was a deserted mountain range filled with many mountain peaks. The atmosphere was filled with strong natural Yuan energy. Compared to the Qi Province, the natural

Yuan energy here was at least three times stronger, and this was only at the border of the Jian Province.

“What a thick natural Yuan energy, no wonder the Jian Province is ranked the second strongest province, the Qi Province can’t even begin to compare!”

Han Yan said with mixed emotions.

“This is the difference between the different territories, and the main reason why the Myriad Sword Sect is more powerful than the Black Sect.”

Jiang Chen commented. The gap between the different provinces was really huge. For example, right in the center of the Saint Origin Realm, in the Divine Continent, even the most remote land there would have natural Yuan energy at least ten times greater than what was here. The land was rich with numerous resources that were good for cultivation, and great warriors and geniuses could be found everywhere. It was a land the Eastern Continent simply couldn’t be compared with.

In the Divine Continent, there were amazing geniuses who were capable of breaking through to the Combat Soul realm at the age of seven, and it wasn’t a big surprise for a teen to be a Combat King warrior. In some of the frightening superpowers, there were even some young Combat Emperor geniuses. It was the continent of true adventure and excitement, and sooner or later, Jiang Chen would return to the Divine Continent. He had a feeling that it wouldn’t take too long, once he settled all matters in the Eastern Continent, he would progress to the Divine Continent!

“Let’s go!”

Big Yellow said in an impatient manner.

The group continued their journey. Soon, they crossed the deserted mountain range, and found a city in front of them.

“There is a city in front of us, I think we should stay low. Let’s go around it.”

Han Yan suggested.

“I think we should enter the city, with extra caution of course. We might be able to receive some news. It has been three days since the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect announced their orders to kill, and since they haven’t been able to find Little Chen, I’m sure they’re up to something new.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Brother Nan is correct, let’s enter the city and check it out.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Talented people were generally bold, since this was a city located at the border of the Jian Province, it was unable to make Jiang Chen feel much caution. He could also use this opportunity to find some news about his foes.

After making up their minds, the group went straight toward the city. Soon after, they reached its gate, they found there were no guards outside, and anyone could freely enter the city.

“Have you guys heard about the Gathering of Skynet?”

Right after they entered the city, they immediately heard someone discussing something.

“Gathering of Skynet? What is that?”

A person enquired.

“I knew you guys wouldn’t know about it. The number one genius of the Shangguan Clan, Shangguan Yiqing has just come out of his secluded cultivation, and I heard he has reached the Mid Combat Soul realm. Since the Shangguan Clan are still unable to find out where Jiang Chen is, Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi from the Myriad Sword Sect gathered together and held the Gathering of Skynet at Mount Tianyuan, and they called many geniuses to help set up a trap there, waiting for Jiang Chen to arrive.”

The man explained.

“What? Xuan Yuzi has finished his secluded cultivation as well? He is Shangguan Yiqing’s rival, I never thought those two would work together! But, setting a trap openly like this, only an idiot would go there in my opinion. If I was Jiang Chen, I would just

avoid that place after learning about the news.”

“You know nothing about it. Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi purposely spread these news, they want Jiang Chen to take their bait. If Jiang Chen doesn’t show up, that means he is afraid of them. This will actually boost the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect’s spirit, and if Jiang Chen take the bait and goes there, only certain death will await him. According to what I know, Shangguan Yiqing is an expert in formations, he has set up the Skynet formation on Mount Tianyuan, and together with the help of Xuan Yuzi and some other geniuses, if Jiang Chen really goes there, only certain death will await him. There is no way for him to survive.”

“Such a grand event! I wonder how many geniuses will go and participate in that Gathering of Skynet.”

“I think there will be a lot of them. This is their best chance to flatter the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. Furthermore, Jiang Chen is certainly going to die there, and none of them will suffer any losses. Perhaps none of them will even have to join the attack?”

## Chapter 353 – Proceed Alone

---

At this moment, the news about the Gathering of Skynet had spread across like a tornado. Everyone were talking about it, but most of the people had the same opinion; Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi were wasting their time, Jiang Chen would never show up!

Also, no one knew where Jiang Chen was right now. The net they had cast would probably yield no results.

“Gathering of Skynet? A net that covers both sky and ground? They just cast this net, and are waiting for Little Chen to jump in. It all depends on whether or not Little Chen has the courage to go.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Little Chen, what do you think? Are we going to wreak havoc at this Gathering of Skynet?”

Han Yan looked at Jiang Chen and asked.

“The combination of the number one genius from both Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, I think that only I, Jiang Chen can enjoy this kind of treatment. How could I let them down?”

Jiang Chen responded with a sneer. Initially, he just wanted to stay low and cross the Jian Province, proceed right to the Martial

Palace. But, he never thought he'd bump into something like this Gathering of Skynet, this caused him to change his mind. In all his life, Jiang Chen had never feared a fight. If this Gathering of Skynet was held by some senior warriors from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, perhaps Jiang Chen would just ignore them, but since it was organized by the number one geniuses from both superpowers, Jiang Chen decided to go and meet them. He wanted to let the entire Eastern Continent know who the real number one genius was, and who the ultimate warrior of the younger generation was.

“Wakaka, perfect! We're going to have a nice show to watch!”

Big Yellow laughed out in excitement.

“Little Chen, I think we should be careful, as the number one geniuses from both superpowers, Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi are definitely not going to be weaker than Wu Cong. With the combined forces of these two men, as well as the Skynet Formation, I think it will be a very difficult battle. “

Nangong Wentian said as he furrowed his brows.

“Chen Gege, what Brother Nan said is correct, we need to be extra careful! Why don't we just ignore them, and take this opportunity where most of the people are attracted to this Gathering of Skynet to cross the Jian Province, and proceed to the Martial Palace!”

Yan Chenyu said in a worried tone.



“I’ve made up my mind, I’ll go check out this Gathering of Skynet on Mount Tianyuan. I’m the main character of this gathering, if I don’t show myself, this grand event will be very boring. However, I’m going there alone, you guys proceed to the Martial Palace without me.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Fuck! Buddy, you’re wrong, why don’t you want us to follow?”

Big Yellow immediately objected this idea.

“It will be really dangerous if we go there together. Don’t forget our goal, after I go to the Gathering of Skynet, you guys take the opportunity to leave the Jian Province. Go to the Martial Palace and look for Wu Lang, after you tell him your identities, I believe Brother Jiu will meet you all personally.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Chen Gege, let me go with you! With my current strength, I’ll be a great help!”

Yan Chenyu was still worried.

“No, you proceed to the Martial Palace first. Once I settle everything on Mount Tianyuan, I’ll proceed straight to the Martial

Palace. Little Yu, don't worry about me, I can't be defeated. Even if I can't beat them, I still have the ability to escape."

Jiang Chen said in a serious manner. This time, he was going to Mount Tianyuan alone to meet with the number one geniuses from the two superpowers.

"Alright. With our current strength, there is nothing we can help with. You just be careful."

Han Yan patted Jiang Chen on the shoulder.

"Rest assured! You guys don't need to worry about buddy, so many people want to kill him, but he is still alive and kicking!"

Big Yellow curled up his lips as he spoke. He wasn't happy right now, as Jiang Chen had ditched him to go to Mount Tianyuan alone. All this time, he had never separated from Jiang Chen like this.

"Precisely. If you guys really want to worry, you should worry about those two geniuses."

Nangong Wentian said with a laugh. He knew Jiang Chen quite well by now. If one were to compare pure combat strength, those two geniuses might be the same as Jiang Chen, but the Heavenly Saint Sword Jiang Chen had was a truly mighty weapon, it was not something those two geniuses could defend against. As for that Skynet Formation, perhaps Jiang Chen already had a solution.

After that, the group separated and proceeded to walk their respective paths. Han Yan and group turned around and left the city, proceeding toward the Martial Palace. As for Jiang Chen, he chose to stay back.

“That Jiang Chen’s face must be really big! He has actually caused both elite geniuses to team up! I think, this can really be considered some kind of great honor?”

“Honor my fart! This is courting death! If it was me, I would rather not want that kind of face!”

“But that Jiang Chen is a really incredible man! He has killed so many geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. I believe that only a person like him possesses such amazing courage! Furthermore, I heard he also nearly killed the crown prince, son of Tenth Emperor! He is incredibly fierce!”

.....

Discussions about Jiang Chen could be heard everywhere! The battle of the Island of Ice had caused him to become very famous. The orders to kill from both superpowers of the Jian Province, as well as the Gathering of Sky organized by Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi, it all catapulted Jiang Chen’s fame to new heights, leading to him becoming someone known by everyone.

Jiang Chen heard all the discussions about himself. With an indifferent expression, he walked in front of a warrior and asked

with a smile, “Brother, do you know how to get to Mount Tianyuan?”

Hearing that someone was going to Mount Tianyuan, many people immediately turned around and looked at Jiang Chen. Anyone who was going to Mount Tianyuan right now must be some geniuses, because Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi had only invited the geniuses from the younger generation.

“Little brother, why are you going to Mount Tianyuan now? It’s not safe to be there at this moment!”

The warrior looked at Jiang Chen with a surprised expression.

“I’m going to participate in the Gathering of Skynet, but I’m not exactly sure where it’s located. I hope you can guide me.”

While saying that, Jiang Chen flipped his palm and handed a pill over to the warrior. When the warrior lowered his head and looked at it, he was instantly stunned; it was an Earth Restoration Pill!

Swoosh!

With a quick hand, the warrior immediately snatched the Earth Restoration Pill from Jiang Chen’s hand. The way he looked at Jiang Chen instantly change, this young man was such a generous man, paying an Earth Restoration Pill just for some guide! An Earth Restoration Pill was equal to ten thousand Mortal Restoration Pills!

The man felt he was really lucky; this was free money dropping down from the sky!

“Little brother, since you’re so generous, I’ll just accompany you to Mount Tianyuan! I’m very familiar with the road there!”

The warrior patted his own chest as he spoke. An Earth Restoration Pill was more than enough for him to show this kindness, therefore, he decided to bring Jiang Chen to Mount Tianyuan himself. He could also check out that Gathering of Skynet.

“If that is the case, thank you for helping.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward the warrior. After that, he grabbed the warrior’s shoulder and leapt into the sky, soon disappearing into the far distance.

Those men at the back were stunned by what they saw. When they finally woke up, they started yelling for that man’s great luck. He actually got an Earth Restoration Pill for such an easy job, what a lucky bastard!

“Damn it, it really pisses me off when comparing my luck to his! Nowadays, those geniuses just don’t take their wealth seriously; he just gave him an Earth Restoration Pill just to guide him!”

“I agree, it’s too wasteful! That lucky bastard, if he had asked me,

I would carry him there on my back! That's an Earth Restoration Pill!"

"This is our fate, we have spent so much time here discussing, but luck just doesn't want to strike us. I'm so jealous!"

.....

Yes, they were jealous. It was such an easy task for an Earth Restoration Pill, almost equal to picking it up from the floor. But, this ridiculous luck just didn't want to strike them! This really pissed them off.

.....

In the sky far ahead of them, above the stretches of the deserted mountain range, Jiang Chen was flying with great speed. The warrior next to him was so shocked that his mouth was wide open. This young man whom he was guiding only looked like he was 17 years old, but his speed was incredible! Although this warrior was an Early Divine Core warrior, he was hundreds of times slower than this young man.

"What a young hero! Little brother, I'm so envious of your powerful cultivation at such a young age!"

The warrior couldn't help but say.

"As a young warrior, I naturally need to be more adventurous,

that's why I want to participate in this Gathering of Skynet. I heart it will be a grand event."

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

"Of course, it will be a grand event! With Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi's calling, there will be many geniuses showing up to attend this gathering; it is going to be a magnificent event! But, I think that Jiang Chen won't show up, and the event will end without much happening. Therefore, you made the right decision by joining this gathering, not only will there not be any danger, you can also flatter both the Shangguan Clan and the Myriad Sword Sect! It will surely bring you a lot of advantages in the future!"

The warrior said with a joyful expression, expressing his envy through his words. He felt not being able to join the gathering was a pity, because he was too old for it.

"That's hard to say, maybe he is already on his way to Mount Tianyuan."

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

"Then he really is an idiot! It is clear that this gathering is a trap placed down specifically for him! But, I've heard that Jiang Chen is a fierce man, some even say that he is a complete maniac. Perhaps he truly will show up. If that happens, the Gathering of Skynet will be really interesting!"

The warrior had no idea that the man beside him was the infamous Jiang Chen. If he knew the real identity of this young man, he would be extremely terrified, and perhaps unable to even stand straight.

Mount Tianyuan, it was located at the border of the Jian Province. However, its landscape was nowhere near as amazing as its name, it was a desolate land where people rarely came.

Right at this moment, at the deepest area of Mount Tianyuan, a mountain peak had been slashed flat by someone, creating an open space platform. On top of this platform, dozens of warriors had gathered.

Some tables and chairs completely made from rock were placed in two straight rows. Right now, some of the tables were full. The majority of the warriors here were from the younger generation. Some of them were older than thirty, but in their early thirties. All of them had pretty strong cultivation bases, and the weakest of them were Late Divine Core warriors.

All these warriors came here because of Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi. The Jian Province was the second strongest province, and it housed hundreds of different powers. With Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi's calling, it was perfectly normal for so many geniuses to come attend the gathering. Of course, many of them were here to flatter the two superpowers.



## Chapter 354 – All To Kill

---

At this moment, the tables in front of these people were filled with delicacies. Their expressions were very relaxed, as if they weren't here to fight, but to enjoy themselves.

Indeed, these guys felt absolutely no pressure by joining the Gathering of Skynet, because Jiang Chen was most likely not going to show up. Even if he did, there was no way he would be able to escape the Skynet Formation set up by Shangguan Yiqing; what awaited him was certain death.

Two men sat at the front. One of them wore a green robe, and his brows made him seem very domineering. He looked to be in his late twenties, and he was portraying a noble image from all over his body. His dark hair was fluttering in the breeze, and a faint smile could be seen on his face. He was none other than the organizer of this Gathering of Skynet, the number one genius from the Shangguan Clan, Shangguan Yiqing!

As for the man who was qualified to sit side by side with Shangguan Yiqing, clearly, it would be Xuan Yuzi from the Myriad Sword Sect. Xuan Yuzi was wearing pure white clothes, he had a handsome face, and unique white hair. A huge sword was placed on his left-hand side, and he held a glass of wine with the other hand, causing him to look like a Deity of Wine and Sword.

Within the Jian Province, it was really unusual to see these two men peacefully sitting together and drinking. Everyone present at the scene knew they were rivals, and every time they met, they would definitely fight brutally with each other for at least three

hundred rounds before stopping. At the end of the fight, both men would enter secluded cultivation with the intentions of having a life or death battle after coming out from seclusion. But unexpectedly, Jiang Chen's debut had caused them to put aside their resentment, and join forces to kill Jiang Chen.

One a few of the stone tables located near these two men sat all the Combat Soul geniuses. Two of them even came from the Martial Palace. Because they had a pretty good relationship with Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi, they were invited to come here.

“Come, let us have a toast with this drink!”

Shangguan Yiqing held the wine glass in his hand high up and drank it up in one gulp. After that, he said, “All of you are really giving me a lot of face by coming here! From now on, you are all my friends! If you face any difficulties in the future, you can just come to me, Shangguan Yiqing!”

“Haha, brother Shangguan is a generous man! I'm guessing Jiang Chen won't show up to this Gathering of Skynet! Faced with the combined force of the two strongest geniuses in the Jian Province... he just doesn't have enough lives to do so!”

Someone said with a loud voice.

“Precisely! With brother Shangguan and brother Xuan here, if that Jiang Chen isn't an idiot, he won't show up!”

Someone agreed.

“It’s hard to tell right now. I was at the Island of Ice, and I witnessed how fierce and brutal this Jiang Chen can be, we can never underestimate him! To be frank, he is a maniac, and if he receives the news about this gathering, I’m afraid he might really come here.”

A young man said loudly. He was one of the men who went to the Island of Ice, and he had witnessed how Jiang Chen slaughtered all geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, as well as the scene where he defeated Wu Cong. That’s why he knew how daring Jiang Chen was.

“Precisely, I’ve also witnessed how terrifying that Jiang Chen is! This man is a daring bastard; there is nothing he doesn’t dare do!”

Someone added. For those who went to the Island of Ice and witnessed Jiang Chen’s approach, they were all stupefied by his incredible courage and formidable strength.

“It would be good if he really show up. If not, all our restless effort is going to go to waste. I really regret not going to the Island of Ice. If I had gone, I would have the chance to meet that guy.”

Xuan Yuzi coldly harrumphed. Not being able to go to the Island of Ice was his biggest regret, and now, in order to defend the dignity of the Myriad Sword Sect, as well as his status as the number one genius, he was forced to kill Jiang Chen. On the other side, Shangguan Yiqing was feeling the same way.

“Yea, we have so many people here, why should we be afraid of him? If he really comes here, I’ll make sure he dies without a proper burial ground!”

A Combat Soul warrior said, his expression prideful.

“If I was Jiang Chen, I would definitely show up! This is the pride of a genius!”

Shangguan Yiqing said.

“That Jiang Chen has a horrifying sword with him, he can easily destroy and Superior Weapons with it, and unleash the power of a King Weapon! He actually used that sword to defeat Prince Wu Cong!”

Someone said.

“No worries, I have secretly set up the Skynet Formation within this mountain range. It took me years to study and create this formation, even a Late Combat Soul warrior would be trapped in it. That sword in Jiang Chen’s hand will soon be mine.”

Shangguan Yiqing said with a sneer.

“It’s such a mighty weapon, if it goes to someone who doesn’t know how to use a sword gets it, it would be a really great waste.

The sword should be mine.”

Xuan Yuzi gazed at Shangguan Yiqing as he spoke.

Before Jiang Chen showed up, before he was killed by them, these two men had started to fight over his sword. In their minds, Jiang Chen was no different from dead meat.

“Enough, let’s wait until we’ve killed Jiang Chen, only then will we decide who the sword goes to. I don’t want to fight with you right now.”

Shangguan Yiqing shouted out. Before Jiang Chen showed up, he didn’t want internal fights. Their top priority was to kill Jiang Chen. As for the distribution of Jiang Chen’s wealth, it was better to wait until after they had killed Jiang Chen.

Two hours later, two figures flew in from the far distance and stopped not far in front of Mount Tianyuan. These two figures were Jiang Chen, and the warrior who led him here.

“Little brother, Mount Tianyuan is right in front of us.”

The warrior pointed at the desolate mountain range and spoke.

“En, let’s go!”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He took a big step forward and flew

toward the mountain range. Soon, the two men reached the inner area of the mountain range. The scene on top of the mountain peak was clearly revealed in front of them. They also found that around the mountain peak, many people had gathered to watch the show.

“Everyone, how can your Gathering of Skynet be considered a grand event without me?”

A bright and clear voice interrupted everyone from continuing drinking. They immediately raised their heads and threw glances into the direction where that sound came from. What they saw was two men walking toward their direction in the sky. The leading man was a young man dressed in white, he was a handsome and gentle looking man, and he carried a faint smile on his face. His bright eyes shone like the brightest stars in the night’s sky. Next to him was middle aged warrior who was trembling with excitement.

“Jiang Chen!”

Looking at this young man in white, someone immediately cried out in surprise. As a man who had personally seen Jiang Chen on the Island of Ice, this guy could instantly recognize this young man’s identity.

“What? He is that Jiang Chen?”

Hearing Jiang Chen’s name, the crowd instantly jumped up from their seats, including Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi. The sword that was next to Xuan Yuzi was now held in his hand, emitting a cold and bright reflection.

“That’s right, it’s me.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulder. An expression basically saying he didn’t take any of them seriously could be found on his face.

But, the middle aged warrior standing next to Jiang Chen was greatly terrified. He tripped on his feet and nearly fell down from the sky! Without hesitating, he immediately turned around and fled far away from Jiang Chen, joining the nearby crowd, sweat pouring down all over his face.

“Damn it, daddy actually brought Jiang Chen here?!”

The warriors kept wiping the cold sweat from his face. He still couldn’t control his trembling body. Only now did he realize that this young man indeed looked the same as the description of that legendary Jiang Chen. White clothes, about 17 years old, and a handsome face.

“Jiang Chen, honestly, I never expected you to come here.”

Although Shangguan Yiqing was squinting his eyes, it still couldn’t hide the brightness within. Without blinking, he examined Jiang Chen, as if he was trying to see through every inch of him.

“Of course. If I hadn’t shown up, you would all be very

disappointed.”

While saying that, Jiang Chen walked step by step toward the mountain peak. With just a few steps, he had arrived. There were no Yuan energy ripples that could be sensed from his body, but no one dared underestimate him. Some of the Late Divine Core geniuses who were standing close to Jiang Chen started backing off out of fear.

The name Jiang Chen by itself was a symbol, a symbol capable of sending shivers down the spines of these guys, especially those who had personally witnessed how ferocious Jiang Chen was back on the Island of Ice, they were even more scared. Without having witnessed how Jiang Chen fought before, no one would be able to know just how terrifying this young man truly could be.

The arrival of Jiang Chen caused those warriors who were here to watch the show to instantly become restless. Each and every single one of them threw their gazes at Jiang Chen.

“So, this is Jiang Chen? He does look really young! I never thought he’d actually come here!”

“He is doomed! Shangguan Yiqing has set up the Skynet Formation, coming here alone is no different than committing suicide!”

“Not necessarily. This Jiang Chen doesn’t seem to be an idiot, and he since he dared to come here, I’m sure he must have prepared something. Let’s just wait and see, I’m sure there will be



a difficult fight here today.”

.....

Anyone who had heard about what Jiang Chen had done so far knew one thing; with Jiang Chen’s character, he would definitely wreak havoc at today’s Gathering of Skynet!

“Jiang Chen, I don’t know if you’re an idiot, or just overconfident. I don’t mind telling you this; I’ve set up a Skynet Formation here, and since you’re already here, there is no way you can run away.”

The smile on Shangguan Yiqing’s face was getting bigger and bigger.

“Many people have tried to capture me. But, until now, I’ve still been able to go wherever I like.”

Jiang Chen casually said. Then, he simply grabbed a wine bottle on the table next to him and drank it in one gulp. Then, he praised, “Good wine!”

“Jiang Chen, I really admire your courage for coming here alone. But, why didn’t you bring any of your helpers?”

Shangguan Yiqing asked with a sneer.

“I don’t need anyone to help. Also, I have no clue why you’ve asked so many stinking potatoes and rotten eggs to come here. Do you really think that with just these guys alone, you’ll be able to defeat me? Or, did you ask them to come here to die?”

Jiang Chen pointed at the Divine Core geniuses and spoke to them in a rude manner.

His words caused ugly expressions to bloom onto the faces in the crowd. No matter what, they were all elites from different powers, rare geniuses! But this guy, he just called them stinking potatoes and rotten eggs! This really pissed them off!

“Bastard, who do you think you are? I’m going to kill you today and make you die without a proper burial ground!”

A young and aggressive man was the first to jump out. He jumped out as he pointed his finger at Jiang Chen’s nose and scolded. Since they had Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi to back them up, these men had become very daring.

But too bad, he just didn’t know who Jiang Chen really was.

“Is that so?”

Jiang Chen’s gaze became cold. With a move of his arm, he tightly clenched the young man’s neck with speed like a clap of thunder. It was so fast that this young man didn’t have any time to react at all!

## Chapter 355 – A Genius's Charm

---

At this moment, the young man finally sensed the aura of death. Fear emerged from the bottom of his heart, and during this last moment of his life, the only thought in this young man was regret. He was truly regretting his desire to participate in this Gathering of Skynet, and was even regretting being the first one to come out and say something.

Too bad, it was useless to regret! There were a lot of different medicines in this world, even immortal pills and miraculous medicines. However, there were no medicine that could heal someone's regret.

Crack!

Jiang Chen squeezed his palm, crushing the young man's throat in an instant. The gap between them was simply too big. For Jiang Chen, killing him was no different from killing an ant.

With both eyes wide open, the young man slowly fell down to the ground. Jiang Chen pulled his arm back, not taking a second look at this young man.

Jiang Chen's actions instantly brought the crowd to a turmoil. Those Divine Core warriors who stood closest to Jiang Chen were greatly terrified, and they couldn't help but start backing off. Facing this young man who behaved like a demon caused them to completely lose all their arrogance and confidence. Even with Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi standing behind them, they still

didn't feel safe.

Especially those few men who had gone to the Island of Ice and had witnessed Jiang Chen's fierce approaches. Their fear was much stronger compared to the other people around them. Just standing opposite of Jiang Chen caused them to feel a tremendous pressure.

“Jiang Chen, even in such a situation you still dare kill? Your courage is indeed extremely great!”

Xuan Yuzi raised the longsword in his hand high up, and pointed it at Jiang Chen who stood opposite of him. His energy started rising bit by bit, and the longsword in his hand was emitting layers of cold lights, causing those who looked at him to feel a shiver running down their spines.

“You two mighty still be worthy opponents, but I just don't understand, why did you call these people here, is it because you want them dead? I think, you just want to satisfy your desire of being someone above all else. You called them here to show that you two have some influence, and with that, you can show off your superiority. Am I right?”

Jiang Chen knew what Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi were up to at the back. It was completely useless for them to organize this Gathering of Skynet. If they really wanted to kill him, they could just challenge him directly, they didn't have to call upon so many warriors. Jiang Chen believed that both of them knew this very well, because none of these warriors would be able to provide them with any help.

“Jiang Chen, those who come here are my friends! I, Shangguan Yiqing will never allow you to kill them!”

Shangguan Yiqing shouted out loudly. His words made him seem like someone loyal to his friends, causing those in the crowd to feel better, actually.

“Haha, if I was any of you, I would leave this place as soon as possible, without getting my feet wet in this matter. Now, I’ll give you all of you a chance. Those who leave; I won’t kill. Those who stay; perish together with Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi.”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter as his eyes swept across the crowd. He was giving these guys a chance to survive.

His words brought the crowd to a turmoil once again, especially those who had been to the Island of Ice. They knew very well how terrifying Jiang Chen could be. If they didn’t leave, it was highly possible they would be killed by him. To be frank, the majority of the people came here because they thought Jiang Chen wouldn’t show up. With that, not only would they not have to face Jiang Chen, they would also be able to befriend Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi.

But who could have predicted this? Jiang Chen did show up! And not only that, it took him almost no time! However, if they left right now, the consequences would be devastating. Once they offended Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi, there would be no room for them to live in the Jian Province any longer.

Now, they could only hope that the Skynet Formation set up by Shangguan Yiqing could really kill Jiang Chen.

“Cut the bullshit, since you’re here, you won’t have the chance to leave this place any longer. Everyone, listen to me, proceed to your respective positions in the Skynet Formation, we need to completely lock down this area and give Jiang Chen no chance to escape!”

Shangguan Yiqing suddenly shouted out loudly.

“Yes!”

The crowd immediately replied, and each person started flying in different directions, positioning themselves in different spots. The relaxed drinking session had suddenly turned into a fierce battlefield.

“Skynet Formation, interesting. Let me see how powerful this formation is.”

A sneer emerged onto Jiang Chen’s face. After that, he unleashed his energy, causing powerful energy waves to spread out in all directions like the ocean’s waves. His fighting intent was incredibly powerful, and his mighty energy shocked Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi. It was really difficult to imagine how a Late Divine Core warrior could unleash such explosive energy.

Shangguan Yiqing waved his arm and took out a golden talisman. After that, he simply threw it into the sky. He then injected it with a force, causing it to explode and turn into thousands of tiny bits of golden sparks and disappear.

At the same time, a faded light barrier suddenly appeared and covered 6 kilometers of circumference. Those warriors who were positioned on different spots had completely locked this place down.

“Looks like they did have some use. But, too bad, this formation is really bad, I can destroy it with just a single strike.”

Jiang Chen threw a casual look at the formation. Although its name was the Skynet Formation, in Jiang Chen’s eyes, there were leaks everywhere. He had dozens of methods he could use to break it. Shangguan Yiqing did have some talent in the field of formations, rarely anyone from the younger generations could be compared with him. But, since his opponent was Jiang Chen, who was once the greatest Saint underneath the Heavens, the gap between them was not small.

“Really? Show me what makes you so arrogant then!”

After saying that, Xuan Yuzi swung the longsword in his hand and unleashed a dazzling sword energy at Jiang Chen. It was such a powerful strike that it sliced through the void wherever it passed. All the geniuses from the Myriad Sword Sect were experts with the sword, there were few capable of defending against their attacks.

Jiang Chen just stood at the same spot without moving a bit. When the sword energy neared him, he forcefully pointed out with his finger, unleashing a huge golden finger which collided with the sword energy.

Devastating energy ripples swept across the area, shattering all the stone tables into pieces.

“His combat strength is about the same as Wu Cong’s.”

Jiang Chen was immediately able to determine the actual combat strength of Xuan Yuzi, it was not much different from Wu Cong’s. Therefore, Jiang Chen had no fear when fighting him face to face. If he truly took out the Heavenly Saint Sword, he was very confident he would be able to kill Xuan Yuzi.

“Slash of Dawn, first style!”

Xuan Yuzi strong once again. The longsword in his hand transformed into a long dragon, and it shone like a sword beam. With the energy of the dawn, it arrived in front of Jiang Chen in the blink of an eye.

“Nice sword technique, but only that. Let’s be quick, I don’t have time to play with you.”

With a wave of his arm, the Heavenly Saint Sword instantly appeared in Jiang Chen’s hand and let out a sharp cry. Jiang Chen obviously wanted to finish this battle as soon as possible. His



sudden appearance at Mount Tianyuan had gone beyond everyone's expectation. If he spent too much time here, some senior warriors from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect might show up, and that was not something he wanted to see.

Buzz!

The Heavenly Saint Sword was shaking and producing a buzzing sound. It drew a curve in the air and collided with Xuan Yuzi's attack, instantly destroying it.

Ha!

After that, Jiang Chen let out a loud shout and raised the Heavenly Saint Sword high up into the air, then he forcefully swung it at Xuan Yuzi. It was an attack without any complicated techniques, but it was extremely fast and fierce.

“Slash of Dawn, second style!”

Xuan Yuzi immediately unleashed a counterattack. As the Myriad Sword Sect's number one genius, his mastery over the sword was naturally very proficient.

The air was shaking, and a rainbow-colored sword energy flew across the sky. Xuan Yuzi unleashed a gigantic swordnet that spun like a tornado.

But, Jiang Chen's sword strike was extremely heavy. It slashed

down from above and even created a small crack in the void as it forcefully collided with the gigantic swordnet.

Bang!

The collision produced a deafening explosive sound, and more than half of the mountain peaks in the mountain range were destroyed. The invincible sword energy completely destroyed Xuan Yuzi's swordnet, but the energy contained within Jiang Chen's strike was far from depleted, it was still rolling forward like a fierce tsunami.

Tap tap tap...

Pushed by this massive force, Xuan Yuzi was knocked back a few dozen steps before he could stabilize his body. Because of this backlash, his face had become extremely pale, and his Qi and Blood was in a bad state.

“How can this be possible?”

Xuan Yuzi was greatly frightened; he was defeated by a Divine Core young man, even with his formidable combat strength! This was like a nightmare for him! But soon after, he threw his glance onto the longsword in Jiang Chen's hand. Besides the terrified expression, a look of greed could be found.

“It's such a mighty weapon! Without that sword, Jiang Chen would be no match for me at all!”

Xuan Yuzi blamed his defeat on the longsword in Jiang Chen's hand.

“This guy is just as strong as the rumors say. Xuan Yuzi, we need to attack him together!”

After witnessing how formidable Jiang Chen was, Shangguan Yiqing dared not underestimate him anymore. He leapt up into the sky and sat down right in the middle of the air, then he took out a red zither and placed it on top of his lap.

This zither's sound was extremely piercing, it sounded just like a sharp knife capable of penetrating anything. It was Shangguan Yiqing's combat weapon!

Shangguan Yiqing placed his palm on top of the strings and started striking them. In an instant, a beautiful melody resounded throughout the mountain range. It was melodious and pleasant to hear.

“I will play the zither and laugh at the Heavens!”

All of a sudden, the zither melody's energy changed. Individual notes of the melody started shooting out from the strings, and they carried tremendous force, like countless deadly blades. Each and every single one of them were seemingly capable of slicing through anything!

Not only did this melody carry a deadly strength, the sound was even capable of attacking the enemy's mind. It was a horrifying attack!

“Slash of Dawn, third style!”

On the other side, Xuan Yuzi struck once again. It was as if the longsword in his hand had become alive, he unleashed countless sword energies which formed into a dazzling sea of swords.

For the first time in history, the two number one geniuses from the Jian Province were working together! They were enemies of life or death who had fought each other many times, so they were actually able to form a perfect teamwork. The sound-waves and the sea of sword blanketed the place. Wherever they passed, mountains would crumble, and rocks would be sent flying all over the place.

“Hmph! There is nothing the Heavenly Saint Sword can't destroy!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He simply threw the Heavenly Saint Sword in the sky, causing it to transform in a few huge swords in an instant. After that, these few huge sword exploded into thousands of swords, each of them looking exactly like the Heavenly Saint Sword. Looking at it from the outside, no one could really figure out which one was the real Heavenly Saint Sword.

# Chapter 356 – Destroying The Formation With Brute Force

---

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

The entire sky above the mountain range was filled with glints and flashes of cold steel. All those sword created by the Heavenly Saint Sword turned into shooting stars as they flew across the area. Each and every single one of them looked like a deadly sword, causing those who looked at them to feel a shiver running down their spine.

Clang, clang, clang...

Bang! ...

These sword clashed with the sea of swords unleashed by Xuan Yuzi. After that, they continued on and collided with Shangguan Yiqing's sound waves, causing the entire scene to become extremely violent. First, there were clanging sounds and sparks flying off in all directions, and then, the other half of the mountain underneath them was destroyed, followed by a loud explosive sound.

Swoosh!

The Heavenly Saint Sword once again cried out. Since it was a sentient weapon, it just turned around and fell back into Jiang Chen's hand.

On the other side, Xuan Yuzi was knocked back a few steps once again. His expression had become even uglier. He wasn't the only one to suffer, one of the strings on Shangguan Yiqing's zither was broken. This was his beloved weapon, and there were few who could resist its power. However, he had never expected it to crack after just one exchange with Jiang Chen.

It was such an intense battle, but the ending was completely unimaginable. Those warriors who stood outside Mount Tian yuan were very terrified, especially the warrior who had brought Jiang Chen here. He couldn't help but continuously wipe sweat off his forehead.

“Oh Heavens, just how strong is he? He's fighting those two at the same time, but he still has the upper hand! If I wasn't here to witness this myself, I wouldn't believe any of it at all!”

“Extremely fierce and brutal! I don't think he's a Combat Soul warrior, but in term of talent and potential, Jiang Chen is definitely number one in the Eastern Continent's younger generation!”

“Let's just continue watching, the battle has just begun; it's far from finished! The Skynet Formation set up by Shangguan Yiqing has yet to be used! I've heard that this formation has an incredible effect, it can actually double someone's combat strength!”

.....

None of the people in the crowd felt like they had wasted their time by coming here, because they were witnessing such a magnificent show. Watching how formidable Jiang Chen was with their own eyes, the shock they received was much different from hearing it from someone else.

As for those warriors who were stationed in their respective positions within the Skynet Formation, when they saw how formidable Jiang Chen was, their expressions immediately turned ugly. None of them had expected this, they thought that with the combined force of Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi, Jiang Chen would definitely be torn into a thousand pieces. However, what happened was actually the opposite of what they had expected. The combined force of the two number one geniuses from the Jian Province was actually being suppressed by this guy alone!

“This guy’s combat strength is more or less equal to ours, but more importantly, the sword in his hand is too powerful!”

Xuan Yuzi said.

“It’s such a waste for him to have that sword.”

A greedy look could be found in Shangguan Yiqing’s eyes. The mighty strength of the Heavenly Saint Sword was more than enough to compare it to an ordinary King Weapon. No one could resist its temptation.

“Listen to my command! No paths in the Heavens; no doors on the ground; the Skynet!”

Shangguan Yiqing shouted out loudly as he connected his aura to the Skynet Formation. At the same time, bright beams shout out from all those warriors and fell into Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi's bodies.

Buzz...

The void surrounding the two men shook, and their bodies were covered with boiling energies. By utilizing the Skynet Formation, Shangguan Yiqing had temporarily merged everyone's combat strength into his and Xuan Yuzi's body. With this, their combat strength was double."

"The Union of Strings; the Luan and Phoenix's Cry!"

Embracing the red zither, Shangguan Yiqing played different tunes this time. It was a pleasant tune that filled the entire sky with colorful lights, as if it was pleasant spring day. However, these bright and colorful lights were extremely devastating! Furthermore, this pleasant tune was like a true demon's tune, and once it entered a person's mind, it would immediately distract the person, causing him to be absent minded for a short moment of time. During a fight between true warriors, any split second lost was deadly!

"Hmph!"

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he unleashed a bright sword energy with the Heavenly Saint Sword which collided with



the colorful bright lights and the tunes. At the same time, he circulated the Great Soul Derivation Skill, completely protecting his sea of consciousness and soul, not allowing the tune any chance to get close to him.

“Ruthless Slash!”

Xuan Yuzi, whose combat strength was doubled, attacked. In a ruthless manner, he swung the longsword in his hand, unleashed a vase sea of swords which flooded the entire battlefield.

“Haha, show me what you got!”

Jiang Chen was laughing heartily, filled with intense fighting intent. He really loved this kind of blood boiling battle. Each time he was in a battle like this, he would feel his warrior blood boiling. It was a sensation he often felt as he fought his way to the top in his previous life.

The Heavenly Saint Sword was Jiang Chen’s Natal Weapon, and it was connected to Jiang Chen’s life. At any time, he could unify his thoughts with its. Just like now, Jiang Chen had unified his thoughts with the Heavenly Saint Sword, and with just a thought in his mind, the Heavenly Saint Sword would immediately respond accordingly. This was the perfect match between a human and his combat weapon.

Bang!

The explosive sounds didn't seem to stop sounding out, as the shockwaves of the battle swept across the place. It was an incredibly violent battle, and the tremendous forces had nearly destroyed the entire Mount Tianyuan. At the same time, the faces of those warriors who were watching from far away had turned pale, and they were constantly stepping backwards, scared they might get hit by the devastating shockwaves. Therefore, they could only stand in the middle of the air a dozen kilometers away.

It seemed like the battle was going to last for quite some time. A few minutes later, these three men had finally stopped attacking, and Jiang Chen stood a few steps behind where he originally stood. Nonetheless, with Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi's combat strength double, as well as their good teamwork, they now had the ability to turn the tables.

Even with the Heavenly Saint Sword, Jiang Chen was not an undefeatable man. In the current situation where he had to fight two powerful men at the same time, it was actually pretty difficult for him. Therefore, he was at a disadvantageous position after exchanged a few rounds of attacks.

Even so, Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi were still tremendously shocked in their hearts. Jiang Chen's mightiness had completely gone beyond their expectations. Both of them had merged with the formation, and they were fighting Jiang Chen together, but even with all this, they were only slightly advantageous. After exchanging so many attacks, they still hadn't been able to hurt Jiang Chen at all.

“Let's continue attacking, I have to kill him today!”

Xuan Yuzi said with a loud voice.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, I admit that your combat strength is incredible! But even so, you still can’t escape the Skynet Formation! I suggest you surrender now, no matter how you fight, you’re still going to die by our hands sooner or later!”

Shangguan Yiqing said with a laugh.

“Is that so?”

A sneer emerged onto Jiang Chen’s face. He took a step forward, and with incredible speed, he arrived in front of a warrior who was part of the formation.

Puchi!

The warrior was extremely terrified, and before he could do anything, Jiang Chen had chopped off his head, killing him, and thrown his dead body down from the sky. After that, with the same speed, Jiang Chen continued toward a second warrior.

He knew that if he wanted to kill Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi, he would need to break this Skynet Formation first. After he killed all these warriors who were part of the formation, Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi’s combat strength would be reduced to its original, and Jiang Chen would be able to kill them with full force.

Jiang Chen didn't want to delay any longer. The more time he spent in this battle, the more unfavorable the situation would become.

Jiang Chen was too fast. Finally, when the crowd realized what was going on, three men had already died underneath his sword. The Skynet Formation was solely controlled by Shangguan Yiqing, and he could actually give these warriors a boost in their strength so that they could defend themselves from Jiang Chen. However, Shangguan Yiqing hadn't expected Jiang Chen to do this, so he was too late to stop him.

“Bastard!”

Shangguan Yiqing was extremely furious. He and Xuan Yuzi immediately leapt forward and surrounded Jiang Chen by standing in front of him and behind him, stopping him from killing the men. If they didn't stop him, the losses would be great.

“Nine Phantom Wolves!”

Jiang Chen gently shouted out. He unleashed nine identical figures of himself at the same time, instantly distracting both Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi. Taking this opportunity, the real Jiang Chen immediately flew away from them, and arrived in front of a Combat Soul warrior.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen never showed any mercy. He raised the Heavenly Saint Sword high up into the air and slashed down with a tremendous force. But, at the same time, this Combat Soul warrior received a boost to his strength. His combat strength was instantly raised to three times what it usually was.

Too bad, an Early Combat Soul genius, even if his combat strength was five times stronger than usual, he would never be Jiang Chen's match.

Puchi!

One strike! One strike and the Combat Soul warrior was sliced in half! He died miserably on the spot.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

Without giving Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi any chance to respond, Jiang Chen unleashed the Nine Phantom Wolves once again. At this moment, there were figures of Jiang Chen everywhere, dazzling all those who were watching the battle.

“Damn it, what kind of movement skill is this?!”

Xuan Yuzi cursed.

Arrhh!!

Another blood-curdling screech sounded out; another Early Combat Soul warrior was killed by Jiang Chen. Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi could clearly feel their combat strength being reduced.

What happened next was like a doomsday for the geniuses who stood within the Skynet Formation. Jiang Chen continuously avoided Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi's attacks, and appeared in front of the geniuses in the formation. Although they were prepared, whenever Jiang Chen struck, it meant death for them.

Soon, more than a dozen geniuses were killed by Jiang Chen. He was like a devil king that came straight from hell. Wherever he went, someone would be killed.

“I found the real him!”

Shangguan Yiqing suddenly shouted out. He had finally locked onto the real Jiang Chen. Without hesitating, he immediately attacked together with Xuan Yuzi.

“Haha, it's all done!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. So what if Shangguan Yiqing finally found the real him? It was too late! The center of this Skynet Formation was Shangguan Yiqing, but after losing the support of so many people, cracks had already appeared on it, and it no longer posed any threat to Jiang Chen.

“I’ll destroy your formation with brute force; break for me!”

Jiang Chen shouted out in a fierce manner. He was like a mighty lion on a rampage! He raised the Heavenly Saint Sword high up into the air, and slashed down toward the light barrier in the sky!

Slash!

Nothing could stand in front of the Heavenly Saint Sword unhurt, especially together with the support of 4,500 Dragon Marks. The light barrier simply couldn’t resist any more, and a huge crack was produced, as a cause of Jiang Chen’s attack.

Ha!

Jiang Chen once again shouted out in a fierce manner. Numerous Dragon Marks started hovering around the Heavenly Saint Sword, and a massive amount of energy shot out from Jiang Che’s body like a tsunami, shattering the light barrier in an instant.

# Chapter 357 – Earth's Force

---

Crack...

When part of the formation was broken, the entire formation was destined to be completely destroyed. Cracking sounds started sounding out from the huge light barrier, and in just a short amount of time, cracks could be seen everywhere. After that, the formation completely shattered with a loud explosive sound.

Blergh! ...

Arghh! ...

Miserable shrieks could be heard everywhere. Those geniuses who were stationed in different positions were uncontrollably throwing up blood, and falling down from the sky one after the other. Some with faster reflexes could still stabilize themselves, but none were spared from being severely injured.

Before this, they had all merged their attention into the formation. In other words, all these geniuses had merged themselves with the Skynet Formation. They were considered bound together with it, for the good and the bad.

Now, since the Skynet Formation had been completely destroyed by Jiang Chen, these geniuses would naturally have to suffer the massive backlash. This backlash was truly devastating, and they could be considered really lucky for not dying on the spot. Of course, they had lost all ability to fight now, and it would take



them at least 2-3 months of recovery before they could get back to normal.

Even Xuan Yuzi who stood not far away had suffered a backlash. He was knocked back, and could only regain control over his body after flying about 40 meters back. However, surprisingly, Shangguan Yiqing who was at the center of the formation didn't seem to be affected at all. He still wore a calm expression on his face.

“Nothing actually happened to you?”

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes and threw a look of disbelief at Shangguan Yiqing. The Skynet Formation was created by Shangguan Yiqing himself, and it was based on him as the center point. If it was destroyed, he would be the one to suffer the biggest backlash. But now, all the others had suffered a huge backlash, but not him. This was really unusual.

“Jiang Chen, I hate to admit this, but your formidable cultivation is really beyond my imagination. But, did you really think this was the only thing I had prepared for you?”

Shangguan Yiqing said with a sneer.

“It looks like the Skynet Formation has been divided into two parts by you. The I destroyed just now wasn't the real Skynet Formation.”

Jiang Chen said.

“You’re really smart! Let me tell you, the real Skynet Formation is right here!”

Shangguan Yiqing flipped his palm and retrieved another golden talisman. It was hovering up and down within his palm, and it looked mystical.

“Jiang Chen, I’ll let you witness my real mightiness now!”

Shangguan Yiqing let out a cold laugh. With a powerful squeeze, he shattered the talisman, causing it to turn into golden lights which merged into his body. Within a split second, a loud bang was heard, and the entire Mount Tianyuan started trembling.

Rumble!

Beams of yellow earth lights rose from the surroundings of Mount Tianyuan, instantly covering the entire Mount Tianyuan and completely locking it down.

“Earth’s Force.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes shook. To his surprise, these beams of light were actually the Earth’s Source Force. The fact that Shangguan Yiqing was able to communicate with the Earth and borrow its force really shocked Jiang Chen.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, are you afraid right now? Let me tell you, this is the real Skynet Formation! I found Mount Tianyuan’s main earth vein before coming here, and I have set up an advanced formation with it! Now, I can borrow the Earth’s Force from the entire Mount Tianyuan! Even a Late Combat Soul warrior would be killed by me with this incredible force, not just you!”

Shangguan Yiqing burst into laughter. Right after he finished speaking, beams of light immediately shot toward him and merged into a body. In the blink of an eye, his combat strength had increased to be at least three times more than what it was before. However, this wasn’t the frightening part. The face that he was able to control the force of this mountain range was something really devastating!

“Shangguan Yiqing, if my guess is correct, this was a surprise prepared specially for Xuan Yuzi, so that you could kill two birds with one stone. I have to say, this is a brilliant strategy! You are truly a ruthless and wicked man!”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

Jiang Chen’s words instantly caused Xuan Yuzi’s expression to change. He immediately threw his glance at Shangguan Yiqing, as if he was throwing some sharp blades at him. Jiang Chen’s words were indeed a knock onto his head. After all this turmoil, this hidden Skynet Formation was not prepared for Jiang Chen, but for him, Xuan Yuzi.

What was happening right now had become clear. According to the original plan, the previous Skynet Formation was more than enough to kill Jiang Chen, so there was obviously no need for Shangguan Yiqing to prepare more than that. However, he did actually carefully prepare something else, and his motive was very obvious. Once they killed Jiang Chen, Shangguan Yiqing would utilize the mountain range's force and kill Xuan Yuzi. With that, he would be able to kill two birds with one stone, and he would also be able to obtain all of Jiang Chen's wealth. It was a truly crafty plan!

"Alright, Shangguan Yiqing, I never thought your plot would include me. I'm truly blind to have joined forces with you!"

Xuan Yuzi couldn't hide the extreme anger on his face. The feeling of betrayal caused him to feel sullen.

"Xuan Yuzi, don't listen to that Jiang Chen! This is a backup plan I prepared for him!"

Shangguan Yiqing tried to explain.

"What a joke! If you did prepare this as a backup plan, why didn't you tell me earlier? Don't tell me it was for my own good... or, are you really so smart that you could foretell that Jiang Chen would be able to defeat the first formation?"

Xuan Yuzi was furious right now. Although he should be standing together with Shangguan Yiqing and fight Jiang Chen, he was feeling a strong desire to kill Shangguan Yiqing right now. It

wasn't difficult to imagine that if Jiang Chen was killed now, it would be his turn the next moment. This wicked plot caused Xuan Yuzi's hatred of Shangguan Yiqing to become stronger than his hatred for Jiang Chen.

“Haha, Xuan Yuzi, since you've learned everything, I'll admit it. Correct, the second Skynet Formation was indeed specifically prepared for you. This was such a good opportunity, how could I let go of this rare chance to kill my two biggest enemies in one go? However, not being able to kill Jiang Chen just now was really out of my expectations; especially him breaking my formation. But never mind that, it won't change anything! I control the entire mountain range's force, and both of you are going to die here! Everything here has been completely locked down by me, and none of are going to run away from me!”

Shangguan Yiqing let out a victorious laughter. He had been preparing to kill both Jiang Chen and Xuan Yuzi today.

“Xuan Yuzi, did you hear that? Shangguan Yiqing would never organize this Gathering of Skynet with the sole intent of killing me, because he wouldn't know if I would show up or not. Judging from what he said just now, even if I didn't show up, his preparations would still not go to waste, because he could still use them to kill you.”

Jiang Chen's voice was loud and clear as he spoke. He really wished to see how this genius from the Myriad Sword Sect would react when he was furious. Provoking his enemies and making them attack each other gave Jiang Chen a pleasant feeling.

“Slash of Dawn!”

Xuan Yuzi shouted out loudly. His voice was filled with the explosive fury within his heart. He frenziedly swung the sword in his hand, but this time, his target was no longer Jiang Chen, but his so called ally, Shangguan Yiqing!

Xuan Yuzi was completely furious. Not once in his life had he been so angry! This plan was actually mainly designed for him!

Slash!

A gigantic net made from countless sword arrived in front of Shangguan Yiqing in the blink of an eye. However, Shangguan Yiqing felt no fear, he just casually pointed his finger, unleashing an energy beam that looked like a long dragon toward Xuan Yuzi.

Bang!

The Earth's Force collided with Xuan Yuzi's Slash of Dawn, producing a deafening loud explosive sound. One of the mountain peaks underneath them was instantly shattered by this tremendous force. However, those broken stone were instantly controlled by Shangguan Yiqing. He turned them into a violent tornado which crashed toward Xuan Yuzi.

The Earth's Force was simply too powerful, it almost control the entire mountain range's force! Xuan Yuzi turned pale with fright. He continuously swung the longsword in his hand, using all the

strength in his body to defend himself from this attack. However, his expression was extremely ugly.

“Haha, Xuan Yuzi, as long as we’re within Mount Tianyuan’s area, I am the absolutely master of everything! You are going to die here today, and so are you, Jiang Chen! Both of you will become stepping stones on my path to the top, you two are just cannon fodder! I am the true number one genius amongst the entire Eastern Continent’s younger generation!”

Shangguan Yiqing’s black hair was dancing in the wind, and his entire body was portraying an extremely arrogant attitude. The ability to control the Earth’s Force made him feel like some kind of ultimate master. This feeling of invincibility truly infatuated him.

“Heavens, what is going on right now? Why did Shangguan Yiqing suddenly become so powerful?”

“This is terrifying! Shangguan Yiqing is such a crafty and unrevealing man, he was actually scheming against his own ally! He is also an expert in formations! With his knowledge, he has the ability to control the entire Mount Tianyuan’s force and borrow the Earth’s Force, this is incredible! Looks like Jiang Chen won’t be the only one, even Xuan Yuzi is going to die here today!”

“Precisely! I never thought Shangguan Yiqing was such a ruthless man! Having a friend like him is something really dangerous!”

.....

Those who stood outside Mount Tianyuan all had mixed emotions. No one had expected the battle would turn out like this. The allies had suddenly become enemies, and now, the situation had become much messier.

“The Earth’s Force? Too bad, this place is only a desolate mountain range, even if you can borrow its force, with your strength, you can’t control it too much.”

Jiang Chen sneered.

“My control over is more than enough to kill you.”

Shangguan Yiqing waved his palm and unleashed a figure of a dragon with the Earth’s Force. It then produced a deafening sound, and thrust toward Jiang Chen. Whenever it passed a mountain, the peak would shatter, and all the gravel would rise up and turn into a violent tornado.

“Come here!”

No signs of fear could be found on Jiang Chen’s face. The Heavenly Saint Sword was vibrating violently in his hand, as if it was really excited to welcome the enemy. Numerous Dragon Marks were covering it, and with Jiang Chen’s control, the Heavenly Saint Sword expanded and became more than 40 meters long. Then, its energy flared up, and it slashed forward.

Boom!



The Heavenly Saint Sword instantly caused the Earth's Force to perish, but just a split second later, Shangguan Yiqing had formed a few other Earth's Forces and forcefully thrown them toward Jiang Chen. On the other side, Xuan Yuzi had struck once again, but his attack was blocked off by the Earth's Force as well.

Jiang Chen and Xuan Yuzi who were once enemies were now working together in attempts to kill Shangguan Yiqing. The sudden turn caused many people to feel really confused.

“Haha, you two are going to die today!”

Shangguan Yiqing looked very mighty at this moment. With just a thought, he was able to control the Earth's Force. In the current situation where he had to fight two men at once, he was still on the advantageous side, and Jiang Chen was currently trapped by the tornado.

# Chapter 358 - Crushed

---

Bang!

The entire Mount Tianyuan had become an incredibly violent scene. The sand was flying, and the rocks were rolling around everywhere. The devastating energy tornado was wreaking havoc, destroying everything along its way. This scene looked like something straight out of doomsday! The faces of those watching from afar had turned pale from fright. It wasn't difficult to imagine that if any one of them was dragged into the battlefield, they would perish in an instant.

Arghh!

A miserable shriek sounded out from a corner underneath Mount Tianyuan. It was a Late Divine Core genius who got hit by the energy which leaked out from the formation. His entire body turned into dust on the spot.

Right now, all those geniuses who came here because of Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi's calling had become lambs waiting to be slaughtered. Every one of them were suffering from severe injuries because of the previous backlash, and could only hide in a corner on Mount Tianyuan. However, since the battle between those three mighty warriors involved the entire Mount Tianyuan, they didn't really have any place to hide. The devastating shockwaves from the battle was not something they could resist, and when someone got hit, he would instantly be killed.

“Brother Shangguan, please open up a small path so we can get out from here!”

Someone shouted toward Shangguan Yiqing from the sky. The entire Mount Tianyuan was completely locked up by him, and after these geniuses fell down from the sky previously, they had been trapped here before they could run away. When they found out that everything here was going to perish because of the battle’s devastating forces, they just wanted to get out from here before it was too late; before they all had the same endings as those shattered rocks.

However, Shangguan Yiqing was busy fighting Jiang Chen and Xuan Yuzi, he didn’t have the time to bother with the safety of these geniuses. It was also impossible for him to open a path for them to get out, as it had taken him a great amount of work to set up this formation in order to trap both Jiang Chen and Xuan Yuzi within. Once he opened it up, all his hard work would go to waste, and if he couldn’t borrow the Earth’s Force, Jiang Chen and Xuan Yuzi might immediately tear him to pieces.

Arghh!

Another miserable shriek was heard. As the battle was getting more and more intense, another genius was accidentally killed, and his body was completely ripped into pieces, smearing his blood and flesh all over the place. He died in a most miserable manner.

“Brother Shangguan, we were here to help you, please spare our lives!”

Someone shouted once again. No one wanted to die, especially not in such a meaningless way.

“Shangguan Yiqing, how can you just ignore our safety? You’re a heartless man!”

Someone couldn’t stand it any longer. If this continued, all of them were soon going to die, as they were all severely wounded. They just didn’t have the ability to withstand the battle’s devastating shockwaves.

Right now, many people were starting to feel regret. Only now did they understand Shangguan Yiqing’s true character; he was a man who was capable of scheming against his own ally, Xuan Yuzi! He was a cunning and wicked man, as well as an utterly selfish man! Now, in order to kill Jiang Chen and Xuan Yuzi, he just wouldn’t waste his time helping these geniuses out.

“Damn it! That bastard Shangguan Yiqing, he’s completely ignoring our safety!”

“I hate this! I shouldn’t have come to this Gather of Skynet! In the end, I just ended up trapped in this gigantic net!”

“Shangguan Yiqing, please, I beg you, spare our lives!”

“Damn you bastard! Daddy won’t let you go even if I become a ghost!”

.....

Helplessness and hopelessness filled the faces of these geniuses. Now that death was actually right in front of their faces, none of them were able to face it with a calm attitude; none of them wanted to die, especially those who lived a life better than others! They usually cherished their lives more than that of anything else.

But, reality was cruel. When death truly struck, none would be able to resist.

Arghh!

Another miserable shriek sounded out. Mount Tianyuan wasn't a big place, so when the ripples of the battle swept across it, it simply meant a deadly disaster for all the living beings.

Devastating ripples from the battle kept ruining every single part of Mount Tianyuan. Without any question, after today's battle, it would certainly become a land of ruin.

With the Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand, Jiang Chen hovered right in the center of the tornado. Most of Shangguan Yiqing's attacks were focused on Jiang Chen, that's why Xuan Yuzi could still remain. If Shangguan Yiqing had focused all of the Earth's Force and attack Xuan Yuzi, he would now be a dead man.

Bam!

Jiang Chen destroyed another Earth's Force with his hand. Looking around at the energy waves surrounding him like a wall, he shook his head helplessly.

“Looks like even with my current combat strength, it is impossible for me to fight Shangguan Yiqing who has control over the Earth's Force. Amongst this Earth's Force there is a key which Shangguan Yiqing uses to control Mount Tianyuan. As long as I can destroy it, the Skynet Formation will be immediately broken.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. After that, with a move of his body, he unleashed the Firethorn Combat Armor. At the same time, the Heavenly Saint Sword flew up by itself and started flying around Jiang Chen, creating a light barrier formed entirely from sword energy. With both the Firethorn Armor and the sword barrier, Jiang Chen would be able to temporarily not worry about the incoming attacks.

After setting up his defense, Jiang Chen started circulating the Great Soul Derivation skill, spreading his soul force across the place, and penetrating it into the different Earth's Force, carefully checking out their internal structures.

“Shangguan Yiqing, you and I cannot exist together!”

Xuan Yuzi was still in the same violent rage as before. His combat strength was indeed formidable, and he continuously counter-attacked with his incredible sword skills. If it was any other ordinary man, he would already have been killed by Shangguan

Yiqing.

“Hmph! Xuan Yuzi, I’ll just kill you first!”

Shangguan Yiqing coldly harrumphed. He waved his hand and threw a deadly tornado carrying countless rocks toward Xuan Yuzi. This tornado was a few times stronger than before.

Bang!

Xuan Yuzi’s counter attack was instantly destroyed by it, and the longsword in his hand was nearly knocked out from his hand. In this split second, a deadly feeling rose from the bottom of his heart. Xuan Yuzi was pale with fright, and he immediately fell back. However, even with such quick response, he was still hit by the attack, and was badly wounded. One of his arms nearly shattered, and blood was pouring out from his wounds.

“Xuan Yuzi, those who choose to become my enemy will only meet one ending; death! Now, I have trapped Jiang Chen, and after I kill you, he’ll be next, and his sword will be mine!”

Shangguan Yiqing portrayed an utmost arrogant attitude. He was surrounded by countless long dragon formed by the Earth’s Forces, and wherever he passed, this devastating army of dragons would destroy everything.

Together with these armies of tornadoes, Shangguan Yiqing simply flooded Xuan Yuzi with deadly attacks. When the tornadoes

disappeared, one of Xuan Yuzi's arms had completely vanished, and his entire body was covered with blood. Even his white hair had become completely blood red because of his own blood. The longsword in his hand was gone, while cuts and wounds could be seen all over his body. Xuan Yuzi repeatedly coughed out blood, and at this point of time, he was like an arrow at the end of its flight.

The number one genius from the Myriad Sword Sect had lost all his ability to fight. All that was left was resentment and a wicked look in his eyes.

“Haha...”

Shangguan Yiqing burst into laughter. It wasn't hard to imagine how happy he was from the sound of his laughter. For him, today was a great day, and what he had been dreaming about had finally come true! All this time, Xuan Yuzi had been his biggest rival, and they had fought each other countless times for the past ten years. Every time, they just wanted to kill each other, but, they would always end up in a draw. Finally, Shangguan Yiqing's dream came true, he was going to kill Xuan Yuzi now!

As for the fact that he had been used some despicable methods in order to reach this point, Shangguan Yiqing didn't feel bad about this. Both of them were his lifetime rivals, and sooner or later this day was going to come; either he or Xuan Yuzi would be killed in the end, and history was written by the winner. No matter how dishonorable the tactics used were, no one would really care. At least, Shangguan Yiqing didn't care.



Not far from the scene, Jiang Chen was working the Great Soul Derivation skill to its full strength. With its help, he could clearly see a beam of light that was emitting a glow darker than the others behind Shangguan Yiqing.

This Earth's Force is obviously much stronger than the rest, it contains a much stronger Earth's Force, and its aura was pretty much identical to Mount Tianyuan's aura.

“That's the one!”

Jiang Chen suddenly opened up his eyes. He reached his hand toward the Heavenly Saint Sword, grabbed it, and slashed the tornado with it. Then, he sprinted toward Shangguan Yiqing. Because Shangguan Yiqing had used most of his energy to attack Xuan Yuzi, Jiang Chen could easily break the tornado that was surrounding him.

“Jiang Chen, you're next!”

When Shangguan Yiqing found Jiang Chen rushing toward him, he immediately let loose a loud cry and strengthened his energy. In such a situation, he didn't really take Jiang Chen seriously. With just a single thought, Jiang Chen would be trapped once again, then he would easily be able to kill him.

However, before Shangguan Yiqing could have the time to control the Earth's Force, nine identical Jiang Chens suddenly appeared right in front of him. The exact scene that happened before had once again shown up. It was such an odd and

miraculous movement skill, and it simply caused him to feel a headache.

Jiang Chen's fighting experience was simply too vast. Once he decided to strike, he usually wouldn't give his opponent too much time to react. The Nine Phantom Wolves skill was not the most terrifying part of his assault, the real deal here was the Dimensional Shift.

The Dimensional Shift could also be called the Void Shift. It was a skill that could only be used efficiently by Combat King warriors, and it allowed one to walk through the void, and shift five thousand kilometers in an instant. In Jiang Chen's previous life, it was his favorite movement skill. Although he was far from the Combat King realm, but when using it together with the Nine Phantom Wolves, it could still surprise his opponent.

Just like right now, as Shangguan Yiqing was finally able to react, the real Jiang Chen had arrived behind his back, and only at this moment did Shangguan Yiqing realize that there was only one Jiang Chen left.

But, it was too late! When Jiang Chen moved, he never gave anyone the chance to hesitate, even if only for a split second.

Swoosh!

The Heavenly Saint Sword produced a deafening loud cry. The invincible like sword slashed through the beam of light right in the center. With a slashing sound, the beam of light instantly broke

into two pieces.

Right at the moment when this beam of light was destroyed, the restless Earth's Forces suddenly fell back like ocean waves, rolling back into the ground with lightning speed. The once restless Mount Tianyuan had once again become quiet.

Blergh...

A mouthful of blood shot out from the arrogant Shangguan Yiqing's mouth. His energy instantly weakened, and his mighty look was all gone.

This was the real backlash, and it was much deadlier than what those geniuses who suffered when the previous Skynet Formation was broken had suffered. For Shangguan Yiqing, a backlash like this was definitely deadly.

## Chapter 359 – Stride Away

---

Peace had finally returned to Mount Tianyuan. The devastating shockwaves that caused the hearts of the people to race were all gone. The dark clouds covering the sky were slowly diminishing, and the geniuses who had survived these doomsday nearly had tears flowing down their faces. Initially, there were dozens of them, but now, there were less than ten survivors, and each of them were in a bad shape.

The way they looked at Shangguan Yiqing instantly became vicious, their faces were filled with resentment. If not for Jiang Chen finally breaking the Skynet Formation, only death would await them.

As for those warriors who were watching the battle from outside Mount Tianyuan, each one of them were filled with mixed emotions. The way they looked at Jiang Chen had completely changed, and although they didn't know what exactly happened just now, no one doubted that Jiang Chen had destroyed the Skynet Formation, bringing peace back to Mount Tianyuan, as well as severely injuring Shangguan Yiqing.

“This is amazing! That Jiang Chen is a monstrous man! He actually turned the tables from a situation where only certain death seemingly awaited him!”

“Finished! Shangguan Yiqing is dead meat now! His actions were like throwing a huge stone onto his own feet!”

“Serves him right! He is an extremely cruel and merciless man, it would be nice if he died! This bastard organized the Gathering of Skynet purely for his own benefits, so many people suffered because of him!”

.....

Many people felt really angry at Shangguan Yiqing. No matter what, what he had done was not favorable for them. For his own benefits, he had actually schemed against everyone who came here to help.

Above the ruined Mount Tianyuan, in the sky, Shangguan Yiqing was trying hard to stabilize his trembling body. He just stared at Jiang Chen with his pair of red eyes. He couldn't believe what had just happened.

“Impossible! This is absolutely impossible! How could you destroy my formation?!”

Shangguan Yiqing's face was filled with shock. He wasn't able to take this reality, as he knew how advanced the formation he set up was. Even an ordinary master of formations wouldn't be able to find out how to break it, but now, it had just been destroyed by Jiang Chen, and in such an easy way!

“Hahaha... Shangguan Yiqing, this is too funny!”

When Xuan Yuzi who had reached the end of his flight saw what

happened, he immediately burst into laughter, as if he had gotten rid of a heavy rock that had been pressing against his chest. He would be able to die in piece now.

“Shangguan Yiqing, you are an arrow at the end of your flight now, do you still have any other tricks?”

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent tone. The backlash Shangguan Yiqing had suffered was deadly, and it had caused him to lose all his ability to fight. Xuan Yuzi was in a similar situation, so it was a piece of cake for Jiang Chen to kill them both.

“Jiang Chen, if you let me go today, I can submit a request to the Clan Chief! From today onwards, the resentment between the Shangguan Clan and you will be cancelled once and for all, what do you think? You should know the Shangguan Clan’s strength very well, you are on our must kill list. If you kill me today, the Shangguan Clan will definitely crush you to ashes!”

Shangguan Yiqing said with a smile. In his mind, what he proposed was a really tempting solution, and there was no reason for Jiang Chen to reject it.

“Is that so? I’m so afraid!”

Jiang Chen shook his head.

“It is alright for you to be afraid, no one can remain calm when facing the Shangguan Clan’s desire for revenge!”

Shangguan Yiqing said with a prideful expression.

“I really don’t know how you’re still able to portray such a superior attitude.”

Jiang Chen’s tone suddenly changed. In a ghostly manner, he instantly appeared right in front of Shangguan Yiqing. He thrust the longsword in his hand forward, penetrating Shangguan Yiqing’s body. He didn’t want to waste any more time.

“You... you...”

Shangguan Yiqing was appalled. As he felt his life force constantly slipping away, only now did he realize how cold it was when death truly struck, how frightening it was to face death. At this last moment of his life, Shangguan Yiqing finally understood what kind of person Jiang Chen was; he was a man who would never give his enemy any chance to survive!

“I don’t need to blink my eyes to kill someone like you. Don’t worry, I will return the Shangguan Clan’s generous order to kill, you can just wait for all your family members down there, they will soon be united with you.”

Jiang Chen slowly pulled his sword out. When the tip of the longsword left Shangguan Yiqing’s body, his eyes were completely shut. After that, his dead body fell down from the sky.

After killing Shangguan Yiqing, Jiang Chen turned around and looked at Xuan Yuzi who was covered in blood.

“I know you won’t let me go. Don’t worry, I won’t beg you to spare me like that Shangguan Yiqing did.”

Xuan Yuzi had a bitter smile on his face. He now understood Jiang Chen’s character, and as this guy’s enemy, his destiny had long ago been determined. In fact, if it wasn’t for Jiang Chen, he would have been killed by Shangguan Yiqing just now. It was Jiang Chen who allowed him to survive for a longer period of time, giving him the chance to witness the death of Shangguan Yiqing. For him, this was the greatest relief.

“Xuan Yuzi, you are a failure. Working together with your own enemy is a decision that proves you’re a dumbass. However, you are a man with great courage at the same time. No matter what, I still have to kill you, because you are the one who first wanted to kill me.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

“Do it! This is my destiny! If you were the one defeated by me, I would also kill you.”

Xuan Yuzi closed his eyes, waiting for Jiang Chen’s sword to cut through his throat. He didn’t want to see his own head flying off his body.



Jiang Chen took a step forward, placed his palm on top of Xuan Yuzi's head, and injected a force into his sea of consciousness, instantly destroying it.

Xuan Yuzi made a dull 'hum' sound, then, his life force completely vanished, and his dead body fell down from the sky as well. However, Jiang Chen had unleashed a gentle force that carried his dead body, causing it to fall down slowly.

"I'll leave your body intact."

After saying that, Jiang Chen simply shook his sleeve and strode away. A man not afraid of death would always deserve respect. Although Xuan Yuzi was his enemy, he had still won some respect from Jiang Chen. Therefore, Jiang Chen decided to leave him with a fully intact body. As for Xuan Yuzi's arm, that was done by Shangguan Yiqing.

Looking at Jiang Chen's back that was disappearing into the far distance, the people in the crowd couldn't help but have mixed emotions. This man came all alone, and in the end, he strode away with his head held up high. He had become the winner of this Gathering of Skynet; both number one geniuses of the Jian Province had fallen.

With his own method, Jiang Chen had proved to everyone that he was the real number one genius in the younger generation.

When those surviving geniuses realized that Jiang Chen had just spared their lives, each of them started wiping off the cold sweat

on their foreheads. Their faces filled with joy. It was such a narrow escape, and after experiencing today's events, they now fully understood a fact, and they kept warning themselves inwardly; from today onwards, no matter what kind of situation they face, they would NEVER be Jiang Chen's enemy! It was simply too terrifying!

Not long after Jiang Chen left, a man descended from the sky and arrived at Mount Tianyuan. He was an old imposing man. When he saw the miserable scene below him, his expression instantly changed.

Soon after, the old man found Shangguan Yiqing's dead body, then he cried out loudly, "Yiqing!"

This old man was Shangguan Ying, Shangguan Yiqing's grandfather, as well as a respectable Elder of the Shangguan Clan! He had incredible cultivation at the Late Combat Soul realm. Although he had broken through to this realm not long ago, it was still a deadly force. With this cultivation level, he could run around in the Eastern Continent without facing any problems.

Many people knew about this Gathering of Skynet, including Shangguan Ying. However, he didn't pay too much attention to it, because his thoughts were similar to those of most of the people; Jiang Chen would never show himself! Since both superpowers had given out order to kill, Jiang Chen should be running around looking for some place to hide, and he would never risk his life to show up here.

Therefore, none of the Shangguan Clan leaders paid too much

attention to this Gathering of Skynet. However, because Shangguan Ying had sensed the devastating energies coming from Mount Tianyuan, he came here to find out what was going on. But, he had never thought he would have to face this miserable scene.

“Where is that Jiang Chen?!”

Shangguan Ying simply pulled a warrior over and shouted at him.

“Ran... he ran away!”

The warrior was trembling out of fear. The fury of a Late Combat Soul warrior was not something that anyone could resist.

“Which direction did he go? How long ago did he leave?”

Shangguan Ying’s eyes had turned red, he was extremely furious right now! Shangguan Yiqing was the Shangguan Clan’s number one genius, as well as his own grandson! He treated him like the most precious person in his life, and in fact, Shangguan Yiqing was Shangguan Ying’s biggest pride, it was he who made it so that Shangguan Ying could hold his head high in front of all the other elders in the family.

Furthermore, Shangguan Yiqing was a talented man, and his mastery over formation was really good. In fact, he had exceeded most of the ones from the senior generations, and it was hard to find a match for him in the entire Eastern Continent. If nothing

went wrong, he would have the highest chance of becoming a Combat King warrior in the future! But now, he had been killed in this desolate mountain range. This caused Shangguan Ying's heart to ache.

To be honest, the loss of Shangguan Yiqing was much greater than the loss of all those geniuses on the Island of Ice.

“He went that way, it has been some time!”

The warrior pointed his finger in the direction where Jiang Chen left.

“Damn it, I'm going to rip you apart, I'll won't let you leave the Jian Province alive today!”

Shangguan Ying behaved like a furious lion. He carefully picked up Shangguan Yiqing's dead body and placed it in his storage ring. After that, he disappeared into the far distance, chasing forward in the direction Jiang Chen had left.

“Fuck you, what's there to be so arrogant about!? Daddy hopes all your family gets killed by Jiang Chen, puh!”

After wiping the cold sweat off his forehead, the warrior started cursing at Shangguan Ying. He was nearly frightened to death just now, and if Shangguan Ying released his anger over losing his grandson on this warrior, being killed by a single slap is not a fun way to die.

After restlessly searching for Jiang Chen for over two hours, Shangguan Ying hadn't been able to find a single trace of him. After that, he informed the Shangguan Clan with a talisman, requesting more people to help search for Jiang Chen.

In just two hours, what happened on Mount Tianyuan spread throughout the entire Jian Province. Just like Shangguan Yiqing, the death of Xuan Yuzi was a huge blow to the Myriad Sword Sect; their biggest hope had fallen, it was a loss that could never be redeemed.

Therefore, the entire Jian Province became heated. Jiang Chen did show up to the Gathering of Skynet, and his courage was really worthy of admiration. In such a situation, he still dared come to the Jian Province and ruthlessly strike and kill both top geniuses of the Jian Province. People not only admired his courage, but were also terrified by his formidable strength.

## Chapter 360 – Martial Palace

---

“This is crazy, absolutely crazy! That Jiang Chen is incredibly daring, he really show up on Mount Tianyuan and participated in the Gathering of Skynet! Not only that, he also killed both Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi, the two number one geniuses of the Jian Province! What a fierce man!”

“Damn it, I’ve heard that Jiang Chen is only a Peak Divine Core warrior, but he actually possess such formidable combat strength! He also has that incredible razor sharp longsword with him! I really wish to see what he looks like!”

“Fierce! He is a very fierce man! What he did proves that he wants to fight till the end with both Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect! Both superpowers gave out orders to kill not long ago, and he just killed their number one geniuses, such a huge loss for them!”

“Right now, the entire Jian Province is completely locked up by the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. All big and small powers of the Jian Province are under the two superpowers’ command, and their eyes are everywhere. I wonder, can Jiang Chen really escape safely?”

.....

The entire Jian Province was in a turmoil right now, when Jiang Chen appeared, he brought a storm with him, and the death of Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi had exploded out like a bomb. No

one could have thought that Jiang Chen would really show up on Mount Tianyuan. In the crowds' opinions, Jiang Chen should have been running for his life, but unexpectedly, he was daring enough to show up. If they had known that Jiang Chen would show up, those mighty senior warriors from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect might have hidden somewhere on Mount Tianyuan, and they wouldn't end up losing their future's biggest hope.

As the entire Jian Province was searching for Jiang, within a remote mountain range located outside the Jian Province's borders, a man dressed in white suddenly appeared in a ghostly manner. This young man wore a carefree smile on his face.

"The Jian Province should be in a turmoil right now, but I don't think anyone knows I've already left the Jian Province."

This young man was none other than Jiang Chen. I took him about two hours to cross Mount Tianyuan's region and leave the Jian Province. Even the Shangguan Clan's Clan Chief wouldn't expect Jiang Chen to be some incredibly fast. Therefore, both superpowers thought that Jiang Chen was still in the Jian Province.

The Jian Province covered a large amount of land, but the distance between Mount Tianyuan and the Martial Palace was only a quarter of the length of the entire Jian Province. Together with the Nine Phantom Wolves and Dimensional Shift, Jiang Chen was able to fly with incredible speed that was hard for others to imagine. So, he completely left the Jian Province after just two hours.

After leaving the Jian Province, Jiang Chen reached the Eastern Continent's number one province. This was a land ruled by the Martial Saint Dynasty, but this province didn't cover a huge land. Or, put it this way, initially, there were only 27 provinces in the Eastern Continent. The Martial Saint Dynasty occupied a big piece of land right in the center of the continent, the heart of the Eastern Continent.

The natural Yuan energy here was the thickest among all the other places in the Eastern Continent. The scenery here was most magnificent, and a mammoth like existence was located right in the center of this province; the Martial Saint Dynasty's imperial household!

Besides that, there was another gigantic power here; the Martial Palace! It was ruled directly by the Martial Saint Dynasty, and it was the most advanced institute in the Eastern Continent. It was a place where all the geniuses gathered, and no ordinary men could be found here. Those who came here to cultivation were all from nobility, family members of the imperial family, sons of the emperors, and genius disciples from all kinds of different powers in the Eastern Continent. To sum it up, those who came here to cultivate were all elite in terms of status or talent, there was no doubts about that.

Therefore, the Martial Palace had become a cradle, a cradle that raised geniuses. Countless geniuses dreamt about coming here to cultivation, because not only did it represent their status, they would also be able to obtain the best cultivation resources, as well as the chance to receive the Martial Saint Dynasty's appreciation. If they did, their status would be completely different.



The Martial Palace was located right in the center of a mountain range with an extraordinary landscape. This mountain range was the most beautiful place in the Eastern Continent, and it was constantly covered in white fog, causing it to look like a place from the Realm of Immortals.

This mountain range was named after the Martial Palace, and it was called Mount Wufu. Right at this moment, outside Mount Wufu, three people and a dog stood tall while facing the gentle wind. In front of them there was a huge stone table a few meters tall, and on top of it, three characters (武府山) were written like dragons flying and phoenixes dancing, 'Mount Wu Fu'.

[TL: Wu Fu is Martial Palace, but Mount Martial Palace doesn't sound good, so I'll just call it Mount Wufu.]

From the depth of these characters on the stone tablet, it wasn't difficult to imagine how incredible the cultivation of the man who wrote this was.

This stone tablet symbolized the border of Mount Wufu, the sacred place for countless warriors. This was the land all warriors dreamt about coming to. Every day, some warriors would come here and look at it, but none dared crossing the border and stepping onto the mountain range, because this was not a place where anyone could simply enter. Challenging the Martial Palace's dignity was a deadly sin.

“Mount Wufu, so this is where the Martial Palace is located?”

Nangong Wentian stared at the mountains stretching into the distance in front of him as he asked with mixed emotions. After this group crossed the Jian Province, they came straight to the Martial Palace.

“What an extraordinary scenery! Much prettier than the Black Sect.”

Yan Chenyu praised.

“This place is the most advanced institute in the Eastern Continent, there is no way the Black Sect can compare. It’s a land that cultivates the dreams of countless geniuses.”

Just like all the other countless geniuses, the Martial Palace was a place Han Yan had dreamt about joining. Even now that he was here, emotions still struck him hard.

“But this place doesn’t look as big as the Black Sect.”

Nangong Wentian glanced at the rows of buildings on top of the different mountains, and couldn’t help but say.

“Of course! Although the Black Sect is only from the Qi Province, but with the huge amount of disciples we have, we need a big place to house all of them. However, the Martial Palace is different! Those who live here are all elites, and therefore, their numbers can’t compare with the Black Sect.”

Han Yan said with a smile on his face.

“Alright, since we’re here, let’s enter.”

Big Yellow shook his head and prepared to walk onto Mount Wufu.

“I wonder how Chen Gege is right now.”

Yan Chenyu said in a worried tone. They had been rushing over here, so they still didn’t know what had happened back on Mount Tianyuan, and they did not know that the Jian Province was in a turmoil right now.

“Don’t worry, nothing bad is going to happen to him.”

Big Yellow responded. He was really confident in Jiang Chen.

“That’s right. With Little Chen’s strength, even if he can’t defeat them, he can still run away without any problems.”

Han Yan said.

“Who said I can’t defeat them? Look, who’s here?”

A voice could suddenly be heard from behind their backs. The group immediately turned around, and saw Jiang Chen standing

right behind them, looking at them with a smile on his face.

“The fuck? Little Chen, how did you get here so fast? Or, did you not even go to Mount Tianyuan?”

Nangong Wentian was shocked.

“You guys were traveling too slowly. I went to Mount Tianyuan, killed Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi, and now the entire Jian Province is completely locked down by both superpowers. But, too bad, I have already left, kaka...”

Jiang Chen laughed out in a carefree manner.

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian’s eyes were wide with shock. Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi were both killed? Could it really be done so quickly? This was ridiculous! But, since it was Jiang Chen who told them these news, neither of them doubted him.

“Wakaka, this master dog knew you could do it!”

Big Yellow joyfully laughed out.

“But, this is insanely fast! Don’t tell me those two guys were just some weaklings?”

Nangong Wentian asked with mixed emotions.

“Little Chen, hurry up and tell us what happened!”

Han Yan impatiently asked.

“Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi had called upon a lot of geniuses to help them. They set up a formation called the Skynet Formation.....”

Jiang Chen roughly told them about what happened back on Mount Tianyuan. His words caused them to be even more shocked, they couldn't help but give him a big thumbs up. Indeed, Jiang Chen's tactics were terrifying, he was able to turn the tables in such a deadly situation, and defeat his opponents.

“Abnormal.”

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian said at the same time.

“But with this, the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are definitely going to be angrier, they will just keep attacking Chen Gege.”

Yan Chenyu said in a worried tone.

“No worries. Even if I didn't kill Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi, both superpowers and I would still have the same violent relationship. The intense resentment between us will never be resolved, so let's just proceed to the Martial Palace.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen walked past the stone tablet and proceeded toward the Martial Palace.

When they entered the place, they immediately felt the natural Yuan energy around them at least twice as strong as it was outside. This place simply a sacred place for cultivation!

“Little Chen, are we going to go find Wu Jiu now?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Later, let’s go find Zihan and the others first, see how their lives here are. If Brother Jiu knows I’m here, he will come find me himself.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. Previously, he had been given three spots, and Jiang Chen had given the opportunity to Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan. It had been three months since they came here with Xuan Ye. Jiang Chen just wanted to know how these three guys were doing in the Martial Palace.

“Go no further!”

A deep voice suddenly sounded out not far away from them. When Jiang Chen and group looked over, they immediately saw four tall and muscular men blocking their path. These men wore golden armor, and carried pikes. The indifferent expressions on their faces showed that they were doing their job well.

These four men were the Martial Palace's guards, and they might have been sent over by the Martial Saint Dynasty. Each of them were Divine Core warriors.

“Damn, even the guards here are Divine Core warriors, they could be sect elders in the Qi Province!”

Han Yan said. Comparing the Qi Province to the Martial Palace, the gap was not small.

“Who are you? Why are you intruding the Martial Palace without permission? Do you guys know what this place is?”

The leading golden warrior shouted out loudly, portraying an extremely arrogant attitude. Although they were only Divine Core warriors, they did have the ability to be arrogant, because this place was the Martial Palace, and no one would dare offend even the most ordinary guards. No one were daring enough to cause trouble here, because that was an action no different from provoking the Martial Palace.

“We are looking for Wu Lang.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He didn't mention Wu Jiu's name, because during his trip to the Island of Ice, before Wu Lang left, he had asked Jiang Chen to seek him out in the Martial Palace.

“You're looking for the Young Palace Chief? Who are you guys?”

How do you know our Young Palace Chief?”

The leader of the guards was surprised, and he threw an examining look onto Jiang Chen and the group. When he heard Wu Lang’s name, his voice clearly became softer.

Because of the way this guard addressed Wu Lang, Jiang Chen was able to confirm Wu Jiu’s identity. Wu Lang was the son of the Ninth Emperor, but he was addressed as young master in the Martial Palace. Wu Lang’s father was clearly the Palace Chief.



## Chapter 361 – Qiu Tianba

---

“Young master? Looks like brother Jiu really is the Martial Palace’s Palace Chief.”

Han Yan said with mixed emotions. Although they had guessed this to be true, it was completely different when actually confirming their belief. For Jiang Chen and his friends, the more prestigious Wu Jiu’s status was, the better it was for them. Therefore, the status of Ninth Emperor and Palace Chief was more than enough for them.

“I’m Jiang Chen, Wu Lang’s friend.”

Jiang Chen said with a faint smile.

“Jiang Chen?”

The leader furrowed his brows, as if he had heard this name somewhere before, and it was really familiar to him. But, for some reason, he just couldn’t recall where he had heard it. At the same time, the other three guards wore the same blurred expressions on their faces.

But, their blurry expressions only existed for a short moment, then all of them opened their eyes widely.

“Jiang Chen! You’re that Jiang Chen?!”

The leader instantly exclaimed, “The Jiang Chen who killed those geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect on the Island of Ice, and defeated Wu Cong?”

“That’s me.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile. Since he was now at the Martial Palace, there was no need for him to hide his identity any longer.

“Chief, he is right, look at that dog! It’s rare to see such a majestic looking dog, he is definitely Jiang Chen!”

“We can’t afford to offend him!”

“Young master has already given his order, if Jiang Chen comes here, we are to let him come in.”

The guards were whispering at each other. Now, there were no one who didn’t know about Jiang Chen’s ferocious reputation. What happened on the Island of Ice had spread throughout the entire Eastern Continent, including the Martial Palace.

“So, it is young master Jiang Chen, please pardon our ignorance. Young palace chief has previously ordered us, if young master Jiang Chen comes here, we are to let you pass. Please come this way, young master Jiang Chen.”

The guard leader made a welcoming gesture at Jiang Chen. He

dared not be as arrogant as before any longer. Of course, he was facing a ferocious man, a man who would even kill the father of the Heavens if pushed too hard. He just didn't have the guts to offend him.

Not only that, Jiang Chen was the friend of their young palace chief, and the young palace chief had told them that if Jiang Chen came here, no one was allowed to block him.

Jiang Chen replied with a smile, then he continued walking toward the inner area of the Martial Palace. But, after just two steps, he turned around and looked at the leader, then asked, "What's your name?"

Hearing this question, the leader started trembling out of fear. He thought Jiang Chen was offended because of his earlier actions, and was asking his name to complain to the young palace chief. If the young palace chief really wanted to punish him, he would be deadlier than dead meat even if he had eight heads.

The man felt really regretful right now, but he still replied honestly, "Young master Jiang Chen, my name is Niu Er."

Ugh...

The group was startled.

"What an amazing name, Niu Er! I need your help right now, bring me to where Yu Zihan and Guan Yiyun are staying, this

Earth Restoration Pill is your reward.”

Jiang Chen casually tossed an Earth Restoration Pill into Niu Er’s palm, causing Niu Er’s eyes to instantly widen. He felt as if money had just fallen down from the sky, instantly causing his mind to blur.

Niu Er was only a Mid Divine Core warrior, and that could only give him a guard position in the Martial Palace, and there was no way he could be compare to all those genius disciples. Indeed, the Martial Palace was rich in cultivation resources, but the best resources were all prepared for those who came from powerful backgrounds, and they weren’t related to Niu Er. To a Divine Core warrior like him, an Earth Restoration Pill wasn’t something that precious, but no matter what, it was equal to ten thousand Mortal Restoration Pills. Furthermore, what Jiang Chen asked him to do was an easy task, he would do it even without any rewards.

Even more relieving for Niu Er was the fact that Jiang Chen hadn’t asked his name in order to complain to the young palace chief.

“As the Martial Palace’s guard, I know exactly where all those genius disciples stay. Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan came here three months ago, and I know where they’re staying.”

Niu Er patted his chest as he spoke. After that, he led Jiang Chen further into the Martial Palace region.

The other three golden warriors all wore envious expressions.

They had never gotten such an easy job with such a good reward.

From the outer region of Mount Wufu to the inner region of the Martial Palace, there was a bridge that stretched across the sky. When standing on top of it, one could glance at the entire landscape surrounding Mount Wufu. Right now, Jiang Chen and group were walking on top of it, and underneath them was an empty stretch filled with white fog. When they threw their glances into the horizon, they could see clear waters and green hills, waterfalls and green pine trees all over the place. Numerous palaces stood tall within the inner region, and finely built courtyards were scattered all over the place.

“This place is so beautiful!”

Yan Chenyu’s beautiful eyes were looking around everywhere. Compared to this beautiful scene that resembled a place straight out of the Immortal Realm, she felt that Red City was a truly small place. The outside world was filled with marvelous sceneries, and if she wasn’t following Jiang Chen, she might not ever be able to witness such magnificent sceneries.

“This is the area where the living quarters are located, Yu Zihan and the others are living there.”

Niu Er pointed at the living quarters.

Within the Martial Palace, aside from the patrolling guards, it was rare to bump into any genius disciples. Because the competition here was too intense, if someone didn’t put in enough

effort, others would catch up in no time, so all the geniuses were restlessly cultivation, utilizing every single second they had. It was late in the afternoon when Jiang Chen arrived, and there weren't many people walking in the public area. They occasionally bumped into some people, and they would receive some curious gazes.

Soon, under Niu Er's lead, the group reached the living quarters. Compared to the living quarters back in the Black Sect, the conditions here were much more luxurious, all the living quarters were finely built courtyards, and the environment was superb.

"Young master Jiang Chen, the third courtyard from the left is where Yu Zihan and the others are staying. I won't follow you in there."

Niu Er told Jiang Chen. A guard was an underdog in the Martial Palace, and no one took them seriously. Therefore, if nothing special was going on, the guards wouldn't enter the disciples' living quarters area.

"Alright, thank you for helping."

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

"Don't mention it, young master Jiang Chen. Although your actions back on the Island of Ice offended many powers and people, I really admire that! If one day I could be as mighty as you, have my name heard by many, it would be worth it even if I died the next second!"

An expression of admiration filled Niu Er's face. All men had their own dreams, and Jiang Chen's image of a chaotic devil caused him to become an idol of many. Some were even dreaming of becoming as mighty as Jiang Chen, and have their name heard by the world, even if it would cost them their lives. At least, a death like that wouldn't be in vain.

"Let's continue, check out how Yu Zihan and the others are doing."

Jiang Chen smile, then he led the group toward the living quarter area. They faced no obstacles along their way, and they were heading straight for the third courtyard pointed out by Niu Er.

The courtyard's gate was open, and even from far away, Jiang Chen could still hear the sound of someone quarrelling inside.

"You three are really daring! You've just been here for three months, and you've already become so arrogant? Who gave you the audacity to beat my servants? Do you know who I am? I'm Qiu Tianba! You guys are simply courting death!"

An incredibly domineering voice could be heard from the courtyard. Right now, a couple of men were standing within the courtyard's tight space, and the three men who stood at the front all wore gloomy expression, and unbearable fury filled their hearts. These three men were Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan.

At the same time, there were five men standing opposite of them.

The leading man was a tall guy, and he looked strong as a bear in the hips, and his back seemed supple as a tiger's. He had a tall and muscular body, and was at least three times bigger than Nangong Wentian. He was unleashing a domineering aura from all over his body, and his cultivation was quite good, at the Early Combat Soul realm. The four men behind him were all Late Divine Core warriors, but three of them had faces covered in bruises. They had clearly been beaten before this.

The last man was a Peak Divine Core warrior, just one step away from the Combat Soul realm. He wore clothes similar to those that Yu Zihan and the others were wearing, and he should be a disciple of the Martial Palace as well. However, he was standing behind this Qiu Tianba, as he was just a follower.

“Qiu Tianba, you better not go too far with bullying others! Although we are no match for you with our cultivations, we are still disciples of the Martial Palace, and this courtyard is where we live! However, your servants actually came in here and tried chasing us out! They're lucky we just beat them, they have no idea how insignificant their status' are!”

Yu Zihan responded with a loud voice. He was furiously gnashing his teeth. Although they had been here for three months, their cultivations had experienced a great growth, especially Yu Zihan, who had broken through to the Late Divine Core realm from the early stage, causing his cultivation to be equal to Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan's.

Ever since they arrived at the Martial Palace, they had been staying low profile, and had never actively involved themselves in



any trouble. But still, when trouble came to them, they could just avoid it. Today, three guys came to their courtyard and asked them to move somewhere else, because they wanted this courtyard.

What made them even angrier was that these three guys weren't any geniuses from the Martial Palace, they were just servants of Qiu Tianba. There were many disciples with powerful backgrounds in the Martial Palace, and when they came here, they also brought their own servants, and lived the life of a master when they weren't cultivating.

Qiu Tianba's servants were too arrogant, and they were relying on their master's status and cultivation level. They care for no one, and didn't even take newcomers seriously. With Yu Zihan and the other two's hot temper, they simply couldn't stand the attitudes of these servants, and there was no way they would give up their courtyard. Therefore, the trio gave those servants a seriously beating, and finally, their master Qiu Tianba had come to them, and it didn't look like he was going to let this matter off easily.

"Daddy's status is much better than yours! Let me tell you this, I'm not going to settle this matter easily, I want you to kneel down before me and kowtow, beg for my forgiveness! After that, you need to compensate me with some pills. Of course, you also have to move out from here."

The servant looked like he was in his forties, and he was behaving even more arrogantly than Qiu Tianba. He pointed his finger at Yu Zihan's nose and shouted with a loud voice, but because three of his teeth had been broken by Guan Yiyun, his voice sounded somewhat funny.

“Fuck you!”

Yu Zihan couldn't take it any longer. He was about to deliver a powerful kick to that bastard, but Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan immediately restrained him. It wasn't wise to fight them right now, because Qiu Tianba was a Combat Soul warrior, and the gap between them was simply too huge. There was no way they could be his match.

“Hmph! I think you're Yu Zihan, right? What a hot tempered man! However, no one has ever dared beat my servants, and since you guys have done so, you need to pay the price. Just like my servant said, you three kneel down and kowtow, compensate my servants with pills, and after that, move out from here and let my servants move in.”

Qiu Tianba coldly harrumphed.

## Chapter 362 – Beat Them!

---

“Haha, did you hear that? Kneel down immediately! Or else, I’ll beat you up and knock all your teeth out!”

“That’s right! How dare you offend our young master Tianba? You’re just courting death! You three are just some tiny shrimps, you’re not even qualified to carry young master Tianba’s shoes!”

The other two servants became arrogant as well, and started showing expressions of superiority.

Yu Zihan and the group’s expressions turned ugly, it didn’t seem like there was an easy way out. This Qiu Tianba had a ferocious reputation, and of course, he came from a powerful background, and most of the disciples in the Martial Palace wouldn’t dare offend him, because those who did would not end up good.

“Qiu Tianba, you better not push us too far! I believe you’ve heard about Jiang Chen, we’re all his friends, and if you dare touch us, the consequences will be nasty!”

Tian Yishan said with a loud voice.

“Jiang Chen’s friends? I’m so scared! Haha! Where is that Jiang Chen now? Both the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect have given out orders to have him killed, he might even be dead by now, and you’re threatening me with a dead man? What a stupid joke! Let me tell you this, even if Jiang Chen was here, daddy wouldn’t care at all!”

Qiu Tianba heartily laughed out. He obviously knew who Jiang Chen was, but he also knew what kind of situation Jiang Chen was facing right now, that's why he didn't care about that fact at all.

“Cut the nonsense, you three, kneel down right now and kowtow before us! After that, give us all your belongings as compensation!”

The servant whose face was covered in bruises furiously shouted out. He walked up to Yu Zihan and pointed at his nose and scolded.

“Fuck your mother!”

Yu Zihan's fury erupted in an instant. After becoming Jiang Chen's friend, his hot temper had gained a huge boost. He just couldn't stand it when a servant was scolding him like this.

Bam!

Yu Zihan suddenly delivered a powerful kick to the servant's stomach, throwing him onto the ground like a tortoise. A stream of blood instantly shot out from his mouth.

“What an asshole! You should watch your fucking mouth!”

Yu Zihan spat on the servant. He was going all out right now, since there wouldn't be any easy way out from what was going on, as it was impossible for them to kneel down and kowtow to them.

He might as well give this dumbass servant a serious beating, so he could realst his temper.

“该死的，你敢打我。”

“Damn you! How dare you beat me?!”

The servant stretched his arm and pointed his finger at Yu Zihan. However, when he raised his head, what he saw was a big face that had suddenly appeared out of nowhere... no, it was not a human's face, damn! It was a dog! A majestic big yellow dog!

“Hehe! Beating you can't really be considered anything.”

A dog who could talk! While his mouth was wide open in shock, this dog bit off the servant's arm in an instant, causing his bones to be exposed and blood to splash around.

“You're just a dog slave, how dare you show such a superior expression here?! Let this master dog give you a free ride to hell!”

After saying that, Big Yellow leapt onto the servant and pressed his body against the floor, then without any hesitation, he bit the head right off! With that, the servant's miserable shriek suddenly came to a stop. A man who was alive and kicking just moment ago had been killed just like that!

This brutal scene shocked everyone, even Qiu Tianba couldn't stop himself from trembling. No one had any idea where this ferocious dog came from.

But, when Yu Zihan and the group saw Big Yellow, their gloomy faces instantly turned into joyful ones.

“Big Yellow!”

The trio cried out at the same time, they couldn't stop the joy from emerging in their hearts. Them seeing Big Yellow right now made them really happy, because it simply meant that their problem was no longer a real problem, it had now become a problem for Qiu Tianba. Since Big Yellow was here, it also meant that the amazing man was here as well!

“Where did this dog come from? How dare you kill my servant?! You're courting death!”

Qiu Tianba was instantly enraged. He threw a very fast and powerful palm strike toward Big Yellow, reaching him in the blink of an eye.

As an Early Combat Soul warrior, Qiu Tianba's speed when attacking was incredible. However, Big Yellow was even faster than him. He just transformed into a trail of light and avoided Qiu Tianba's attack, causing the attack to hit the dead servant, turning it to many pieces with a loud bang.

“Bastard!”

Qiu Tianba was truly pissed off now. He had come here today in

order to deal with Yu Zihan and the other two, but this dog had suddenly appeared out of nowhere and killed his servant for no reason.

“Trash.”

Right at this moment, a voice was heard from outside the courtyard. After that, four people walked past the courtyard's gate, three men and a girl. All of them were brimming with energy, the leading man was a young man dressed in white clothes. Both hands were placed behind his back, and he was walking in a calm manner.

Looking at this group, smiles immediately blossomed onto the trio's faces. At the same time, they threw a look of pity at Qiu Tianba.

Jiang Chen and group walked past Qiu Tianba and arrived in front of Yu Zihan without even looking at Qiu Tianba. For someone with such high self-esteem, this really hurt Qiu Tianba.

“Zihan, your progress is really incredible!”

Jiang Chen patted Yu Zihan on the shoulder, while at the same time giving a smile to Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan. He did expect them to have such incredible progress in their cultivations. For Yu Zihan, his body had been cleansed by the energy vein's source energy, so he would naturally have a spurt in his cultivation. As for Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan, after spending one year in Inferno Hell and going through all kinds of life and death struggles, they

were now in the middle of a transformation.

“Who are you? Who gave you the audacity to kill someone in the Martial Palace?”

Qiu Tianba shouted at the group.

“Brother Jiang, this is a bastard!”

Yu Zihan said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“I know what happened.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile. He turned around and faced Qiu Tianba, and suddenly, his expression turned cold. He took a step forward, arriving in front of Qiu Tianba, then he slapped his face.

Clasp!

It was a loud and clear slap filled with tremendous force, throwing Qiu Tianba's huge body about 3 meters away from where he stood.

Blergh!

Qiu Tianba threw up a mouthful of blood, together with two



teeth.

“Young master!”

The two servants were frightened, they quickly dashed over to Qiu Tianba and carried him up. The other Martial Palace disciple's eyes were wide open, and he kept staring at this young man in white, his mind blowing up with extreme shock. This was because, with Qiu Tianba's strength, he didn't even have the chance to dodge this slap! Just how strong was this young man?

“You hit me?”

Qiu Tianba cried out in disbelief. He pushed both servants away and leapt toward Jiang Chen in an imposing manner, fully unleashing his energy of an Early Combat Soul warrior. With that, he threw his big fist filled with massive power at Jiang Chen's face.

Pa!

Too bad, this powerful punch couldn't move any further, because it was grabbed by a hand. No matter how hard Qiu Tianba struggle, there was no way he could escape from this grip.

Crack!

Jiang Chen squeezed his palm, and with a cracking sound, Qiu Tianba's wrist was broken with a twist. It caused him to let out a miserable shriek, and his forehead was filled with cold sweat.

“You, who are you?!”

No matter how dumb Qiu Tianba was, he knew this guy was not someone he could easily mess with.

“I thought you told my friends just now, even if I stood right in front of you, you wouldn’t care at all?”

Jiang Chen replied with a sneer. He really hated people like Qiu Tianba. If he wasn’t here today, he could imagine what kind of nasty situation Yu Zihan and the other would have to face. They might even have to suffer some humiliation.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

Qiu Tianba’s eyes were wide open. When he mentioned Jiang Chen’s name, his body immediately trembled. He told them he wouldn’t care about Jiang Chen, mainly because Jiang Chen wasn’t there. But now that he was truly facing Jiang Chen, he had lost all his courage, and could not repeat what he said. Jiang Chen had gotten his reputation from doing what he had done; this guy was a maniac, a homicidal devil!

When the other Martial Palace disciple and the two servants heard Jiang Chen’s name, their faces turned pale in an instant. They knew what had happened on the Island of Ice.

Clasp! Jiang Chen once again slapped Qiu Tianba, throwing him

onto the ground.

“Bullying my friends, you must be retarded! If we were somewhere else, you would be dead meat by now!”

Jiang Chen said in a cruel manner. If they weren't at the Martial Palace, he wouldn't show any mercy to someone like Qiu Tianba. But, since they were at the Martial Palace... he didn't want to kill anyone, as he had just arrived.

“Jiang Chen, don't be so arrogant! This place is the Martial Palace, and you're just an outside! Who gave you the audacity to act recklessly here? No one ever dares run wild in this place! Let me tell you this, I'm working for Prince Wu Yan, and you're just looking for trouble if you try to touch me!”

Qiu Tianba warned Jiang Chen with a loud voice.

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian couldn't bear to watch any longer. They were really worried about this guy's intelligence. The situation was clearly not on his side, but he just didn't know how to lower his head. If Qiu Tianba was a clever guy, he would just get the hell out from here. But, not only did he not do that, he tried to threaten Jiang Chen, an act no different from seeking trouble.

“Beat him up for me. Once you're done, throw him out of here.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand. Without any hesitation, Yu Zihan became the first amongst the three to dash over.

“Fuck you!”

Yu Zihan straight away delivered a punch to Qiu Tianba’s face, causing one of his eyes to become a panda eye.

Hehe...

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian exchanged vicious smile, then they rubbed their hands and walked up to Qiu Tianba.

Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan walked toward them as well, but their target wasn’t Qiu Tianba, but the other three men.

Bang, bang, bang...

Argh...

At this moment, screams that sounded like pigs being slaughtered sounded out from the courtyard, and the screams went on and on, alerting the entire Martial Palace’s living quarters.

“The fuck is happening? The scream sounds so miserable, but why does it sound like it’s coming from Qiu Tianba?”

“I think it’s coming from Yu Zihan’s courtyard. Qiu Tianba went there to give them trouble... Oh, that really sounds like Qiu Tianba, what’s actually going on? With Yu Zihan and the other

two men's strength, they are no match for Qiu Tianba.”

“Come, let's go check it out! Haha, Qi Tianba is getting beaten by someone, and he sounds so miserable, what a relief!”

“Damn him! With the prince's support, this Qiu Tianba constantly bullies us, and doesn't take any of us seriously! If he is really being beaten by someone, daddy will be so happy I could sleep for three days!”

## Chapter 363 – Another Crown Prince

---

A storm had erupted in the once peaceful living quarter area. Qiu Tianba was considered a famous man in the Martial Palace, but because of his arrogant and domineering attitude, his reputation was quite bad. Many people knew he was seeking to cause trouble for Yu Zihan and the other two men today, and they were pitying the poor group. However, it was Qiu Tianba's screams that were leaving Yu Zihan's courtyard, this really surprised them.

Although Qiu Tianba was a disgusting man, his strength was not to be underestimated. Therefore, it made the people feel puzzled regarding which man was capable of making him let out such miserable screams. Yu Zihan and the other two weren't strong enough to do so, and Qiu Tianba had the prince's support, so no one really wanted to mess with him.

Soon, many people had gathered outside Yu Zihan's courtyard. But, before they could find out what was going on, four heavy objects were thrown out of the courtyard.

When they took a closer look, no one could recognize them at first glance. All of them were severely beaten and barely recognizable, perhaps even their mothers would be unable to find out which one was their son.

However, the crowd could still recognize Qiu Tianba because of his body size. Right now, Qiu Tianba had lost his arrogant look, his body was covered in blood, and his face was battered to a pulp. He had also lost many of his teeth.

“Damn it, who did this? This is so brutal, and yet, so satisfying!”

“Who did this to Qiu Tianba? This is truly brutal!”

.....

The people in the crowd couldn't help but smile as they looked at the miserable Qiu Tianba. His big pig face had been hit at least a few hundred times, and there were multiple fist marks on it. Judging from the size of the fist marks, it looked like there was more than one person beating him just now.

The crowd turned to the courtyard and looked over. However, when they saw a few men standing inside, a strong gust pushed the door, tightly shutting it closed.

“Brother Ba, who did this to you? Was it Yu Zihan? Daddy will get revenge for you!”

Right at this moment, a Peak Divine Core disciple rushed to the scene. His name was Zhang Yuan, a good friend of Qiu Tianba who always hung around him. When he heard Qiu Tianba's screams just now, he immediately rushed over to the place, and was shocked by their miserable looks.

Zhan Yuan strengthened his energy, and was getting ready to smash the door, pull Yu Zihan and his two friends out, and then give them a serious beating. He wanted to get revenge for his brother Ba. But, after taking two steps, he suddenly realized

something was not right, and turned around. He looked once more at Qiu Tianba's miserable state, and he couldn't help but tremble.

“The fuck, even brother Ba was beaten to this state... if I go in there, I would probably become even more miserable... sigh, I'm too impulsive. Luckily, I was able to react quickly.”

Zhang Yuan was actually feeling quite lucky. He quickly walked up to Qiu Tianba and watched as they struggled to open their eyes. Qiu Tianba then told him, “Go... go get prin... prince...”

Qiu Tianba said with an unclear voice while coughing out blood. He instinctively tried saying this while gnashing his teeth in anger, but since all his teeth were now gone, he couldn't do that.

“Damn it, who did this to brother Ba? What a daring bastard! I'll go look for the prince now, I don't care who this guy is; I'll make sure he dies in the most miserable manner!”

After saying that, Zhang Yuan disappeared from the scene and went to look for the prince.

Qiu Tianba was really pissed as he laid on the ground continuously groaning. No one had even done anything like this to him, today was his most disgraceful moment. Perhaps the crowd were laughing at his stupid look.

The other three men huddle up like turtles, whining while lying on the ground. Although they were mighty warriors with great



strength, they were still unable to withstand the beating. Han Yan and the group had brutally beaten them, and even broken their Yuan energy flow. It would take them a really long time to recover.

“Who did this, actually? Yu Zihan and his friends don’t have the ability to do this.”

“Definitely not Yu Zihan and his friends. I saw a few other people in there just now, but I don’t know who they are. However, not many people in the Martial Palace have the courage to beat Qiu Tianba.”

“Let’s just wait and see. Prince Wu Yan is a man who always sides with his own men, and although he can’t compare to young palace chief and Wu Cong, he’s still a Peak Early Combat Soul warrior, and is much stronger than Qiu Tianba. I’m sure he’ll be here in a moment.”

“Precisely. I think there will be a good show today. Those guys in the courtyard are really daring, but I still think they will have to lower their heads when Prince Wu Yan gets here. After all, he is a prince.”

.....

The crowd was talking amongst each other. No one had seen who were inside the courtyard, but they had seen a few people there, not only Yu Zihan and his two friends.

At this moment, the living quarters had become very lively. Many people had gathered outside Yu Zihan's courtyard. Waiting to witness a good show later on. They all wanted to know who were daring enough to beat Qiu Tianba in the Martial Palace.

Inside the courtyard, the atmosphere was completely different. The reunion of these old friends was a joyful moment, especially for Yu Zihan and the other two, they were really excited to see Jiang Chen again. Because of Jiang Chen, they had finally gotten rid of Qiu Tianba.

“Brother Jiang, we've heard all about your brave adventures on the Island of Ice, you're truly amazing! Even Prince Wu Cong is no match for you!”

Yu Zihan said with a laugh.

“Looks like we won't be able to catch up to you for the rest of our lives, junior disciple Jiang.”

Guan Yiyun said with a faint smile on his face. He was happy for Jiang Chen's incredible growth, but at the same time, he had a bitter feeling in his mind. Back in the day, when Jiang Chen made his debut during the Qi Province competition, he was a tiny little shrimp who had just broken through to the Mortal Core realm, and he still needed Guan Yiyun to protect him when he offended Nanbei Chao. Just one year later, Jiang Chen had grown to a level where Guan Yiyun could only look up at him. Compared to this abnormal monster, who could still claim to be geniuses?

“Don’t be discouraged, just cultivate hard in the Martial Palace. With your talents, I’m sure you’ll have no problems breaking through to the Combat Soul realm.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Little Yu has recovered as well, this is great! Senior disciple Han Yan’s strength has also improved a lot, and, I believe you are Nangong Wentian?”

Yu Zihan turned to Nangong Wentian and asked. The story of their adventures in the Island of Ice had spread everywhere. Not only Jiang Chen, even Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow’s names had been heard by many. All of them were famous now.

Nangong Wentian responded with a smile, then he cupped his fist toward Yu Zihan and the others. He wasn’t too familiar with them, but since they were Jiang Chen’s friends, they were his friends too.

“Brother Jiang, the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are looking for you everywhere. I suppose your purpose for coming to the Martial Palace is to seek shelter?”

Tian Yishan asked.

“For now, the Martial Palace is a relatively safe place for us. But, let’s not talk about me now, you guys should already know most of

what has happened. Why does it seem like you three aren't mixing too well in here?"

Jiang Chen said with a smile. From the fact that Qiu Tianba was here to cause trouble, it wasn't difficult to tell that these three guys weren't getting along well here.

"Sigh... there are too many geniuses in the Mortal Palace, and the Divine Core realm means nothing here. Only a Combat Soul warrior can gain a firm foothold here. That Qiu Tianba is a harsh and tyrannical man, and he has Prince Wu Yan's support. People rarely dare offend him, and furthermore, his father is a king conferred personally by the Majestic Emperor, he is just someone we can't compare with."

Guan Yiyun let out a long sigh.

"But this time, that bastard pushed us too far! He actually sent his servants here to try and occupy our courtyard by force, asking us to move out! That's why we beat up his servants not long before this, and he came here today to give us trouble for that. If you hadn't come here, we three would have to suffer."

When thinking about the possible outcomes, Yu Zihan couldn't control his temper.

"Damn it, they're just a few small shrimps, who do they think they are? He's lucky his life was spared, if this place wasn't the Martial Palace, this master dog would have slaughtered them all already!"

Big Yellow was really angry, because he was only able to kill a servant. For him, it was not enough!

“But now that we’ve beaten Qiu Tianba... I don’t think Prince Wu Yan will let us off easily.”

Tian Yishan worriedly said.

“Another crown prince? What cultivation level is he at?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Wu Yan is the son of the Seventh Emperor, and he came to the Martial Palace to further his cultivation. He’s at the Peak Early Combat Soul realm, just one step away from the mid stage.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“Early Combat Soul warriors are nothing, Little Chen even nearly killed Wu Cong who is a Mid Combat Soul warrior. Furthermore, before we got here, Little Chen killed the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect’s number one geniuses, Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi. Both of those two were Mid Combat Soul warriors as well.”

Han Yan said.

“What?!”

The trio immediately cried out in surprise. The way they looked at Jiang Chen changed once again. They knew Jiang Chen had defeated Wu Cong, but they hadn't witnessed it. Also, defeating a Mid Combat Soul warriors and killing one is two completely different concepts.

“But, that Wu Yan is a prince, and we're at the Martial Palace. Having a conflict with him doesn't seem like a good choice.”

Tian Yishan was still worried.

“Don't bother with him. Not coming here would be for his own good. If he does come, hmph! I don't care what prince he is.”

Jiang Chen harrumphed. He had offended too many people, and nearly even killed Wu Cong outside the Island of Ice. Therefore, he just didn't care about another prince.

Bam!

Right after Jiang Chen's words left his mouth, a dull knocking sound immediately sounded from the door. A split second later, it was smashed to pieces, and four men were revealed outside. Three of them were Early Combat Soul warriors, and the last one was Zhang Yuan, who had went for help.

The leading man wore luxurious looking clothes, his eyebrows

were portraying a prideful expression, and his eyes were fierce. His aura was that of a noble man; this man was Wu Yan! As for the other two Early Combat Soul geniuses, they were both disciples of the Martial Palace who were following Wu Yan.

A prince was always surrounded by servants, this was almost a symbol of a man with a strong background. Just like Qiu Tianba, he always brought a few servants with him.

“Who here was daring enough to beat up my man? Stand out right now!”

Wu Yan looked at everybody inside the courtyard, and arrogantly shouted out.

## Chapter 364 – Beating The Prince

---

More and more people gathered outside the courtyard and looked at the broken door. When they could finally see who were standing inside, they could recognize Yu Zihan and the other two men, but none of them were familiar with the other people. These newcomers were obviously not from the Martial Palace.

“They aren’t from the Martial Palace, but they just beat someone up in here. Such a daring group of people!”

“Something is going to happen. This daring group of people, Wu Yan is going to put them in order!”

“Just watch, Wu Yan is going to fly off the handle!”

.....

Similar discussions could be heard everywhere. Jiang Chen and the group instantly became the center of attention. The Martial Palace was the most advanced institute in the Eastern Continent, the Martial Saint Dynasty’s sacred place. It was normal for disciples here to fight each other, but not once had anyone from the outside come here and beaten up disciples from the Martial Palace. This was simply because no one had the courage to do so.

“You’re not from the Martial Palace?”

Wu Yan’s gaze swept across Jiang Chen and group, then he asked



with a cold voice.

“We soon will be.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile. Then, he casually pulled over a rattan chair and sat down with a look of enjoyment on his face.

Jiang Chen’s behavior only served to make Wu Yan become even angrier. He had no idea where this little shrimp came from, and why he acted so wildly in front of him, without showing any respect. He was a prince, and everyone in the Martial Palace had to behave politely when facing him. This young man in front of him was just courting death.

“Hmph! Bring the men in here!”

Wu Yan coldly harrumphed. After that, the few men who followed him brought Qiu Tianba and the other heavily beaten men in, throwing them onto the ground.

“Yu Zihan, tell me, who did this to them? You bastards, how dare you let some outsiders come here and cause trouble? Do you want to get expelled from the Martial Palace?”

Wu Yan said with a loud voice.

“I’m the one who beat them up, and you better not talk to my friend in that kind of tone. Also, get your men and throw these trash out from here, including yourself, before I become angry.”

Jiang Chen remained sitting in the rattan chair, and spoke with a casual voice.

What?

Was he asking Wu Yan to get lost? Was that what he really just said?

Who was this guy? Had his head been hit by a door? Why was he brave enough to talk like that? Wasn't this no different from courting death?

There must be something wrong with this guy's brain. He was just an outsider to the Martial Palace, but he still acted so arrogantly. He just had no idea what death truly meant.

Jiang Chen's words brought the crowd to a turmoil, even Wu Yan was startled for a moment. It seemed like this was the first time someone had talked to him like this within the Martial Palace.

"Bastard! Who are you, and how dare you talk to our prince like that?! You're courting death!"

An Early Combat Soul disciple standing next to Wu Yan scolded. He moved his body and appeared in front of Jiang Chen. His palm started glowing brightly, then he stretched his arm forward, attempting to grab Jiang Chen.

“Get lost!”

Jiang Chen simply delivered a powerful kick to the disciple’s stomach, causing him to let out a miserable shriek, and knocking him a few meters away. The disciple laid on the ground like a tortoise.

“Oh Heavens, what a brutal man! He simply kicked him without any warning, so aggressive!”

“Just who is this guy? He looks so young, but he is so powerful! Look at what he did to Qiu Tianba, and now, even an Early Combat Soul warrior was thrown away by his kick!”

“What formidable strength! Perhaps even Wu Yan is no match for him?”

.....

Everyone were shocked because this young man who had appeared out of nowhere was such an aggressive man.

Seeing this, Wu Yan was so angry his face turned red. But of course, he was not an idiot. He could at least tell that this young man in front of him wasn’t scared of him.

“I don’t care who you are, this is the Martial Palace, and you have to pay the price for hurting my men! If you kneel down before me and apologize, I’ll forgive you for what you have done; let bygones

be bygones.”

Wu Yan said. This was the biggest concession he could make. If it was just moments ago, he would only ask Jiang Chen to kneel down and apologize.

“Why should I be kneeling down when it was your men who offended me first? Talking about apologizing, you should be the one to do so.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. There was no need to be polite to someone like Wu Yan, because he would only push further and further. It required a special approach to handle someone like this.

“You’re courting death!”

Wu Yan was completely pissed off right now. He drew out a cold longsword, and unleashed the energy of a Peak Early Combat Soul warrior, and swung the sword at Jiang Chen. Since this guy wasn’t taking him seriously, if Wu Yan didn’t teach him a lesson, he would lose his face, and he wouldn’t get along as well in the Martial Palace in the future.

Facing Wu Yan’s attack, Jiang Chen was still sitting in the rattan chair without moving. He stretched his hand forward and unleashed the True Dragon Palm, and in an instant, a gigantic blood red dragon claw appeared and grabbed Wu Yan, then it threw him away.

Plop!

Wu Yan was forcefully thrown onto the ground, causing pain and dizziness to fill his body.

With this, the crowd instantly boiled up. Everyone's eyes were wide open as they stared at the young man sitting in the rattan chair. They were greatly shocked, because, although there were many warriors stronger than Wu Yan, very few actually dared hit him.

“You... you just hit me?”

Wu Yan climbed up from the ground. His two eyes had already become extremely red. In his eyes, what just happened was ridiculous! How dare this guy hit him, how could he do that to a prince?

Those disciples who were following Wu Yan were ready to attack, but when they saw Wu Yan hurt by the opponent, they immediately backed off. If this guy was daring enough to beat Wu Yan, if they truly attacked him, they would end up in much more miserable states.

“Quickly, beat it! From now onwards, don't ever step into this courtyard again!”

Jiang Chen impatiently waved his hand. He was really worried he would kill this prince if they kept bothering him.

“Good, very good! Brat, you’re a daring bastard! Let me tell you this, you are the first person who has dared hit me in the Martial Palace, and you’re going to pay a serious price for doing so! Yu Zihan and the other two men aren’t going to stay here any longer!”

While gnashing his teeth in anger, Wu Yan made a threatening speech.

“Fuck you!”

Jiang Chen couldn’t restrain his temper any longer. He moved forward and arrived next to Wu Yan, then without any hesitation, he slapped his face.

Bam!

The slap caused Wu Yan’s face to violently kiss the hard ground. After that, Jiang Chen simply grabbed his back and threw him out from the courtyard.

“Ah! Prince!”

The ones following Wu Yan were pale with fright. They quickly rushed out of the courtyard and carried Wu Yan up. Right now, half of Wu Yan’s face had swelled up, and his mouth was wry. It wasn’t difficult to tell how powerful Jiang Chen’s slap was.

Jiang Chen's bravery was incredible, enough to cause many people to start breathing heavily. They really wished to know who this young man was, and why he didn't take the prince seriously, even going as far as giving him a serious beating.

"You, tell me your name if you dare!"

Wu Yan threatened with an unclear voice.

"Jiang Chen."

Jiang Chen told Wu Yan his name in an indifferent tone.

Boom!

Hearing this name, everyone felt as if something had just exploded within their ears. It was like a clap of thunder had hit their ears.

"Jiang Chen! Oh Heavens, he is the man who killed countless geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, and even defeated Prince Wu Cong!"

"Of course he is, no wonder his strength and courage is so formidable! This man is a maniac, he is daring enough to beat up prince Wu Cong, let alone this Wu Yan. Wu Yan has finally slammed into a hard wall!"

“Amazing, I finally get the chance to see him! But, why has he come to the Martial Palace? Is he going to become a disciple here? Impossible! Currently, the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are both looking for him everywhere, and Wu Cong also hates him to the core, there is no way the Martial Palace is going to take him, because it would be a huge problem!”

.....

While shocked from finding out who this young man was, the crowd finally realized that it could only be him, because no ordinary men would have the guts to beat up a prince. But, if it was Jiang Chen, the questions wouldn't be whether or not he would dare to, because it seemed like underneath the Heavens, there were none that Jiang Chen dared not offend.

“You... you're Jiang Chen?!”

Wu Yan struggled hard to open up his eyes. After finally opening them, he threw an angry glance at Qiu Tianba who was still whining on the ground. Right at this moment, his biggest wish was to rip Qiu Tianba apart, because this piece of dog shit hadn't informed him about the opponent's identity. This was ridiculous! If Wu Yan had known that it was Jiang Chen who had beaten Qiu Tianba, he would definitely not have come here at all.

He knew who Jiang Chen was, as this was a man who had even beaten his cousin, Wu Cong, let alone Wu Yan himself. And, he knew from rumors that if Jiang Chen was pushed too hard, he would really kill Wu Yan.



Why did Wu Yan come here looking for trouble? Why did he offend this malefic?

“Jiang Chen, you just wait, this isn’t done yet!”

Wu Yan made another threatening speech, then he hastily left. He was really worried that if he continued staying here, he would be beaten to the same state as Qiu Tianba. As for Qiu Tianba, he wouldn’t forgive him even if he kneeled down.

If Wu Yan had known it was Jiang Chen who beat up Qiu Tianba, he would definitely not have come here. But, since he had offended Jiang Chen, there was no way he could suffer this beating for no reason. He was try his best to make Jiang Chen pay for what he had done. Or else, he wouldn’t be able to get along as well in the Martial in the future.

Jiang Chen shook his head. He couldn’t find peace no matter where he went. He had just arrived at the Martial Palace, but before he could warm his seat, he had fought with a prince. It looked like it wouldn’t take long before the whole world knew he was here.

There were times when he wanted no trouble, but trouble still came to his face, constantly surrounding him. Therefore, all Jiang Chen could do was smash all the troubles with his own fist.

“Throw the trash outta here.”

Jiang Chen looked at Qiu Tianba and the others who were brought into the courtyard with disgust. With a dazzling smile, Yu Zihan picked them all up and threw them out.

“Nothing to see here, get a move on.”

Yu Zihan said toward all the disciples outside his courtyard, instantly dispersing the crowd.

The malefic had arrived at the Martial Palace, and soon, news about this would spread throughout the entire Martial Palace. Of course, it was explosive news, as both superpowers of the Jian Province had just given out orders to kill. But, not only was Jiang Chen not hiding somewhere nobody would be able to find him, he had actually come to the Martial Palace.

# Chapter 365 – This Guy Cannot Remain Alive

---

The group had a joyful gathering the same night, and there was no intense atmosphere around them, as if the troubles and enemies weren't related to them any longer.

Everyone were happy to meet with their familiar friends. They were exchanging stories and filling the room with laughter.

“Jiang Chen, I'm afraid your arrival at the Martial Palace will soon spread to the Jian Province. The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect won't let you off easily, so I'm afraid even the Martial Palace isn't a safe place for you.”

Yu Zihan worriedly said.

“When the soldiers attack, the general will defend them, and when the water rises, the earth will block it off. There will always be a solution to a problem, and I'm not scared at all, so why are you worried?”

Jiang Chen said with a faint smile, showing them a face filled with absolutely no worry. His goal was actually completely after bringing the people around him to the Martial Palace. As for whether or not Wu Jiu was able to provide him protection, Jiang Chen wasn't really bothered about that. As long as Wu Jiu could protect his friends, that would do.

“Junior disciple Jiang is the most abnormal genius I've ever known, he is a man with heavenly fate, and no matter how serious

a matter is, he will be able to easily solve it. I'm sure that goes for this time as well."

Guan Yiyun said with a laugh. His words were sincere, Jiang Chen was truly the most incredible genius he had ever met. Along Jiang Chen's journey, he had created many miracles. All his foes were more powerful than him, and yet, he was still able to withstand them, and none of them would have good endings.

"Of course, have you forgotten that his name is Jiang Chen?"

Han Yan burst into laughter.

"But, he has been here for quite some time, and has even beaten up a prince, I believe Wu Lang should have heard about us arriving here, so why hasn't he come yet?"

Nangong Wentian suddenly recalled Wu Lang.

"Oh, after he came back from the Island of Ice, he went straight into secluded cultivation, and I don't think he has come out yet."

Yu Zihan explained. After Wu Lang came back from the Island of Ice, he went straight into secluded cultivation, and didn't appear in front of anyone.

"Wu Lang obtained quite some benefits back on the Island of Ice, I'm sure he'll gain some improvements after coming out from his secluded cultivation."

There were two reasons why Wu Lang had rushed into secluded cultivation. The first was that he had obtained quite good benefits on the Island of Ice, and the second was that he was blown away by Jiang Chen's performance. As a crown prince from the Martial Saint Dynasty, and the young palace chief, as well a Mid Combat Soul genius, he had never suffered such a huge blow before. Jiang Chen's performance was a heavy blow to him.

"Damn it, even Wu Jiu hasn't shown himself, are they trying to push us aside? If Wu Jiu doesn't want to help us, we won't be safe even if we're in the Martial Palace."

Big Yellow gloomily said. He thought that once he and Jiang Chen arrived at the Martial Palace, Wu Jiu would immediately come out and greet them. However, after having been here for so long, he had yet to show his face.

"Don't worry, brother Jiu isn't that kind of person."

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face. As the once greatest Saint under the Heavens, he had sharp eyes when it came to discovering a person's true character. Few could compare with his ability to judge a person, and Jiang Chen had a clear understanding regarding what kind of person Wu Jiu was. He was a man with a good temper and would always place his brother in front.

.....

The news about Jiang Chen's arrival at the Martial Palace, as well as the incident where he beat up a prince had spread like a tornado not only in the Martial Palace, but the Jian Province as well.

At the same time, what happened in the Jian Province had been heard by those in the Martial Palace. Of course, the most explosive news was Jiang Chen wreaking havoc on Mount Tianyuan, killing both number one geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect.

These two news brought a gigantic storm to the entire Jian Province and Martial Palace, and it even spread to the Martial Saint Dynasty. Jiang Chen's name had become something everyone were talking about, he was a chaotic devil, and no one like him had ever appeared before. At least, no one like him had ever existed in the Eastern Continent's history.

“Damn it, that Jiang Chen is such a vicious man! He even killed Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi! I've heard he isn't even a Combat Soul warrior yet, just a Peak Divine Core warrior! What a monster!”

“Not only is his strength incredibly formidable, his bravery is also unprecedented! He's incredibly daring, as if there is no one in this world whom he doesn't dare to offend! Killing geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, beating up princes... he is going to turn the entire Eastern Continent upside down!”

“He's only a Peak Late Divine Core warrior, and if he breaks through to the Combat Soul realm, that'll be even worse! I think only a Combat King warrior can defeat him by then. However,

there are only a few Combat King warriors in the Martial Saint Dynasty. Don't tell me this guy is a reincarnated saint?"

Jiang Chen's name was being discussed in every corner of the Martial Palace.

.....

"Have you guys heard? Jiang Chen has come to the Martial Palace, and he even beat up a prince! He's a chaotic devil king!"

"I really wonder how he managed to escape from the Jian Province, as the entire province was sealed by both superpowers. And how could he reach the Martial Palace in such a short time after killing Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi? His speed is incredible!"

"More importantly, the first thing this guy did after reaching the Martial Palace was beat up a prince! Oh Heavens, is there anything this Jiang Chen doesn't dare do?"

At the same time, Jiang Chen's name was also being discussed in every corner of the Jian Province. The entire Jian Province was locked up like a cellar, and not even a fly could escape without notice. However, even under such tight control, Jiang Chen still managed to reach the Martial Saint Dynasty without anyone knowing.

.....

Within Shangguan Clan!

“Clan Chief, that guy has fled the Jian Province and gone to the Martial Palace, what should we do now?”

A Combat Soul Clan Elder angrily said.

“Since the Martial Palace announced they would provide protection for the Black Sect, we know there is some sort of relationship between Jiang Chen and them. I’m afraid he might have a close relationship with the Palace Chief. If not, he wouldn’t have gone to the Martial Palace.”

“If that’s the case, it will be a difficult situation to resolve. However, Jiang Chen has killed many of our men, even our number one genius Shangguan Yiqing was killed by him, we can’t just let this matter off so easily.”

All the Combat Soul Clan Elders were furious. They weren’t only losing all their elite disciples, but also the Shangguan Clan’s dignity.

“We can’t let go off this matter so easily, I’ll proceed to the Martial Palace tomorrow, I want him to pay for my grandson’s death! I’m going to rip that guy into a thousand pieces, and not only the Ninth Emperor, even the Majestic Emperor has to give us some words on this.”



Shangguan Ying was fuming with anger. Shangguan Yiqing was his grandson, and the death of his grandson nearly caused his fury to turn into flames.

The Clan Chief was sitting in his seat with a ghastly expression. Jiang Chen was at the Martial Palace right now, and if the Ninth Emperor really wanted to protect him, it would be a difficult situation to deal with, because no matter how strong the Shangguan Clan was, they still had to give the Ninth Emperor face.

At this moment, the Great Elder, Shangguan Qingming stood up from his seat. He walked back and forth within the hall, then, his eyes lit up, and he turned to Shangguan Sheng and said, “Clan Chief, we need to kill this guy as soon as possible! We’ve found out everything about this Jiang Chen, he was only an Early Mortal Core warrior when he made his debut in the Qi Province, but just a year later, he has grown to the Peak Late Divine Core realm! His growth speed is insane, and even more frightening is the fact that he has the ability to kill Mid Combat Soul warriors, which means only Late Combat Soul warriors can kill him! Therefore, we need to kill him before he completely outgrows us! If we give him room to continue growing, I don’t think it will take long before we lost all ability to get revenge. Perhaps our clan will be destroyed by that guy!”

Shangguan Qingming’s words were like a bomb exploding within the hall, it instantly woke everyone up, including Shangguan Sheng.

Precisely! Shangguan Qingming’s words were right to the point!

The real frightening part of Jiang Chen was not his current combat strength, but his potential and speed of growth! It was so fast that it simply caught everyone off guard. If they didn't kill him as soon as possible and gave him room to grow, it would be really difficult to kill him in the future. There was a saying; nurturing a tiger only invites calamity. Sooner or later, Jiang Chen would become the Shangguan Clan's biggest threat.

“Clan Chief, what Great Elder said is correct, we can't let this guy grow any longer! He has become a huge threat to our future!”

Someone said with a loud voice.

“Fine, I'll go find the Myriad Sword Sect's Sect Chief now, then we'll go together to the Martial Palace tomorrow. We need to put some pressure on the Ninth Emperor, I believe he will know what's more important to them, and won't offend both superpowers because of that guy.”

Shangguan Sheng suddenly stood up from his seat, and with a move, he disappeared from the hall.

.....

The next day, when the sky had just turned bright, a few appeared outside the Martial Palace's main gate.

“Jiang Chen, get out here right now!”

A loud shout suddenly resounded throughout the entire Martial Palace like a fierce clap of thunder, instantly shocking everyone.

“What’s going on? Who is that, and why is he making such loud noise this early in the morning?”

“He’s coming for Jiang Chen, perhaps it’s someone from the Myriad Sword Sect or Shangguan Clan? Let’s go check it out!”

“It’s been a long time since the Martial Palace has been so lively! That Jiang Chen arrived here just yesterday, and something big is already going to happen today!”

.....

The quiet Martial Palace instantly became heated, and figures of men kept flying out from where they were staying, rushing toward the main gate.

Right now, within Yu Zihan’s courtyard, when the group heard the shouting, their expressions immediately changed.

“The man’s cultivation is really strong, I think he’s at least a Late Combat Soul warrior. Not many people are brave enough to shout at the Martial Palace’s main gate, I think it must be the Shangguan Clan’s Clan Chief.”

Han Yan said with an ugly expression.

“Come, let’s go have a look.”

Jiang Chen’s expression was gloomy. He walked out from the courtyard and flew toward the main gate.

Right at this moment, many people had gathered in the sky above Mount Wufu. Outside the main gate, six powerful men were sighted, and all of them were Late Combat Soul warriors. The two leading men were in their forties. The one with the domineering energy surrounding him was Shangguan Sheng, and as for the other men, he was wearing green clothes with a white belt. His eyes shone brightly, and his body was skinny. He was none other than the other Jian Province’s big shot, the Myriad Sword Sect’s Sect Chief, Tiangang Yi!

## Chapter 366 – The Mighty Ninth Emperor

---

These six men were all big shots, the existences that could make the entire Jian Province shake with just a stamp of their feet. Among them was the Shangguan Clan's Great Elder, Shangguan Qingming. Also, besides Tiangang Yi, the other two men were the Myriad Sword Sect's two other Late Combat Soul warriors.

Right now, all six men were hovering in the sky, portraying domineering attitudes and powerful killing intent. Clearly, they were here to cause some trouble. Perhaps only the mightiest warriors from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect would have enough courage to unleash their killing intent outside the Martial Palace.

“Look, they are from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect! Even the Shangguan Clan Chief and Myriad Sword Sect Chief came here personally for Jiang Chen!”

“This Jiang Chen really knows how to attract trouble! Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi are each other's biggest enemies, but now, they're actually working together because of a young man! If I wasn't here to see it myself, I wouldn't have believed it at all!”

“Since both big shots are now here, I think no one can save Jiang Chen. Even the Majestic Emperor has to give them face.”

.....

Everyone were talking amongst themselves, no one could remain

calm after seeing that lineup. Although there were only six of them, their force was tremendous.

“Where is Jiang Chen? Ask him to come out now and face his death!”

Tiangang Yi said in an imposing manner. Ever since Shangguan Sheng had come to meet him yesterday, he had realized the importance of killing Jiang Chen was not something that could be delayed any longer. Therefore, he put aside his resentment with Shangguan Sheng and came here together with him. They were going to kill Jiang Chen no matter what!

“I’m right here.”

Jiang Chen came swaggeringly. Han Yan and the other didn’t follow him, but were watching from afar. This was something Jiang Chen had told them to do, because he didn’t want to drag them into this situation. No matter what debts he had to face, he would face them himself.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

Everyone immediately threw their glance onto Jiang Chen. This was the first time many of them had seen him. Honestly, there was a huge gap between how Jiang Chen looked in their imaginations, and real life. In their minds, even if a chaotic devil king like Jiang Chen didn’t have three heads and six arms, he should still at least have a tall and muscular body. No one had expected to see a young and handsome man.

“So he is Jiang Chen? He only looks about 17 years old, what a young genius!”

“Who would have thought that this harmless looking young man is actually a homicidal maniac?”

“Why did he come to the Martial Palace? Is it because someone here is actually supporting him from behind? However, coming out now is no different from seeking death.”

.....

Many people were pointing and commenting at Jiang Chen.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

Shangguan Sheng turned toward Jiang Chen, throwing his sharp gaze onto Jiang Chen’s face. It seemed like he was about to slice Jiang Chen into a million pieces.

“That’s right, I’m Jiang Chen, is there anything I can help you with?”

Jiang Chen said with a calm attitude, causing the crowd to really admire his courage and valor. His expression showed absolutely no panic, and his heart was beating like normal, even though he was facing six Late Combat Soul warriors. It was as if he was just facing

six ordinary men. Just this attitude alone deserved people's respect.

“Good, so you're Jiang Chen, come and face your death!”

Tiangang Yi didn't say much, he just stretched his arm forward, unleashing an illusionary palm covering toward Jiang Chen's head.

The mighty energy of a Peak Combat Soul warriors spread across the scene, filling the entire sky above Mount Wufu with an invisible pressure, and causing people to start breathing heavily.

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes. He just stood there without moving a bit, because he knew someone was going to show up. Besides, with his current strength, even with the Heavenly Saint Sword, there was no way he could be a match for these Late Combat Soul warriors.

“Tiangang Yi, do you think it's appropriate to try and kill someone in the Martial Palace?”

Right at this moment, a powerful voice resounded from within the Martial Palace. At the same time, a huge illusionary palm appeared and clashed with Tiangang Yi's gigantic palm, preventing it from going further.

Following that, a figure suddenly appeared next to Jiang Chen in a ghostly manner. The way this man appeared was really weird, as



if he was a phantom. No one could figure out how he did it.

The man was wearing a golden robe, and his hair was tied up in a bun. He looked to be in his forties, and a domineering expression could be seen on his face. He was none other than Wu Jiu!

“Brother Jiu.”

Jiang Chen smiled at Wu Jiu. He knew it, he knew Wu Jiu would definitely show up.

“Brother, you’ve really surprised me with your incredible growth, your brother is feeling very happy for you. However, you really know how to cause trouble.”

Wu Jiu spoke to Jiang Chen with a praising look in his eyes. He knew Jiang Chen was not an ordinary man ever since they met in Inferno Hell. Sooner or later, Jiang Chen was going truly blossom into an extraordinary warrior. However, judging from what he was now sensing, he had actually underestimated Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen’s speed of growth was simply put, insane.

Although he was delighted, but when he thought about all the things Jiang Chen had done, Wu Jiu couldn’t help but shake his head, as if he had a headache.

What? Brother Jiu? Brothers?

How the two men addressed each other simply messed up

everyone's mind. Who was that person? He was Wu Jiu! The Ninth Emperor! The Martial Palace's Palace Chief! No matter which title one picked, they were all supreme, and no one could get close to them. Across the entire Eastern Continent, only a handful of men could address Wu Jiu as brother!

“Oh Heavens, Jiang Chen is the Palace Chief's brother? How could this be possible?”

“Awesome, this is fucking awesome! No wonder Jiang Chen is so arrogant, and didn't show any signs of being scared when faced with Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi, it's all because he has the Palace Chief's backing!”

“This is amazing, even the Palace Chief is here! But, with the pressure from both the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, I think it will be difficult to handle this matter, even for the Palace Chief himself.”

.....

Everyone were shocked. Jiang Chen and the Palace Chief were addressing each other as brothers! If they hadn't heard it themselves, they wouldn't have believed it.

“Damn it, this is incredible!”

Not far behind, Yu Zihan couldn't hold down his excitement any longer. He had been at the Martial Palace for so long, but this was

the first time he had seen the legendary Palace Chief! And when he found out the Palace Chief himself was helping Jiang Chen, he and the group instantly felt relieved.

It seemed like Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi were expecting to see Wu Jiu, so they didn't act like they were surprised. In fact, they knew Wu Jiu was going to show up before they came here.

“Shangguan Sheng greets the Ninth Emperor.”

“Tiangang Yi greets the Ninth Emperor.”

Both Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi cupped their fists toward Wu Jiu, showing their respect.

“No need for formalities, I know what your purpose here is. I won't allow you to kill Jiang Chen.”

Wu Jiu went straight to the point, expression his attitude regarding this matter.

“Ninth Emperor, this Jiang Chen has killed so many of our geniuses, and yesterday, he killed two of our top geniuses in the Jian Province! He has challenged the dignity of both superpowers, and we have to settle this debt with him!”

Shangguan Sheng's attitude was firm.

“I’ll pay for what Jiang Chen has done to you two. As for Jiang Chen, he is my sworn brother, you guys give up the idea of killing him.

What Wu Jiu said was very obvious, it was pretty much; ‘you guys go back home and sleep now.’

“Ninth Emperor, I think you better think twice before making any decision, don’t let this junior jeopardize our harmonious relationship. The things Jiang Chen have done can only be paid for with his life, the reason we came here is to kill him, and we hope Ninth Emperor doesn’t get in our way.”

Tiangang Yi said.

“Hmph! What if I don’t agree with you? What will you guys do? Don’t tell me you really have the guts to attack my brother in the Martial Palace?”

Wu Jiu coldly harrumphed. His life had been saved by Jiang Chen, and now someone was trying to kill his savior, a bunch of nonsense to him. Wu Jiu would never let that happen!

Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi’s expressions turned ugly. They never expected Wu Jiu’s attitude regarding this matter to be so firm. They were not daring enough to assault someone in the Martial Palace.

“We dare not fight with the Ninth Emperor, but regardless, we

have to get justice for what Jiang Chen has done! If the Ninth Emperor insists on not letting us kill Jiang Chen, we can only proceed to the Martial Saint Dynasty and meet with the Majestic Emperor, we'll requires him to bring us justice!"

Shangguan Sheng said with a loud voice.

"Fine, then you guys just go to the Majestic Emperor."

Wu Jiu's words startled both Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi for a moment. They thought Wu Jiu would be frightened upon them mentioning the Majestic Emperor, but they never expected him to be so firm. It looked like it would be impossible for them to kill Jiang Chen today.

"Ninth Emperor, I suggest you think twice. I know this guys has also offended the Tenth Emperor's son, and yesterday, he also beat up the Seventh Emperor's son. If we bring all this to the Martial Saint Dynasty, I don't think you can protect him either."

Tiangang Yi was getting angry. If it wasn't Wu Jiu he was talking to, he might have already struck by now, without wasting any more time.

"Hmph! Let me repeat myself; Jiang Chen is my sworn brother, he has saved daddy's life before, and no one is allowed to kill him in front of daddy unless you kill me first! Not to mention, he only killed a few men. Even if he poked a hole through the skies, daddy would still stand in front of him; none of you can kill him in front of me! If you want to go to the Majestic Emperor, go now, and get

the fuck outta my place!”

Wu Jiu coldly harrumphed. He was nowhere near polite even when facing Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi, he just asked them to ‘get the fuck outta my place’.

“Brother, let’s go back and have a drink together!”

Wu Jiu grabbed Jiang Chen’s arm and flew back toward the Martial Palace, leaving behind those six angry men. Jiang Chen felt touched, Wu Jiu said he would stand in front of Jiang Chen even if he poked a hole through the skies, this really touched Jiang Chen’s heart. This was what a real brother would do!

“The fuck? The Palace Chief is such an amazing man!”

Yu Zihan felt as if a bomb had been dropped on him because of what he had heard.

“Haha, I never thought the Palace Chief would be a man with such character, I like him! No wonder Little Chen trusts him so much.”

Nangong Wentian burst into laughter. Wu Jiu’s behavior was indeed incredible, he gave absolutely no face to the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, he simply dragged Jiang Chen and left the place, leaving behind those six mighty warriors.

“Of course! Back in Inferno Hell, Little Chen and I saved Wu Jiu’s

life. Without us, he would be dead meat back in that Poisonous Miasma Space. Since Little Chen is now in trouble, he has to stand out and save him.”

Big Yellow’s big tail swayed back and forth as he spoke. But honestly, he too didn’t expect Wu Jiu to be such an intensive man.

# Chapter 367 – The Imperial Emperor's Summon

---

The group of six came here in an imposing manner, but they just ran into a stone wall. No matter how good their status was, Wu Jiu just wouldn't give them any face. He simply brought Jiang Chen with him and left.

It was impossible for them to kill Jiang Chen unless they fought Wu Jiu in such a situation, but if that happened, the tune of the entire matter would change. The Martial Palace was the foundation built by the Martial Saint Dynasty, and no one had the courage to wreak havoc at this place. Furthermore, the Ninth Emperor's status was very noble, he was part of the Imperial Family by blood, and if they fought him, not only was it possible to fail to kill Jiang Chen, there wouldn't be any benefits either.

“Clan Chief, Sect Chief Tiangang, what should we do now?”

Shangguan Ying turned to Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi while gnashing his teeth in anger. He wanted to kill Jiang Chen more than anyone else, and although Jiang Chen was right in front of just now, he didn't have any opportunities to kill him and avenge his grandson. This made him feel depressed.

“I never knew that Jiang Chen had such a close relationship with the Ninth Emperor, he even saved his life. Looks like it will be impossible for us to kill him here.”

Tiangang Yi furrowed his brows. Before they came here, he was



thinking about pressuring Wu Jiu with both Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, making him hand Jiang Chen over to them and stay out of this matter. He had never expected to face such strong rejection from Wu Jiu, as if Jiang Chen's problems were his own.

“I think we can only go to the Martial Saint Dynasty now.”

Shangguan Sheng said with a ghastly expression.

“Is it really necessary to go to the Martial Saint Dynasty? Troubling the Imperial Emperor just because of a young guy, I don't think he would be happy with this.”

Shangguan Qingming asked worriedly.

“We have to go to the Imperial Emperor. If not, with the Ninth Emperor's protection, we won't have any chances to kill Jiang Chen, and once Jiang Chen has outgrown every single one of us, we'll be the unlucky ones.”

Tiangang Yi said.

“He's right. Let's go find the Tenth Emperor and Seventh Emperor. Jiang Chen nearly killed Prince Wu Cong back on the Island of Ice, and he beat the Seventh Emperor's son up yesterday. For the two emperors who are used to sitting above all else, this is clearly an insult to their dignity. I believe they too don't want to let this Jiang Chen grow any further.”

Shangguan Sheng said with a sneer on his face.

“Let’s go, we’ll proceed straight to the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

After saying that, Tiangang Yi started flying toward the Martial Saint Dynasty. The other five immediately followed after, soon disappearing from the scene.

“Don’t tell me those six bastards are really going to the Martial Saint Dynasty now?”

Looking at the direction those six mighty warriors disappearing into, Han Yan spoke with mixed emotions.

“Looks like they are determined to kill Little Chen, and they are going to get the Imperial Emperor’s help, since the Ninth Emperor won’t let them do it.”

Yu Zihan said as he furrowed his brows.

“If the Imperial Emperor really gets involved, does that mean Chen Gege will be in great danger?”

Yan Chenyu was worried as well.

“Enough, let’s not think so much about it right now, it’s pointless to do so. That guy won’t be defeated so easily. Furthermore, Wu

Jiu will definitely help protect him.”

Big Yellow said.

“I think the Ninth Emperor’s position in the Martial Saint Dynasty is pretty high, at least higher than the other emperors. If not, he wouldn’t be the Martial Palace Chief.”

Nangong Wentian said. Now, they could only put all their hopes in Wu Jiu.

Within the Martial Palace’s inner region, Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu exchanged smiles. Xuan Ye was standing next to them, and he was now a Mid Combat Soul warrior, much stronger compared to when he was in Inferno Hell. Xuan Ye looked at Jiang Chen full of shock, and in the end, he could only shake his head. There were always miracles in this world, just like this young man in front of him.

“Brother Jiang Chen, I still remember when you were a young man who had just broken through to the Divine Core realm back in Inferno Hell, and in order to kill that Earth Devil, you had no other choice but to work with me. But now, you’ve actually grown to this level... You’ve truly made me speechless.”

It was Xuan Ye who suggested that Jiang Chen should check out the Blissful Island, but he had never thought Jiang Chen’s combat strength would exceed his after coming back from the ocean.

Although Xuan Ye had broken through to the Mid Combat Soul

realm, but with his talent, he was actually much weaker than Shangguan Yiqing and Xuan Yuzi. Jiang Chen could kill both of them alone, let alone Xuan Ye.

“I want to thank brother Xuan for giving me guidance. If not, I wouldn’t have gone to the ocean.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Xuan Ye. His words of appreciation came from the bottom of his heart. Just like Wu Jiu, Xuan Ye had helped him a lot, and it was Xuan Ye who asked him to try his luck at the Blissful Island, and that’s why he met Nangong Wentian and obtained the Nine Solar Holy Water in the end. Without that, Yan Chenyu wouldn’t have been able to wake up.

“I know sister-in-law has fully recovered, that’s good news!”

Wu Jiu patted Jiang Chen on the shoulder. Although he didn’t show up yesterday when Jiang Chen arrived at the Martial Palace, he knew everything that had happened, including Yan Chenyu’s appearance.

“Come, it’s been a long time since we met, let’s drink today!”

Wu Jiu candidly said.

These three men started drinking and chit-chatting. They never mentioned anything about the Shangguan Clan or the Myriad Sword Sect, and as for the incident where Jiang Chen beat up the

prince yesterday, Wu Jiu didn't bring that up either. Because, in his mind, this was the Jiang Chen he knew. If Jiang Chen didn't fight back when Wu Yan was bullying him, it wouldn't be the same Jiang Chen he knew.

“Palace Chief, I think the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect has gone to the Martial Saint Dynasty. Do you think the Imperial Emperor will interfere in this matter?”

Xuan Ye finally brought up the topic, expressing his worry regarding Jiang Chen.

“Don't worry. I'm here, so nobody can touch my, Wu Jiu's brother!”

Wu Jiu drank a cup of wine himself and said in a carefree manner. He had publicly said he would stand in front of Jiang Chen even if a hole was poked through the sky.

“Haha, I'm sure that's a fact. With Ninth Emperor's status, keeping brother Jiang safe is just a piece of cake.”

Xuan Ye said with a smile.

“Brother Jiu, I do have one thing I need your help with.”

Jiang Chen suddenly said.

“Tell me, brother.”

Wu Jiu said.

“I’m sure the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect are going to collaborate with the Seventh Emperor and Tenth Emperor, and that will definitely alert the Imperial Emperor. With what I’ve done to them, perhaps it will be really difficult to handle even for brother Jiu. Therefore, you don’t need to protect me, I just hope you can provide shelter for those people I brought yesterday. As for myself, haha, this world is huge, and I can go anywhere I want. It will be really difficult for them to kill me.”

Jiang Chen told Wu Jiu about his request. This was his main reason for coming to the Martial Palace.

“Since they have come to the Martial Palace, they will be a part of this place in the future. I’ll get Xuan Ye to arrange their identities as disciples later. As for you, you are part of the Martial Palace as well, and you’re also my sworn brother, so you don’t have to go anywhere. Just settle down here and continue with your cultivation, no one is going to touch you.”

Wu Jiu patted his chest and promised.

“But?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He knew the matters weren’t as simply as Wu Jiu had said. The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword

Sect were both very determined to kill him, and both superpowers were the Martial Saint Dynasty's two biggest attendants. Therefore, even the Imperial Emperor himself would have to take them seriously.

“Brother Jiang, there is one thing you might not be aware of, the Ninth Emperor's status is different from the other emperors. The weight of his words, the other emperors can't compare.”

Xuan Ye said with a smile.

“Oh?”

Jiang Chen was startled for a moment. When it came to matters regarding the Martial Saint Dynasty, he was in complete dark.

“A hundred years ago, there were two elite geniuses from the Martial Saint Dynasty. One is the current emperor, and the other is the Ninth Emperor. When the Island of Ice first appeared, no one had any idea what was in there, whether it was fortune or misfortune. Therefore, the Martial Saint Dynasty decided to choose one prince to check out the Island of Ice, and the Ninth Emperor was the number one candidate, because he was the most talented amongst the princes. But in the end, the current Imperial Emperor begged him for this chance, so, the Ninth Emperor gave him the opportunity to go. Because of that, the Imperial Emperor found his great fortune, and his cultivation surged, then he eventually became a Combat King warrior, and the current Imperial Emperor.”

Xuan Ye continued, “Therefore, the Imperial Emperor really appreciates the kindness Ninth Emperor gave him, and allowed him to manage the Martial Palace. That’s why in the heart of the Imperial Emperor, Ninth Emperor’s words weigh more compared to the other emperors.”

After listening to Xuan Ye’s explanation, Jiang Chen finally realized why Wu Jiu could be so domineering. It was all because of what happened a hundred years ago.

“What a pity. With brother Jiu’s talent, if he went to the Island of Ice a hundred years ago, he might be the current Imperial Emperor.”

Jiang Chen said with a laugh.

“You bet, the throne did initially belong to Lord Jiu.”

Xuan Ye too felt pity for Wu Jiu.

“That’s enough, Xuan Ye, you are talking too much tonight. I am not interested in becoming the Imperial Emperor.”

Wu Jiu waved his hand as he spoke. He didn’t want to talk about what happened a hundred years ago.

Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu spent the rest of the time drink, as well as the entire night. When the next morning came, a golden talisman suddenly came floating in the air, and fell into Wu Jiu’s hand.



Wu Jiu furrowed his brows when he saw the talisman. He snapped his finger, causing a bright beam to shoot out from his fingertip. The beam fell onto the talisman, then another bright beam shot out from the talisman into Wu Jiu's head.

“I never thought the Imperial Emperor would really want to interfere in this matter.”

Wu Jiu said with a frown.

“Lord Jiu, what's going on?”

Xuan Ye asked.

“The Imperial Emperor is summoning me, and he wants me to bring Jiang Chen over to the Martial Saint Dynasty. Looks like this matter has alerted him.”

Wu Jiu said with a frown.

“Lord Jiu, what should we do then? If we bring Jiang Chen to the Martial Saint Dynasty, won't he be in danger?”

Xuan Ye worriedly asked.

“With me there, no one is going to hurt my brother. Since this matter has alerted the Imperial Emperor, we can use this

opportunity to make everything come to a stop. Brother, follow me to the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Wu Jiu turned to Jiang Chen and said.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. Honestly, he didn't feel like going to the Martial Saint Dynasty, because he didn't want to depend on others to solve his own problems. No matter how strong his enemies was, he would still have the ability to solve them himself. Even if he couldn't solve the problems now, he would still be able to solve them in the future. Initially, he planned to leave this place and go somewhere else where no one could find him, and return when his cultivation had improved. But, he couldn't just turn Wu Jiu's kindness away.

## Chapter 368 – Martial Saint Dynasty

---

“Brother, I know you don’t want to get involved in too much trouble, and your purpose for coming to the Martial Palace was to entrust your friends to me, then go off to some distant place. But, do you know that the Martial Saint Dynasty is everywhere in the Eastern Continent? There is no way you can hide without being found by them. You’ve saved my life, therefore, I will protect you even at the cost of my own life!”

Wu Jiu said with the utmost sincerity.

“Alright, I’ll follow you to the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He finally made up his mind regarding the trip to the Martial Saint Dynasty. As the ultimate ruler of the Eastern Continent, Jiang Chen would sooner or later have to face them. With Wu Jiu accompanying them, he might as well take this opportunity to face now, at least his life would be in safe hands. But, if someone bad really happened, Jiang Chen still had his own methods of dealing with it.

“Let’s go!”

Wu Jiu leapt into the sky and flew toward the Martial Saint Dynasty. Without hesitating, Jiang Chen took a few steps and caught up to him. Both men flew side by side and left Mount Wufu in the blink of an eye.

Both men flew fast as lightning along their way. Wu Jiu

purposely slowed down as he was afraid Jiang Chen might not be able to catch up to him, but when he found out Jiang Chen's breath was calm and steady, he couldn't help but feel shocked inwardly.

“Although brother Jiang's combat strength is incredible, there's still quite a big gap between us. But, I didn't expect him to be able to fly so fast. I'll increase my speed and see if he can follow.”

A smile emerged onto Wu Jiu's lips. He immediately increased his speed, leaving Jiang Chen behind. However, before Wu Jiu could feel proud about himself, Jiang Chen had already caught up to him.

“Brother Jiu, let's have a race and see who is faster?”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

Wu Jiu was startled for a second. Jiang Chen actually suggested a race? Wasn't this just looking for a defeat?

“Alright, we'll see who the faster man is. Let me find out how fast you, an amazing genius can go!”

Wu Jiu candidly said. Jiang Chen was only a Peak Divine Core warrior, while Wu Jiu himself was a Peak Combat Soul warrior. There was an entire realm difference between them, and Jiang Chen was three stages below him. This was a massive gap that couldn't be compensated for, Wu Jiu didn't believe Jiang Chen

could catch up with his speed with such a huge gap.

Swoosh, swoosh...

Therefore, the two men started flying across the sky like two shooting stars. One in front, and the other one right behind. They would occasionally change positions, leaving behind a long trail of afterimages.

Following the increase of their speed, Wu Jiu was truly shocked this time. He kept throwing terrified glances at Jiang Chen, because Jiang Chen could really fly side by side with him. It was difficult to determine who was faster. If Wu Jiu didn't experience this himself, he wouldn't believe it to be possible at all.

“Brother, the movement skill you used just now can actually disturb the void surrounding you! Looks like your brother has really underestimated you, your speed is actually equal to mine! If you break through to the Combat Soul realm, you will be much faster than me!”

Wu Jiu said, shocked. He didn't his admiration of Jiang Chen.

“The speed of brother Jiu's recovery is incredible as well, I believe it won't take long before you break through to the Combat King realm!”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile. Wu Jiu had currently recovered to his peak form, and he had one foot in the Combat

King realm. What he needed now was the perfect timing, and he would be able to step into the realm of his dreams. However, this last step was not easy to cross over to.

Jiang Chen did give Wu Jiu some guidance regarding his cultivation on the Dao of War, but judging from his current situation, it didn't look like Wu Jiu had taken his guidance seriously. If not, perhaps he would have already broken through to the Combat King realm. However, Jiang Chen didn't mention it again, because it all depended on the person himself to figure out the correct path of his cultivation. With Wu Jiu's talent, Jiang Chen believed he would sooner or later understand the turning point.

In terms of speed, there were none under the Heavens who were equal to Jiang Chen in the same realm. Although the Nine Phantom Wolves was a skill for combat, it also gave a great boost to Jiang Chen's speed. The most important thing however, was the Dimensional Shift. If he was without this skill, there would be no way for Jiang Chen to catch up to Wu Jiu, who was a peak Combat Soul warrior.

In order to fully unleash the Dimensional Shift's power, Jiang Chen had to reach the Combat King realm and master the Dimensional Laws. In his past life, no one could compare with Jiang Chen's speed when he used the Dimensional Shift.

A proud moment of Jiang Chen's previous life was when he was a Peak Combat Emperor warrior, and with the help of the Dimensional Shift, he was able to escape from three Minor Saint warriors.

The distance between the Martial Palace and the Martial Saint Dynasty wasn't big, so with Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu's speed, they arrived in just half an hour.

The Martial Saint Dynasty was the ultimate superpower of the entire Eastern Continent, and no one were capable of shaking its position. Looking at it from a distance, it was a gigantic monster that covered more than 500 kilometers of circumference. Sumptuous palaces were all over the place, and even the most ordinary buildings here were filled with auras of nobility.

Magnificent, majestic, noble, luxurious!

These were the best words to describe the Martial Saint Dynasty. Just standing outside, one could easily feel its supreme atmosphere, causing one to be filled with admiration.

“Brother, this is the Martial Saint Dynasty, the heart of the Eastern Continent, and the most imperial place. What do you think?”

Wu Jiu pointed at the Martial Saint Dynasty as he spoke. It wasn't hard to tell how proud he was from his words.

“Really not bad, I can feel the imperial atmosphere from here.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. If it was any other ordinary young man who came this close to the Martial Saint Dynasty, he might

throw himself onto the ground in admiration, speechless.

In Jiang Chen's eyes, this Martial Saint Dynasty was indeed luxurious, but it seemed to be lacking some strong foundations. All the buildings here were indeed superb, but compared to the real superpowers in the Divine Continent, the difference was very obvious. Their deep and strong foundations were not something the Martial Saint Dynasty could ever compare with. Some sects with ancient inheritance would have Saint Warriors residing there, and just their auras alone were more than enough to make the sect energetic.

“Let's go, we'll go meet the Imperial Emperor now.”

Wu Jiu stepped forward in the sky, started walking toward the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Who is it? How dare you walk in the sky above the Martial Saint Dynasty?”

A loud shout was suddenly heard. After that, more than a dozen bright beams shot up into the sky. Some guards wearing golden armor blocked Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu. The leading man looked to be in his late thirties, he was a strong and muscular man, and he was an Early Combat Soul warrior.

The leader was portraying a ruthless attitude, but when he saw who the man in front of him was, he was immediately struck with awe. Without any hesitation, he immediately bowed deeply toward Wu Jiu and said, “I didn't know it was the Ninth Emperor, please



forgive me.”

“That’s enough, I don’t blame you.”

Wu Jiu waved his hand, then he led Jiang Chen and continued flying without stopping. Those golden warriors were standing straight as the bowed, no one dared to show any neglect.

In the Martial Saint Dynasty, even Combat Soul warriors weren’t allowed to fly. There was only a handful of people who had the privilege of doing so, and Wu Jiu was one of them, because he was the Ninth Emperor. No one had the courage to offend him.

“They are the golden guards of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and every single one of them is elite. They have to go through a life or death assessment before they can be accepted as guards. Many of the Martial Palace’s geniuses become golden guards after leaving the Martial Palace.”

Wu Jiu explained.

“They are indeed powerful guards.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

“The mighty warriors in the Martial Saint Dynasty are not someone you can imagine. These golden guards are the benchmark of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and even those geniuses from the Martial Palace have to go through countless assessments before

they can be accepted. Lang'er is one of the golden guards, and the current commander of the golden guards is the Martial Saint Dynasty's Imperial Prince."

Wu Jiu continued his explanation.

"The Imperial Emperor's son?"

Jiang Chen casually asked.

"That's right, the Imperial Prince is the real number one genius of the Martial Saint Dynasty. He is only 35 years old this year, but he has already reached the Late Combat Soul realm. He is the commander of the golden guards, and the best candidate for becoming the next Imperial Emperor."

When mentioning the Imperial Prince, even Wu Jiu had to praise him.

Martial Saint Palace!

It was the Martial Saint Dynasty's main palace, a place where all meetings were held. Wu Jiu brought Jiang Chen straight to the Martial Saint Palace's main door, and he didn't stop there, he entered and flew straight up the staircase made from premium quality stones, entering the palace.

The Martial Saint Palace was decorated with dazzling gold and jade, giving it a very majestic touch. At the palace's front, there

were two huge and luxurious looking dragon pillars, and each were more than 30 meters tall. Both pillars were carved into extraordinary golden dragons, and the dragon's head was facing out. It looked extremely lively, and was enough to take one's breath just by staring at it.

At the depths of the Martial Saint Palace, there was a big dazzling golden dragon chair. Right now, a man was sitting in this dragon chair, and he looked about the same age as Wu Jiu, where both looked to be in their forties. He was wearing a golden dragon robe, and a huge dazzling crown on top of head, making him look very majestic.

The man had a sharp face, and was emitting a heroic energy. Although he wasn't angry, he was still portraying a domineering image. Just by quietly sitting there, he could easily make anyone feel a desire to bow down before him. This man was the Martial Saint Dynasty's Imperial Emperor, the most supreme man in the entire Eastern Continent!

After Jiang Chen entered the palace, he immediately threw his glance onto the Imperial Emperor. This was the strongest man he had met since his reincarnation, and he could easily feel dimensional ripples surround this man with his senses. It was only something that appeared after mastering the Dimensional Laws. The Imperial Emperor was a true mighty Combat King warrior.

There were dozens of men besides the Imperial Emperor, and all of them were wearing luxurious clothes and portraying noble auras. Among these men, Jiang Chen knew six of them, as they were the ones from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan

who came yelling at him yesterday in the Martial Palace. As for the rest of the men, he knew none. However, those who were allowed to be here were all men with noble status; none of them were ordinary men.

Jiang Chen didn't know these guys, but he could feel aggressiveness from the way these people were looking at him. This caused him to furrow his brows, as he really hated this kind of hostility that was directed at him for no reason.

More importantly, Jiang Chen could clearly feel hostility and repulsion from the way these men looked at Wu Jiu. If his guess was correct, these guys should be the other emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty.

## Chapter 369 – An Eye For An Eye

---

Glances filled with astonishment fell onto Jiang Chen's face. None of these emperors could believe that the man who had brought such a great storm to the Eastern Continent was so young.

Boom!

The next moment, every single Late Combat Soul warrior on the spot unleashed their powerful pressure and made it sweep toward Jiang Chen like a fierce tornado, instantly making him the center of the storm.

Facing such gigantic pressures, Jiang Chen only responded with a faint smile on his face. He just stood there without feeling any discomfort, as if the pressure was useless against him.

“What?”

Even the Imperial Emperor was puzzled by this situation, and couldn't help but look at Jiang Chen once more. The pressure unleashed by more than a dozen Late Combat Soul warriors was not something fun to be up against, no ordinary man could withstand, and yet, Jiang Chen was behaving as if nothing was happening. Furthermore, this place was the Martial Saint Palace, any young man who came here would be awed, letting the fact that the Imperial Emperor was staring at him. But this young man however, he had been wearing a calm expression ever since he came into the palace, as if he had just stepped into a food market. Just this attitude alone was something that no other young

geniuses could compare with.

“Hmph! What are you guys doing? You think I don’t exist?”

Wu Jiu became angry. He unleashed a formidable energy from his body, pushing back all the pressure. With a stern expression, he swept his glance over everyone that stood in the palace. After that, he turned to the Imperial Emperor sitting on the throne.

“Imperial Emperor, I have brought Jiang Chen here.”

Wu Jiu cupped his fist toward the Imperial Emperor.

“Brother, give the Imperial Emperor your greetings.”

Wu Jiu whispered to Jiang Chen.

With the same smile on his face, Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward the Imperial Emperor like Wu Jiu did, then he said, “Jiang Chen greets the Imperial Emperor.”

“Bastard, why aren’t you kneeling down before the Imperial Emperor? Are you courting death?!”

A man immediately shouted at Jiang Chen. Ever since Jiang Chen arrived, this man had been very aggressive. Jiang Chen guessed that he must be either the Seventh Emperor or the Tenth Emperor.

“Lao Shi, Jiang Chen just came here and doesn’t know the rules, you shouldn’t shout at him.”

Wu Jiu responded with a loud voice. At the same time, the way he addressed this man allowed Jiang Chen to confirm his identity. This man was Wu Cong’s father, and since Jiang Chen had nearly killed Wu Cong on the Island of Ice, it was perfectly normal for the Tenth Emperor to hate him so much.

“Hmph! What a clown! Since he now knows the rules, hurry up and kneel down!”

The other man coldly harrumphed. With no need to guess, he must be the Seventh Emperor. Jiang Chen had beat up his son, Wu Yan, in the Martial Palace. This showed that he didn’t respect the Seventh Emperor, it was no different from slapping his face.

A cold glint leaked out from Jiang Chen’s eyes. His expression was the same as before, he was still standing toward the Imperial Emperor with his fist cupped, but he showed no signs of kneeling down. What a joke, asking the once greatest Saint underneath the Heavens to kneel down before a Combat King warrior. Did this guy truly deserve such a great honor?

Right at this moment, the atmosphere within the palace suddenly became heavy. Everyone could clearly feel a fluctuation in the Imperial Emperor’s emotions. In this Martial Saint Palace, he was the ultimate existence, but this young man was refusing to kneel down before him. This was no doubt nothing different from not giving him any face.

“What a bastard, who gave you the audacity to be so rude to the Imperial Emperor? Just this sin alone is more than enough to kill all your family members!”

The Seventh Emperor pointed at Jiang Chen’s nose and scolded.

“Lao Qi, Jiang Chen is my sworn brother, you better show him some respect!”

Wu Jiu adopted a strong attitude toward the men. However, he too did not expect Jiang Chen to refuse to kneel down before the Imperial Emperor. Because of this, Jiang Chen’s image would be greatly ruined in the Imperial Emperor’s mind, this was not good.

Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi didn’t say anything, but their faces were filled with satisfaction. In their minds, Jiang Chen was just a dumbass who didn’t know how serious his mistake was. Since he just offended the Imperial Emperor, the situation wouldn’t be in his favor any longer.

“Enough!”

The Imperial Emperor waved his hand, signaling Wu Jiu and Wu Qi to stop quarreling.

“You are Jiang Chen?”



The Imperial Emperor looked at Jiang Chen.

“I am. May I know your reason for summoning me here, Imperial Emperor?”

Jiang Chen responded in a neither servile nor overbearing attitude.

“What a young talented man! You have strength and courage, I like you.”

The Imperial Emperor unexpectedly praised Jiang Chen. This transformation brought Wu Jiu great joy. As long as the Imperial Emperor had a good impression of Jiang Chen, it would be a good thing.

The other people's expressions changed because of this. They thought the Imperial Emperor would punish Jiang Chen because of his impolite behavior, they had never thought he wouldn't be angry at all.

However, with Jiang Chen's incredible senses, he could clearly feel an unusual emotion coming from the Imperial Emperor. This man didn't really like him, no Imperial Emperor would like someone who was being impolite to them, because they are already used to sitting above all else. They would never allow someone to challenge their dignity.

“Jiang Chen, I've heard that you've killed many men from the

Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. Now, even the Shangguan Clan's Clan Chief and Myriad Sword Sect's Sect Chief are here personally, is there anything you want to say?"

The Imperial Emperor said in an indifferent tone.

"Imperial Emperor, this is resentment between Jiang Chen, the Shangguan Clan, and the Myriad Sword Sect. I hope the Imperial Emperor can stay out of it."

Wu Jiu cupped his fist toward the Imperial Emperor and said.

"Hmph! Wu Jiu, who are you to tell the Imperial Emperor what to do? The Imperial Emperor is the Eastern Continent's ultimate existence, there is nothing he can't interfere with! Furthermore, what happened back in the days was all because of his own capability, don't always think you are the greatest man here!"

Wu Qi said with a loud voice.

Hearing this, Jiang Chen felt a strong desire to tear this Seventh Emperor's mouth apart. His understanding regarding power games were deep, the Imperial Emperor was an outstanding figure of his generation, and the one thing he didn't like people mentioning was the event where Wu Jiu gave him the chance to visit the Island of Ice, as if his throne had been given to him by Wu Jiu. That incident had become a prick in the Imperial Emperor's heart, and it simply upset him whenever someone mentioned it. Wu Jiu was a man with an imposing bearing, and the way he behaved made some people feel as if he was taking credit of that incident. If this

situation went on for a long time, the Imperial Emperor's appreciation would turn to hatred, or even hostility. In the current situation, this was the one thing no one should bring up.

“I'm merely judging the matter as it stands.”

Wu Jiu's attitude was still strong.

“Alright, since this resentment is between them, why are you getting involved? Why don't you just let them solve this themselves?”

Wu Qi and Wu Jiu were fitting one thing into another. All the other emperors standing aside were watching how things went with cold attitudes. Suddenly, Jiang Chen had a feeling that the relationship between Wu Jiu and these emperors wasn't that good.

But, it was understandable. First, it was because of Wu Jiu's character. He was an independent man who acted on his own whim, a man like him was never a good player in power games. Furthermore, there were so many emperors in the Martial Saint Dynasty, so why let Wu Jiu managed the Martial Palace? Also, he had gone missing for ten years, but the Martial Palace only assigned an acting-chief during the period of his absence, and when he returned, he was immediately reinstated to his old position. The other emperors obviously didn't feel happy with this.

“Let me tell you this, Wu Qi. Jiang Chen saved my life in Inferno Hell, and he is my sworn brother, so of course I have to help him.”

Wu Jiu said.

“Hmph! This Jiang Chen nearly killed Wu Cong, and he beat up Wu Yan right after arriving at the Martial Palace; he has absolutely no respect for the princes! This is an insult to the Imperial family, a sin that can only be redeemed with his death!”

The Tenth Emperor coldly harrumphed. An eye for an eye.

“All young men are hot tempered, Wu Cong and Wu Yan were no match for Jiang Chen, and it simply means they are lacking in strength. Jiang Chen also didn’t even kill them.”

Wu Jiu said.

“Imperial Emperor, the Shangguan Clan has always serviced the Martial Saint Dynasty, and we just want to kill our enemy, but the Ninth Emperor keeps stopping us, this is really unfair. I hope the Imperial Emperor can consider our loyalty for all this time and give us justice.”

Shangguan Sheng bowed deeply toward the Imperial Emperor.

“The Myriad Sword Sect has never said no to any of the Martial Saint Dynasty’s requests. Now, our elders have been killed, our young geniuses have been killed, even our number one genius, Xuan Yuzi, has been killed by this guy. This is a resentment that can’t be resolved, I hope the Ninth Emperor can stay out of this,

and let us settle this ourselves.”

Tiangang Yi spoke as well. The leaders of both superpowers from the Jian Province were pressuring the Imperial Emperor at the same time.

“This is giving me a headache. Lao Jiu, what do you think?”

Imperial Emperor turned to Wu Jiu and asked.

“Imperial Emperor, I only have one thing to say; I will protect Jiang Chen with my own life! He has saved my life, and if anyone wants to kill him, they will have to stop over my dead body!”

Wu Jiu’s attitude remained strong. He didn’t want to back down from this matter.

The Imperial Emperor furrowed his brows. A displeased expression could be seen on his face. He didn’t like the way Wu Jiu talked, as it sounded like Wu Jiu wasn’t giving him any face in front of so many people.

Caw!

Right at this moment, a sharp caw was suddenly heard from outside the palace. After that, a hawk with golden feathers flew into the palace and landed on the Imperial Emperor’s shoulder. It made some ‘caw’ sounds near the Imperial Emperor’s ear, and after that, it flew out from the palace.

The Imperial Emperor threw his glance onto Jiang Chen's face once again, then he said, "Jiang Chen, one side wants to kill you, and the other side wants to protect you; it is a difficult decision to make. However, I just received news about a dimensional crack having appeared in a remote area of the Eastern Continent, and a huge amount of Dimensional Creatures have rushed out from it. These creatures are wreaking havoc and killing many innocents, and I am thinking of sending you to eliminate all the Dimensional Creatures and repair the crack. If you can do it, I'll forgive all the wrong deeds you've done, what do you think?"

"Dimensional crack?"

Jiang Chen was startled for a moment.

"That's right. When the greatest Saint swung his sword toward the Heavens and destroyed the gates leading to the Realm of Immortals, the Saint Origin Realm was seriously affected, and the dimensional barrier surrounding our realm became weakened. Creatures will frequently break into our world and wreak havoc, but it seems like it's a much more serious matter this time. There are sightings of Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures, and their numbers are huge. Your mission is not only to eliminate those creatures, you have to repair the crack as well."

The Imperial Emperor explained.

"No way!"

Wu Jiu nearly jumped up, “Imperial Emperor, this is simply a mission that cannot be accomplished! Putting aside those ferocious Dimensional Creatures, only a Combat King warrior who has mastered the Dimensional Laws can repair a dimensional crack, and Jiang Chen is only a Divine Core warrior! Not only can he not repair it, he might get dragged into the crack if he gets too close!”

# Chapter 370 – Utmost Urgency

---

It was understandable for Wu Jiu to respond like this. This mission could only be accomplished by a Combat King warrior. Without mastering the Dimensional Laws, there was no way for Jiang Chen to fix the dimensional crack. If he got too close to it, the dimensional crack would certainly pull him into a dimensional void. Even if he was lucky enough to survive the turbulence, he would be trapped in there forever.

Furthermore, there were powerful, brutal, and ferocious Dimensional Creatures, and it was extremely risky to face them. In the past hundred years, dimensional cracks had appeared a few times in the Eastern Continent, but Dimensional Creatures rarely emerged. Even if they did emerge, their numbers were small. All those cracks had been fixed by Combat King warriors from the Martial Saint Dynasty.

However, the current situation was much more serious than before, because Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures had been sighted. This was something that had never happened before, that's why it was not an easy task to fix the dimensional crack. In such a situation, only the Imperial Emperor himself, or any other Combat King warrior from the Martial Saint Dynasty could fully solve this matter. Even Wu Jiu would be unable to do it. Assigning this impossible mission to Jiang Chen was no different from asking Jiang Chen to kill himself.

“Lao Jiu, the Imperial Emperor is showing great kindness by not directly punishing Jiang Chen, he only asked him to complete a mission! With this, the Imperial Emperor has given you enough face, and you're still not satisfied?”



The Seventh Emperor said with a loud voice and a sneer. He obviously knew how difficult this mission was, and with just a Late Divine Core cultivation, there was no way Jiang Chen could fix the dimensional crack, and once he got close enough to it, he would immediately be devoured by the crack, and die without a proper burial ground.

“Complete a mission? Lao Qi, if it was you, would you be able to complete this mission?!”

Wu Jiu couldn't suppress his anger any longer.

“Since the Imperial Emperor has decided this, the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect has nothing more to say. As long as Jiang Chen can complete this mission, the scores between us will be cancelled once and for all.”

Shangguan Sheng said. It looked like the Imperial Emperor was still on their side.

“No way, there is no way Jiang Chen can accomplish this mission! I hope the Imperial Emperor can retract this assignment.”

Wu Jiu cupped his fist toward the Imperial Emperor once again. He just couldn't let Jiang Chen accept this mission, because, no matter how extraordinary Jiang Chen's abilities were, it was still impossible for him to completely this mission.

“Lao Jiu, my words are oracular, there is no way I can take them back. As long as Jiang Chen completes this mission, what he did to them will be forgiven. Of course, Jiang Chen can reject this mission as well, but then I would have to bring justice to the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect.

The Imperial Emperor spoke slowly from the top of his dragon throne.

“Imperial Emperor...”

Wu Jiu still wanted to say something, but Jiang Chen pulled his arm from the side and stopped him. If they continued fighting like this, the relationship between Wu Jiu and the Imperial Emperor would become worse. Although it looked like both of them treated each other as brothers, and had a harmonious relationship, Jiang Chen knew there was an ill feeling in the Imperial Emperor's mind, and if they kept focusing on this ill feeling, it wouldn't do any good for Wu Jiu.

The Imperial Emperor was after all a Combat King warrior, the ultimate ruler of the Eastern Continent. He wouldn't allow any outsider to challenge his dignity, not even Wu Jiu. Therefore, although the Imperial Emperor didn't express anything, he must be feeling really unhappy in his mind right now, just like when Jiang Chen had refused to kneel down before him.

“Imperial Emperor, might I know where this dimensional crack is located?”

Jiang Chen asked. He didn't have the ability to fix a dimensional crack right now, but under current circumstances, he just had to accept the mission. Once he left the Martial Saint Dynasty, he would be off to some distant land where no one could find him, and he would return once his cultivation had improve.

"It's at the border of the Eastern Continent, a place called Mount Origin."

The Imperial Emperor said.

"What? Mount Origin?"

When Jiang Chen heard the name Mount Origin, he completely lost his calmness, and cried out in disbelief.

"That's right, those dimensional creatures are wreaking havoc around that region. From the news I've just received, Mount Origin is already nearly destroyed. Therefore, if you want to go there, you better hurry."

The Imperial Emperor said.

"Alright, I'll go there right now, I'll definitely accomplish this mission."

Jiang Chen replied with a serious expression. After that, he immediately turned around and walked toward the Martial Saint Palace's exit. Initially, the appearance of the dimensional crack had

nothing to do with him, but now it had become the most urgent matter he needed to attend to. The reason was simply, it was found at Mount Origin, that's where his hometown was!

Jiang Chen knew how remote Mount Origin was. In that territory, a Heavenly Core warrior would be a supreme existence. If those ferocious and brutal Dimensional Creatures went to the Red City and Fragrant Sky City, there was no way the Yan family and Jiang family could defend themselves.

Therefore, not only was he not angry at the Imperial Emperor, he actually felt grateful toward the Imperial Emperor, thankful that he informed him about such important news. Even if this wasn't a mission, Jiang Chen would still rush back to Mount Origin. He didn't want to delay any longer, because his family was there, and he couldn't let anything bad happen to them. No matter how bad the outcome, Jiang Chen just couldn't take it.

“Wait a moment.”

The Imperial Emperor's voice sounded out once more.

“Is there anything else the Imperial Emperor wants to let me know?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“I need to make this clear, for this mission, neither the Martial Saint Dynasty nor the Martial Palace will provide you any help.

You need to complete this mission on your own.”

The Imperial Emperor said. Of course, his words were meant for Wu Jiu. He didn't want Wu Jiu to interfere with this matter.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen replied and left the Martial Saint Dynasty. On the other side, Wu Jiu threw an angry glance at everyone in the palace, then he left and followed after Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen's quick acceptance really made everyone in the palace feel awed, no one had expected Jiang Chen's attitude to change so dramatically.

“Alright, all of you may leave now. If Jiang Chen really succeeds, the resentment between all of you will be cancelled once and for all.”

The Imperial Emperor told the crowd. After that, he slowly stood up from the dragon throne and became faded, and soon after disappeared from the palace.

“I didn't expect him to really take the mission, he is going to get himself killed!”

The Seventh Emperor said with a sneer.

“The Imperial Emperor said that if he really succeeded the mission, the resentment between us will be cancelled once and for all, but, is there really any possibility that he could do it? Hehe!”

The Tenth Emperor added with a complacent expression.

“Only a Combat King warrior can fix a dimensional crack, none of us would be able to do it even if we work together. If Jiang Chen really goes and tries to fix it, I’m sure he will be sucked into the dimensional crack, and die without a burial ground.”

Shangguan Sheng burst into laughter.

“Will that guy take this opportunity to run away?”

Shangguan Ying asked, worried.

“Don’t worry, no one has ever dared disobey the Imperial Emperor’s order, unless he really doesn’t want to live any more. There is no place he can hide in the Eastern Continent!”

The Seventh Emperor said, filled with confidence.

.....

On the other side, when Wu Jiu walked out from the Martial Saint Palace, Jiang Chen had already left the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Why is brother Jiang in such a rush?”

Wu Jiu was puzzled by Jiang Chen's behavior. He increased his speed and caught up to Jiang Chen.

“Brother, why did you agree to take this mission? It is impossible for you to accomplish it. I think you should just go somewhere far away and leave everything to me, I'll protect Little Yu and your friends.”

While flying next to Jiang Chen, Wu Jiu said.

“Thank you for your kindness, brother Jiu. But, I need to get to Mount Origin as soon as possible.”

Jiang Chen said with a serious expression.

“Why? Is it because you're very confident you can complete this mission?”

Wu Jiu was startled by how Jiang Chen was behaving. In his mind, Jiang Chen was a man who always behaved calmly, and he didn't even show any panic when faced with the Imperial Emperor. So why was he so rushed now? This didn't look anything like the normal him at all!

“No, I don't have any confidence at all. But, I need to go back, because Mount Origin is where I came from, my hometown is there, my family is there, I need to go back as I can't bear to lose any of them!”

Jiang Chen said.

“What?!”

Wu Jiu cried out in surprise. Now he finally understood why Jiang Chen was in such a rush. Not many people knew where Jiang Chen came from, and that included Wu Jiu, because Mount Origin was a really remote place. It was located so far away that people just simply ignored. But, who would have thought that a peerless genius like Jiang Chen actually came from such remote land?

Wu Jiu now also understood why Jiang Chen accepted this impossible mission in such a hurry.

“Mount Origin is too far from here, even with your speed, it will take at least a few days before you can get there. Those Dimensional Creatures have already started wreaking havoc on Mount Origin, and it will be too late when you arrive there.”

After Wu Jiu learnt the fact that Jiang Chen originally came from Mount Origin, there was no reason for him to try and stop him any longer. Although he hadn't spent too much time with Jiang Chen, he knew this young man was a man who cherished his friends and family. If something bad happened to them, Jiang Chen might instantly go on a rampage.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows and didn't say anything. He knew what Wu Jiu was trying to tell him, the distance between the Martial Saint Dynasty and Mount Origin was too big. Even with



the Dimensional Shift, it would still take him a few days to arrive, and at that point of time, it would be too late. The entire Mount Origin was going to fall, and every person in the Red City region was going to fall into an abyss of misery. The consequences were beyond his imagination.

What could he do? Jiang Chen's heart was torn with anxiety!

But the only thing he could do was fly back as soon as possible, fly at full speed.

“Brother, I have a dimensional talisman with me. It can't teleport you straight to Mount Origin, but it can send you to the border of the Qi Province.

Wu Jiu said.

Hearing this, Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. As the Ninth Emperor, Wu Jiu was a man with a prestigious status, so it was perfectly normal for him to have a dimensional talisman. Only Combat King warriors could make a dimensional talisman, but making one consumed a lot of energy, therefore, not many Combat King warriors would waste their time making one. This caused dimensional talisman to become extremely valuable. Also, the distance it could teleport someone was limited.

With the dimensional talisman given to him by Wu Jiu, it would be a completely different story. If it could really teleport Jiang Chen to the border of the Qi Province, he would be able to cross Mount Origin in just half an hour and return to the Red City.

“Thank you, brother Jiu!”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Wu Jiu. This matter was very urgent, that’s why he didn’t reject this extremely valuable item.

“Those Dimensional Creatures are really brutal and ferocious. Your brother I can’t follow you there, but you will need some help. Follow me to the Martial Palace, I’ll arrange for someone to help you.”

Wu Jiu said.

# Chapter 371 – The Fall Of The Red City Region

---

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He did need someone to help him with this mission, as the number of dimensional creatures might be too overwhelming. If it was like that, there would be no way for him to kill them all by himself. Furthermore, if those dimensional creatures infiltrated the Red City's region, many innocent lives would be plunged into great misery, and the Fragrant Sky City and Red City would be in great danger. Therefore, he really needed someone to help him kill those dimensional creatures.

In fact, Han Yan and Big Yellow were the best candidates for that. It had also been a long time since Yan Chenyu left her home, and now, she had broken through to the Early Combat Soul realm. She would be able to protect the Yan family if she went back to the Red City.

Soon, Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu returned to the Martial Palace, and landed directly within Yu Zihan's courtyard.

“Chen Gege, you're back!”

When Yan Chenyu saw Jiang Chen, her worried expression instantly disappeared.

“Little Chen, did the Majestic Emperor give you any trouble?”

Han Yan asked.

“I’ll get straight to the point, I have accepted a mission assigned to me by the Majestic Emperor. There is a dimensional crack in Mount Origin, and a huge amount of dimension creatures have rushed out of this crack and are wreaking havoc. I need to rush over there and eliminate all those foul creatures and fix the crack. With every second delay, the innocent lives around the Red City will be in greater danger.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What?!”

Yan Chenyu and Big Yellow immediately cried out, especially Yan Chenyu. Her face turned pale upon hearing the shocking news, and she began imagining the miserable state of the place where she grew up. The Misty Rain Tower in ruins, and her father killed by those ferocious dimensional creatures.

Yan Chenyu dared not think about it any longer. She grabbed Jiang Chen’s arm and said, Chen Gege, hurry up, we have to rush back there as soon as possible!”

“Rest assured, Little Yu, everything will be alright.”

Jiang Chen held Yan Chenyu’s hand gently. He could completely understand how she felt right now, because he wasn’t in a good mood either. Jiang Zhenhai was the only family member he had after reincarnating, the father who would do anything for him. Jiang Chen had never experienced such kinship in his previous

life, that's why he couldn't allow anything bad to happen to Jiang Zhenhai.

Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, Yu Zihan, and a few others were startled. They had no idea why Yan Chenyu suddenly became so agitated.

“Little Chen, for the past hundred years, many dimensional cracks have been found in the Saint Origin Realm, but only Combat King warriors can fix them. Why did you accept this mission? It is impossible to accomplish!”

Han Yan said.

“You know nothing, Mount Origin is where Little Chen and Little Yu's hometown is located. All their family members are living there, that's why they can't let anything bad happen to them.”

Big Yellow glared at Han Yan and said.

Sii!

Everyone gasped when they heard what Big Yellow said. Only now did they understand why Jiang Chen accepted this unreasonable mission from the Majestic Emperor, it was actually related to his family's safety! If that was the case, even if the Majestic Emperor didn't tell him to go there, Jiang Chen would still rush to Mount Origin with no second thoughts to eliminate those dimensional creatures.

After having known Jiang Chen for so long, everyone here knew his true character. He was a man who treated his enemies cruelly and mercilessly, but on the other side, he was a man who cherished his family and friends. He always prioritized them.

“Little Chen’s family is our family, let’s delaying no more! We will go to Mount Origin right now!”

Nangong Wentian strengthened his energy as he spoke. He was a man who was always looking for something to do, and the reason he came to the Eastern Continent was to gather experience and cultivate himself. If he continued staying in the Martial Palace without doing anything, perhaps he would become sick because of boredom.

“Brother, this is a dimensional talisman. Be careful on your trip, try not to get too close to the dimensional crack! You just need to get your family out from there!”

Wu Jiu flipped his palm and retrieved a golden talisman. A clear dimensional force could be sensed coming from it. He told Jiang Chen to only save his family... as for the dimensional, Jiang Chen could only ignore it, as only a Combat King warrior could fix it.

Bang!

Under Wu Jiu’s control, an illusionary gate suddenly appeared.

“Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen pulled Yan Chenyu’s hand and leapt into the gate. After that, Big Yellow and the others followed closely behind and disappeared into the gate as well. The gate only disappeared after everyone entered it.

Wu Jiu stared at the spot where the gate had disappeared. A gloomy expression could be seen on his face, he was feeling really ashamed for not being able to properly protect Jiang Chen today.

.....

Mount Origin!

This was a remote land, and the natural Yuan energy was very thin here. Compared to the powerful provinces in the Eastern Continent, the difference was huge. A mountain range with a long history sat on top of this land, and it cultivated all kinds of demon beasts and wild vegetation.

But right now, the scene was completely different from the usual one.

Boom!

Explosive sounds continuously sounded out in the sky above Mount Origin. Right above in the center of Mount Origin, a gigantic black cloud stretching 5 kilometers in all directions could

be seen. Lightning flashed within, and the thunder continuously rumbled, while the freezing wind was whistling. Inside this black cloud, a crack that weaved into a spider web like formation could be found, and a devastating suction force came from this crack.

Underneath this black cloud, not even a single grass straw could be found, and even the ground had been devoured by this dimensional crack. A huge bottomless hole was underneath it, and dirt was frequently sucked out from this huge hole into the dimensional crack.

Right at this moment, not only was this spot in Mount Origin destroyed, more than half of the land within this gigantic mountain range with a circumference of 5,000 kilometers were in ruins. All the trees were destroyed, and many places were on fire.

Graaa! ...

Terrifying roars continuously resounded throughout the entire Mount Origin mountain range, and they were incredibly terrifying. Numerous creatures nearly 3 meters tall were running around wildly within this mountain range, cruelly slaughtering all the other demon beasts. They fed on the blood of other species in order to increase their strength.

These creatures were the Dimensional Creatures. They lived in a separate dimension, and their bodies were strong and extremely ferocious, no ordinary demon beasts could withstand their attacks. Also, since most of the demon beasts in Mount Origin were weak species, many of them were slaughtered right after these Dimensional Creatures appeared.



The entire Mount Origin had turned into a land of blood. The pungent smell of blood filled the entire sky, and thick smoke rose everywhere as the fire burned everything down. This place was no longer a beautiful mountain range, but a living hell.

Pop!

A Dimensional Creature about 6 meters tall suddenly emerged from the dimensional crack, and fell into a deep hole underneath. After that, it leapt out of the hole, took a deep breath, breathing in the fresh air of this world, then it slammed its own chest with both hands, expressing its excitement.

The total number of Dimensional Creatures were not as many as Jiang Chen had imagined, but of course, there were still a lot. It wasn't easy to travel from one dimension to another and come out from the crack, and many Dimension Creatures were attacked by dimensional turbulence while traveling, and were killed before they could emerge.

Since the appearance of the dimensional crack, nearly one thousand Dimensional Creatures had emerged from the crack. If not for this, Mount Origin wouldn't have fallen in such a short amount of time.

Nearly all living beings were killed in the gigantic mountain range, and the cruel and ferocious Dimensional Creatures didn't stop there. After taking care of Mount Origin, they continued pushing toward the Red City's region.

Right at this moment, all the 28 cities were in deep distress. Following the arrival of the Dimensional Creatures, the people here were faced with the greatest disaster of their entire lives.

Roar...

Arghh...

Arghh...

The Dimensional Creatures' ferocious roars and the humans' miserable shrieks mixed together. House collapsed, flame and smoke rose into the skies. Many cities had already fallen, as none of the warriors were able to defend themselves from the devastating Dimensional Creatures. Some Dimensional Creatures were even devouring the bones of the humans they had killed. It was an extremely ruthless scene.

At the Qi Province's border, a spot within the sky suddenly vibrated. After that, a few figures suddenly appeared out of nowhere. It was Jiang Chen and his friends. After coming here with the dimensional talisman, they wasted no time, and flew straight toward Mount Origin.

The group flew fast as lightning, everyone were flying at top speed. The place they appeared wasn't far from Mount Origin, and with their speed, they would be able to cross the entire mountain range and reach the Red City region in just half an hour.

Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu both had impatient expressions, and their minds had flown to the Red City region already before physically arriving.

Soon, Jiang Chen and his friends entered the Mount Origin mountain range. They could already see the dimensional crack at the center of this mountain range from far away. The group flew through the skies while occasionally looking at the damaged land below them. None of them were able to stay calm when seeing this.

“Damn it, those Dimensional Creatures are really heartless, the entire mountain range is nearly destroyed. All the living beings here have become their food.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but curse.

“Look, Dimensional Creatures are still coming out from the crack. Ah, that's a Divine Core Dimensional Creature!”

Han Yan pointed in the direction underneath the dimensional crack.

Graa!

The Dimensional Creature who had just emerged spotted Jiang Chen and his friends, it immediately sprinted toward them, crazily.

“Die!”

Yu Zihan took the lead and forcefully threw out a punch, hitting the Dimensional Creature’s head. With a miserable shriek, its skull instantly exploded.

More and more Dimensional Creatures had spotted Jiang Chen and his friends. In just a short amount of time, dozens of Dimensional Creatures were storming in their direction.

“Useless fools.”

Jiang Chen said with a cruel expression. He turned toward the dozens Dimensional Creatures and let out a loud shout using the Sonic Hawk Cry. The shout turned into countless deadly razor sharp blades, instantly flooding the Dimensional Creatures.

All the Dimensional Creatures let out miserable shrieks at the same time. After that, they just fell down from the sky, as they had died from the attack. This was Jiang Chen’s true power, killing these Dimensional Creatures was no different from squeezing and killing some ants.

“Chen Gege, Mount Origin has fallen, and I think the Red City region might be in deep trouble now!”

Yan Chenyu worriedly said.

“Big Yellow, Brother Nan, you two stay here and keep an eye on

this dimensional crack, kill every single Dimensional Creature that comes out of it. Brother Yan, Zihan, you two follow me to the Red City region, we need to kill all those foul creatures and save the innocent lives.”

Jiang Chen immediately made the arrangement for this mission. For now, he had no solution to fix the dimensional crack, and he also didn't want to do it now. With Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian here, they should be able to kill all Dimensional Creatures emerging from the crack.

“Alright!”

Nangong Wentian and Big Yellow answered at the same time. After that, they stood guard on the left and right side of the crack. On the other side, Jiang Chen immediately flew toward the Red City's direction together with Yan Chenyu and the others.

# Chapter 372 – Fragrant Sky City’s Critical Situation

---

The entire Mount Origin was in a messy state. Thick smoke billowed into the sky, and the pungent smell of blood was everywhere. Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian stayed back near the dimensional crack to kill all the Dimensional Creatures, while Jiang Chen and the others crossed the mountain range.

From where they stood, they could clearly see what was going on around the Red City’s area. Looking ahead, all 28 cities were covered in thick smoke. Those Dimensional Creatures had clearly been wreaking havoc in every single city.

“Oh Heavens, these Dimensional Creatures are so huge! They are extremely strong, and this land’s natural Yuan energy is too thin, no great warriors can be produced here! The Dimensional Creatures coming here is simply devastating for the people here!”

Looking at the billows of thick smoke, Han Yan couldn’t suppress his emotions.

“Little Yu, go to the Red City, I’ll proceed to the Fragrant Sky City!”

Jiang Chen told Yan Chenyu.

“Alright! Chen Gege, be careful!”

After saying that, Yan Chenyu immediately disappeared from where they stood. She couldn't wait any longer, she was scared that if she delayed a bit longer, the Misty Rain Tower would suffer an unimaginable loss.

“Brother Yan, Zihan, Yiyun, Yishan, you four split up and go to different cities, kill every single Dimensional Creature you encounter, don't leave any behind. Try your best to save as many lives as you can!”

Jiang Chen turned to Han Yan and the other three men. He was reincarnated in this land; this was a place where he had many good and bad memories. Since he had returned, he did not want to see this land destroyed by those Dimensional Creatures, because this was his hometown!

“Got it!”

The four men replied at the same time. After that, they turned into four trails of light and flew in four different directions. They were all Peak Divine Core warriors, and with their extraordinary talent, as long as they didn't bump into any Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures, none of those foul creatures would be a match for them. Each of them would be able to fight alone without any problems, that's the reason why Jiang Chen wanted them to split up.

“Dad, please hold on!”

Jiang Chen gnashed his teeth and thought to himself. After that,

he flew like a shooting star toward the Fragrant Sky City. Along the way, he bumped into many Dimensional Creatures. But, he had no time for them, as he needed to reach the Fragrant Sky City as soon as possible, return to the Jiang Family and protect Jiang Zhenhai.

Fragrant Sky City!

After Jiang Chen eliminated the Murong family, the city was solely ruled by the Jiang family. Also, because the Lee family in Red City had been eliminated by Jiang Chen as well, the reputation of the Fragrant Sky City's Jiang family had been heard by many, and the city had since become the biggest city in this area. However, the current Fragrant Sky City had lost its prosperous look right now, and it turned into a hellish scene.

Arghh! ...

Miserable shrieks could be heard from all over the city. The entire Fragrant Sky City was immersed in darkness and chaos, and more than half of the houses and building had been destroyed, and broken limbs were scattered all over the streets. Those brutal Dimensional Creatures had been running amok in the city, killing everyone they saw. There was a Dimensional Creature over 6 meters tall holding a man's arm while tearing at it with its teeth, causing fresh blood to drip down from its face. It was an incredibly bloody scene capable of causing those who looked at it to feel nauseous.

“Run quickly! We'll be safe in the Mayor's Mansion!”



“There are mighty warriors guarding the Mayor’s Mansion, let’s go there together! These creatures are too brutal!”

“Hurry, hurry up! The mansion’s main gate is still open!”

.....

All the people in the Fragrant Sky City were in an unprecedented panic. Compared to those super provinces in the Eastern Continent, the warriors of the Fragrant Sky City were just the lowest ranked mortals. It was rare to find any Mortal Core warriors here, therefore, none of them had ever experienced a situation such as this before, and no one had ever seen creatures this ferocious before.

Right at this moment, everyone had put their hopes on the Mayor’s Mansion. Ever since young master Jiang Chen had left, the Mayor’s Mansion had become brighter with each day, and Mayor Jiang Zhenhai, like he had been fed with some miraculous pill, his cultivation had broken through again and again, and he was now a Late Heavenly Core warrior, giving him the ability to fight a huge amount of the Dimensional Creatures. More importantly, there was a real demon lord residing in the Mayor’s Mansion right now.

This demon lord was a Black Hawk demon beast that was subdued by young master Jiang Chen, it was an incredibly powerful existence that was even stronger than Mayor Jiang Zhenhai. It was actually taking on a lot of Dimensional Creatures

all alone!

Right now, the Mayor's Mansion was fully packed with people, and everyone were wearing the same panicking expressions. They had gathered together, and were trembling out of fear. All four walls of the Mayor's Mansion had been destroyed by the Dimensional Creatures, and at this moment, all the mighty warriors in the Mayor's Mansion were having difficult battles with those foul creatures.

Argh...

The alchemist Zhou Beichen let out a miserable shriek as one of his arms had just been ripped off by a Dimensional Creature he was fighting. The Mayor's Mansion was suffering heavy losses; all the ordinary guards had been killed by the brutal beasts.

Roar!

The Dimensional Creature that ripped Zhou Beichen's arm off release a ferocious roar. It had smelled blood coming from its target, causing it to continue attack Zhou Beichen even more ferociously.

"Fuck, I'm going to die soon!"

Zhou Beichen howled in grief. He simply closed his eyes and prepared to face death.

Ha!

At this critical moment, a cry resounded. Following that, a cold beam shot out from behind Zhou Beichen, a razor sharp longsword! The longsword simply impaled the Dimensional Creature's head with ease.

A majestic figure appeared in front of Zhou Beichen, it was Jiang Zhenhai! After Jiang Chen gave him the Xuanyuan cultivation skill, his cultivation had improved significantly, and now, he was a Late Divine Core warrior, and the strongest warrior in the Red City region.

“Beichen, are you alright?”

Jiang Zhenhai threw a glance at Zhou Beichen who had lost an arm, his face filled with anger.

“Mayor, I'm fine, but if the situation goes on like this, we're going to be finished sooner or later, these ferocious creatures are too strong, and their numbers just keep growing. Black Hawk has been dragged into a fierce fight with them, we're sooner or later going to be finished!”

Looking at the increasing number of Dimensional Creature storming into the mansion, Zhou Beichen was struck with despair.

In the sky above the Mayor's Mansion, an old man was fighting three Divine Core Dimensional Creatures. This old man was

constantly letting out caws. Sometimes, he would fight in human shape, and sometimes, he would turn into a gigantic hawk. He was the Black Hawk who had surrendered to Jiang Chen.

The Sacred Heavenly Demonic skill Jiang Chen had given the Black Hawk had provided him great help, he was now a Mid Divine Core warrior. This skill was a truly sacred skill for the demon species, and if the Black Hawk could completely master it, there was a high possibility he could become a great demon king in the future.

Boom!

The shockwaves of the battle swept across the scene. Although the Black Hawk was fighting three enemies at once, he was still in an advantageous position. However, since he was entangled in this fighter, he couldn't help the others, and the number of Dimensional Creatures was constantly increasing. Therefore, the current situation wouldn't last for a long time. Once the balance was broken, the entire Mayor's Mansion, or more accurately, the entire Fragrant Sky City, everything would be in ruins.

“Kill!”

Jiang Zhenhai couldn't bother so much about that right now. What he could do was killing every single Dimensional Creature he sees with his combat weapon. All the cities in the Red City region were under attack, not only the Fragrant Sky City. There were no places they could run to, the only thing they could do was kill. Even though he knew he would certainly die, he still wanted to kill more Dimensional Creatures, as to cut down their numbers.

Graa!

More and more ferocious Dimensional Creatures had arrived. There were more than a dozen of them outside the Mayor's Mansion. These mindless beasts had smelled humans, and they were here to fill their stomachs.

Blergh!

Soon, Jiang Zhenhai couldn't hold on any longer. There were too many Dimensional Creatures, and each one was extremely strong; he was simply no match for them. Blood poured out from his mouth, and his Yuan energy was almost depleted as he fell back with a few Jiang family guards surrounding him.

“Mayor, what should we do now?”

Jiang Cheng was only a Mortal Core warrior, and his body was fully covered in blood. But, he wasn't dead yet. Right at this moment, every single member of the Jiang family had gathered together. Looking at the Dimensional Creatures marching toward them, their faces were filled with despair.

“Sigh... Never thought I, Jiang Zhenhai would die in the hands of these monsters. Too bad I can't see Chen'er once more before I die.”

Jiang Zhenhai felt a pain in his heart, he wouldn't be able to die

in peace. He had spent most of his life raising Jiang Chen, and at the most critical moment of his life, Jiang Chen was the only person in his mind.

“I miss young master too.”

Tears were flowing down Jiang Cheng’s face. In this last moment of his life, his mind was filled with all the sweet memories of when he followed his young master around and flattered him. Now, Fragrant Sky City was on the brink of destruction, and his only wish was to see his young master once more.

“If young master was here, I’m sure he would be able to turn the tables.”

Zhou Beichen also had a painful expression on his face. Right at this moment, everyone were thinking about that young man in white who was capable of achieving miracle after miracle, the man who changed the entire power structure of this place.

Jiejie...

A few Dimensional Creatures were staring at Jiang Zhenhai and the other men while evilly laughing. They started walking toward Jiang Zhenhai and the others, step by step. It was if the fear within these humans’ eyes was their biggest joy.

“We’re done for, even the mayor is going to get killed by them! Fragrant Sky City is done for, we’re all doomed!”

“What should we do? I don’t want to die!”

“I just with these wicked monsters can burn in hell!”

The people who same seeking refuge in the Mayor’s Mansion were struck with despair as well, many of them were crying out loud.

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, the Black Hawk let out a loud cry, then he tried his best to withstand an attack from the three Dimensional Creatures as he flew in front of Jiang Zhenhai and swept his powerful wing toward the few approaching Dimensional Creatures, instantly killing them.

“Run!”

The Black Hawk turned to Jiang Zhenhai and shouted. However, Jiang Zhenhai could only respond with a bitter smile. He stood there without moving a bit.

Run? To where? There were no places they could go, they could only wait for these ferocious creatures to kill them.

Boom!

Suddenly, another powerful Dimensional Creature appeared. It had a 9 meter tall body, and it stood straight like a gigantic pillar. With incredible speed, it arrived in front of Black Hawk and threw its gigantic palm toward him.

“Not good!”

This was a Peak Divine Core Dimensional Creature, there was no way Black Hawk could resist its attack. Although he tried countering it with all his strength, the powerful palm still knocked him away.

“Jiejie...”

The Dimensional Creature let out a wicked laughter. Then, it suddenly stretched its arm forward, grabbing toward Jiang Zhenhai.

Finished!

Everyone were feeling depressed, they were completely done for this time, even the Black Hawk was severely injured. They had lost their biggest support, and now, they could only look at death approaching.

Swoosh!

Right at this last moment, a white figure suddenly appeared in front of Jiang Zhenhai in a ghostly manner!



# Chapter 373 – Your Son Has Returned

---

Bang!

Right as the white figure appeared, the mighty Dimensional Creature's head suddenly exploded. After that, its entire massive body exploded into a bloody mist, and it died miserably on the spot.

“How dare you try to hurt my dad?! You're courting death!”

The white figure slowly became vivid, revealing a young man dressed in white clothes in front of everybody. Only now did this group of people wake up from their shock. They threw their glances onto the face of this young man.

“Chen'er!”

“Young master!”

Cries of shock sounded out from everyone on the spot. The sudden appearance of Jiang Chen made them feel as if they were dreaming! Jiang Cheng was rubbing his eyes, as if he was unable to believe what he had just seen.

“Haha, we aren't dead! Young master is back! It is young master who saved our lives!”

Jiang Cheng immediately bounced, he was unable to control his emotions, his excitement! He was so thrilled that his face was covered with tears! Although he was a man, he was currently crying like a baby! But, no one would laugh at him, because he wasn't the only one.

Finally, the group woke up from their despair, and began cheering and dancing around. Jiang Chen had returned; the young genius who always did the seemingly impossible had come back to them!

Taking a look at how strong this young man was, with just a single strike, he had caused a Late Divine Core Dimensional Creature to explode! His mightiness had given all these people ultimate confidence and a peace of mind.

“Haha, young master Jiang Chen has returned, we are saved now!”

“Did you guys see that just now? With just a simple strike, young master Jiang Chen killed the biggest monster! He is a mighty warrior!”

“Praise the Heavens for saving the Fragrant Sky City, giving us such an amazing genius who saved us from deep distress!”

.....

Everyone looked at Jiang Chen with respect and gratefulness.

The arrival of Jiang Chen allowed them to see the rays of hope once again.

“Dad, sorry for coming back late, causing you to suffer.”

Jiang Chen turned to Jiang Zhenhai. He wore a bright smile as he spoke.

“Not late, you’re not late at all!”

Jiang Zhenhai’s voice was trembling. At what he thought was the last moment of his life, he only hoped he could see his son one last time. However, he had never thought that Jiang Chen would truly appear right in front of him, this really caught him by surprise. Jiang Chen’s mighty strength even cause him to feel a strong sense of pride.

“Dad, Uncle Zhou, Old Black, Jiang Cheng, take these pills and consume them. Let me handle these Dimensional Creatures.”

Jiang Chen flipped his palm and retrieved some pills from his storage rings. He found all these pills back on the Island of Ice, and each of them were the best pills for healing injuries, and were worth a fortune. In this Fragrant Sky City, there was no way they could get anything near as good.

“Alright.”

Jiang Zhenhai and the others were all seriously injured, so they

didn't reject Jiang Chen. They immediately took the pills and consumed them.

Roar... roar...

Because of the death of their leader, all the Dimensional Creatures became even more violent. They furiously roared out, while dozens of them leapt at Jiang Chen in hopes of avenging their leader.

“Haha, you're all a bunch of bastards! Die now!”

Jiang Chen laughed out loudly. He sprinted forwards, and with a sway of his body, countless afterimages of himself appeared in the sky. He rammed into the group of Dimensional Creatures while punching each one with his fist that was glowing in a golden light.

Bang, bang, bang...

Each time Jiang Chen struck, a Dimensional Creature would explode into a blood mist and disappear into the thin air. In just a single minute, all the Dimensional Creatures had died, and no survivors had been left behind.

“Hmph!” Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he turned into a trail of light as he shot up into the sky above the Fragrant Sky City. With incredible speed, none of the Dimensional Creatures that were wreaking havoc in the city were spared; they were all killed by Jiang Chen!

Witnessing this amazing scene, everyone in the Mayor's mansion were startled to the point where their mouths were wide open. They looked at the young man who kept flying around and killing all Dimensional Creatures he saw, as if they were witnessing something that could only happen in their dreams.

“Oh Heavens, is still considered a human?”

“What did I just see? Did he kill dozens of those monsters in just one minute? How strong is his cultivation now?”

“What is young master Jiang Chen's cultivation now? Why are those frightening Dimensional Creatures so weak in front of him? They can't even withstand a single strike from him, it's like he's killing some ants! This is incredible!”

“Wow, young master is really formidable, I think he's at least a Divine Core warrior now! Oh Heavens, that realm is so far away from me!”

“No, master is a Peak Divine Core warrior, with one foot in the Combat Soul realm.”

Black Hawk said, shocked.

The entire crowd was shocked. Jiang Chen's performance couldn't be describe with the word formidable any longer. For those who had lived in the Fragrant Sky City for some time, Jiang

Chen's mightiness had gone beyond their common sense, he was simply no longer a mortal.

“Haha...”

Jiang Zhenhai burst into laughter as tears poured down from his face, “Having such a mighty son, what else could I possibly ask for?”

At the same time, in the Red City!

The Red City's situation was no better than the Fragrant Sky City's situation. The entire city was flooded with Dimensional Creatures. Many buildings were ruined, and thick smoke was rising into the sky from all over the city.

The miserable shrieks of the innocent people as well as the ferocious roars of the Dimensional Creatures mixed together, forming a tune that filled the entire city. The place was like a hell on earth, and compared to the Fragrant Sky City, it seemed to be in a worse state.

Just like the Fragrant Sky City, after Jiang Chen eliminated the Lee family, the Misty Rain Tower had become the ultimate ruler of the Red City. Their business was blooming more and more with each passing day, and the Yan family's Family Chief, Yan Zhanyun had broken through his bottleneck half a year ago, becoming a Heavenly Core warrior. Currently, he was a Mid Heavenly Core warrior.

Because of the Yan family and Jiang family's marriage connection, both families were very close to each other, and they were considered the two rulers of this territory, the ultimate emperors of this land without any questions.

But right now, the Misty Rain Tower was in a miserable state.

After the Dimensional Creatures came, parts of the iconic Misty Rain Tower had been destroyed, and it was a blood scene in the Yan family. Many of their guards had been killed by those Dimensional Creatures, becoming their food.

The Yan family was fighting back with everything they had, but there was no way they could defeat their enemies, as they didn't have someone like the Black Hawk who was a Divine Core warrior. Yan Zhanyun and Great Elder Yan Hongtai were both Heavenly Core warriors, but Yan Hongtai was only an Early Heavenly Core warrior. They were no match for these formidable Dimensional Creatures.

Because of these Dimensional Creatures, the Misty Rain Tower had suffered a devastating disaster, and many of the Yan family member had died.

Right now, the ones from the Yan family who were still alive were gathered in the square. They looked around, seeing the badly trampled bodies of their family members, and the Dimensional Creatures surrounding them. Their faces were filled with both sorrow and despair.

The Dimensional Creatures had completely surrounded them, but they hadn't jumped in and started feasting. Their eyes were filled with ridicule, and they wanted to let these humans experience ultimate despair before killing them, as that would give them great joy.

"We're done for, the Yan family is completely done for this time; these cruel monsters will be the end of us!"

Great Elder Yan Hongtai's eyes turned red. One of his arms was gone, and his body was covered with countless wounds. He was an arrow at the end of its flight. With his current condition, if he didn't receive healing as soon as possible, he would die regardless of the Dimensional Creatures.

On the other side, Yan Zhanyun's condition was no better than his. He was breathing heavily as blood poured out from the wounds on his body.

The ones from the younger generation were also struck with despair, some of them were slowly dying. Yan Meng was an old man, and he simply couldn't defend himself from any of those Dimensional Creatures. He was now lying on the ground, barely breathing.

"I am going to die soon, it's a pity I am unable to see young miss one last time."

A bitter smile emerged onto Yan Meng's face. Yan Chenyu was everyone's most precious person, and ever since she left, it had



always felt like something was missing in the Yan family.

At last moment of his life, Yan Meng recalled the memories when he met Jiang Chen, and how Jiang Chen healed his young miss and solved her problems regarding the Nine Yin Meridians. Because of this young man, the entire power structure in the Red City had been changed, and a new order was constructed.

“The Yan family is done for!”

Yan Hongtai roared loudly once again. It was a very heart wrenching moment.

“No, the Yan family isn’t completely done for, we still have Yu’er!”

Yan Zhanyun smiled. Whenever he thought of Yan Chenyu, he would always smile, even if he was facing his own death.

“Sons of bitches, come!”

Yan Zhanyun suddenly shouted at the Dimensional Creatures. At this point of time, life or death was meaningless to him, he was going to die regardless of what happened. So, why not die a hero?

Graa!

This provocation caused those Dimensional Creatures to

ferociously roar out once more, then they started pressing toward the Yan family members.

Bam... bam... bam...

The ground shook whenever these Dimensional Creatures took a step forward. Everyone's hope had hit rock bottom, none of them had any hope whatsoever for tomorrow. Yan Hongtai even close his eyes, waiting for death to come.

Huala...

Suddenly, as if the air above the Yan family had frozen, an extremely ice-cold breeze appeared without any prior warnings. After that, bright white beams appeared and hit the Dimensional Creatures.

Crack... Crack...

In an instant, those cruel and violent Dimensional Creatures became ice statues; a thick layer of ice covered their bodies.

Crack...

After that, the solid ice statues broke, and the Dimensional Creatures bodies' turned into broken pieces. Their blood and flesh completely frozen, none of them survived.

Struck by this sudden change, the Yan family member who had given up all hope opened their eyes widely. They stared at the frozen, dead Dimensional Creatures, and began breathing heavily.

“Daddy!”

Right at this moment, a joyful sound came into their ears. A young girl wearing pure white clothes landed right in front of them, just like a fairy. She was none other than Yan Chenyu!

“Yu-, Yu’er!”

Yan Zhanyun’s body trembled, and he almost couldn’t believe his eyes. This person who appeared in front of him was his daughter!

“Little Yu, is that really you?!”

Yan Hongtai was trembling with excitement, he almost couldn’t believe what he was seeing. He thought the Yan family was done for, but unexpectedly, the young miss who had left them suddenly returned, and not only that, she killed all those Dimensional Creatures with such a mighty attack!

Shock and surprise, those two emotions mixed together, and no one from the Yan family were able to control their emotions.

## Chapter 374 – A Dog’s Mouth Emits No Ivory

---

Right now, everyone threw their glances at this fairy in white who had appeared out of nowhere. The sudden change from ultimate despair into hope, the dramatic fluctuations in their emotions, from great grief to great joy, those feelings caused these people to feel as if they were dreaming, as if life had just played a big joke of them.

Yan Chenyu, the young miss who had affected the hearts of everyone in the Yan family, they all knew what she had gone through in her early life, what kinds of painful experiences she had. But judging from how she looked now, that sick girl had completely grown up, and the aura unintentionally unleashed from her was capable of sending shivers down any of their spines. Those undefeatable Dimensional Creatures had just been killed by this young miss, and in such an easy way!

“Yu’er, you are... you are back?”

Yan Zhanyun who had already prepared to face his death couldn’t control his emotions at all. Ever since his precious daughter had left him, he had lived his days in worry. At the last moment before his death just now, the only thought in his mind was his daughter. He thought not being able to see his daughter before his death would be his biggest regret, and how much pain she would be in when she returned in the future, only to find out her father was dead.

Yan Zhanyun never expected the daughter he missed so much would appear at this critical moment, and save the entire Yan

family, changing the Red City's destiny!

“Daddy, Great Elder, all of you are badly wounded, quickly take some pills and heal yourself, let me kill all those Dimensional Creatures in the city, we will go and meet Chen Gege later, he has the best medicine for healing, they can make you recover in no time!”

Yan Chenyu said in a worried tone upon seeing how badly wounded Yan Zhanyun and the others were.

“Jiang Chen has returned as well?”

Yan Zhanyun's eyes lit up, he could never forget about the young man who brought a new order to this area!

“Yes, Chen Gege went to the Fragrant Sky City.”

After saying that, Yan Chenyu immediately flew back into the sky. She had so many things she wanted to tell her father, but now was not the right time to do so. Those Dimensional Creatures were wreaking havoc in the Red City right now, and if she delayed even a second, more innocent lives would be lost.

Yan Chenyu hovered above the Red City. She was wearing pure white clothes, and her body shone with pure and cold bright lights, causing her to look like a real fairy from the Realm of Immortals!

She threw her glance down, capturing the entire Red City with

her eyes. She could clearly see every single Dimensional Creature.

“Hmph! You violent creatures, how dare you slaughter innocent humans?! You all deserve a thousand deaths!”

Yan Chenyu coldly harrumphed. She slightly moved her body, causing beams of bright light to shoot out from it. The beams were extremely cold, so cold that the air around them started fogging up.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

These ice-cold beams were too fast! Furthermore, it was as if each of them had a target! Every single Dimensional Creature were hit by a beam!

Slash...

Roar...

Miserable shrieks resounded throughout the entire city. When those Dimensional Creatures with gigantic bodies were hit by a freezing beam, their bodies instantly shattered into pieces, as if they were made from ice.

In just three breaths time, peace returned to the entire Red City; all Dimensional Creatures had been killed, absolutely none remained! When those panicked people saw what happened, they were startled for a moment, then they were struck by an

uncontrollable joy.

“All the monsters are dead! Look! That’s the fairy who saved our lives!”

“What a beautiful fairy! But, why do I find her so familiar? Oh! She is Yan Chenyu! The Yan family’s young miss! She has returned, she is the one who saved us!”

“It really is young miss! She saved our lives! Let’s kneel down and show her our gratefulness!”

.....

In just a short moment, many people in the city recognized Yan Chenyu. They immediately kneeled down and bowed at her. Now, Yan Chenyu was no longer the sick young girl they knew, she had become a real fairy in their eyes! Since they had no way to repay her kindness of saving their lives, they could only kneel down in front of her like she was a Deity. Or perhaps, in the minds of these people, Yan Chenyu was already a Deity sent by the Heavens to save them!

Within the Yan family’s mansion, all the Yan family members looked at Yan Chenyu, their eyes filled with admiration.

“Chief, do you know what Little Yu’s cultivation is right now?”

Yan Hongtai walked up to Yan Zhanyun and asked.

“I’m unable to tell even with my eyes, but even those Divine Core creatures were no match for her, it isn’t difficult to imagine how strong Little Yu is right now.”

A bright smile blossomed onto Yan Zhanyun’s face. He was feeling very proud to have such a good daughter!

“I never dreamt that the Yan family would have such a peerless genius! It must be because our ancestors have done a lot of good deeds!”

Yan Hongtai’s face was covered in tears. He really felt as if green smoke had exploded out from the Yan family’s ancestral tomb, only that could explain why the Yan family had such an amazing genius.

Looking at the Red City where many places had been destroyed, Yan Chenyu couldn’t suppress her anger. She flew in front of Yan Zhanyun and said, “Daddy, I’ve killed all the Dimensional Creatures in Red City, now I need to go and save the other cities.”

“Alright, Yu’er, be careful!”

Yan Zhanyun hastily nodded his head. The arrival of these monsters was a devastating disaster for the Red City region. Judging from the current state of the Fragrant Sky City and Red City, the other cities might be even worse off. There were a total of 28 cities in this territory, and all cities were under attack. If Yan Chenyu could help the rest of them, many innocent lives would be



saved.

Yan Chenyu waved her white sleeves and disappeared from the Red City. She flew toward one of the nearest cities with incredible speed.

All the Dimensional Creatures in Red City had been killed, and Yan Chenyu had no worries about any new threats now because Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian were guarding at the dimensional crack. For now, no Dimensional Creatures would leave that place, and without any incoming monsters, the Red City's safety was ensured. Also because all the Dimensional Creatures that were still alive were currently attacking the other cities.

When Yan Chenyu left the Red City, Jiang Chen had also left the Fragrant Sky City, and was rushing toward the other cities.

Besides them, Han Yan, Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan had split up and killed all Dimensional Creatures along their way, and they had arrived in different cities now.

Rumble...!

The void was undulating, and the pungent smell of blood was everywhere. Half of a city right in front had been destroyed, and the violently Dimensional Creatures were running amok within. At this moment, a young man filled with devilish energy dressed in blue clothes appeared.

“Fuck you, daddy wants to kill you all!”

This young man in blue was none other than Han Yan! When he saw the miserable states of those innocent humans, he was instantly enraged. He cursed out loudly, then he immediately unleashed waves of devilish energy which swept across half of the city.

Graa!

Some Divine Core Dimensional Creatures ferociously roared out, then they leapt into the sky toward Han Yan. However, none of them were a match for him, and were ripped into pieces on the spot.

In just ten minutes, Han Yan killed all the Dimensional Creatures in the city. Before the panicked people could express their gratitude, Han Yan had already flown away like the wind, rushing toward the next city.

“We’re saved! All the monsters are dead!”

“It’s that young man who killed them all, but we don’t know him at all.”

“Praise the Heavens! Thank you for saving us!”

In that moment, everyone in the city kneeled down and started bowing.

On the other side, the city Yu Zihan had gone to was in a similar situation. There were many Dimensional Creatures wreaking havoc, but luckily, no Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures were to be seen. According to the Imperial Emperor, Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures had been spotted, but since none were found in any cities, it should still be hiding in the dimensional crack.

“You have intruded our territory and killed our kind, that’s an unforgivable sin!”

Yu Zihan roared out loudly. He swung his sword, unleashing several rainbow-like waves. No Dimensional Creature could withstand a single blow from him, so they were all killed on the spot.

Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan were facing similar situations. When they saw what those violent Dimensional Creatures had done to those innocent people, they couldn’t restrain their anger, and started killing without showing any mercy.

Furthermore, with Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu’s help, the group was a formidable force that could eliminate every single Dimensional Creature in this area. It wouldn’t take long before peace returned to this land. But, they still had to rush, because with every single second lost, the chance of another innocent person dying would increase.

Bang, bang, bang...

Explosive ‘bang’ sounds kept resounding within this land. Shockwaves from the battles taking place in the different parts spread out in all directions, and the air was filled with the pungent smell of blood. Jiang Chen and his friends were restlessly cleansing the land like the fiercest tiger, and wherever they went, all the Dimensional Creatures would be ripped into pieces, and turn to ash.

At the same time, on Mount Origin!

The huge dimensional crack was still producing loud noises. Lightning accompanied by the peals of thunder continuously sounded out. Thick smoke covered the place, while the dimensional crack’s powerful suction force devoured every single object underneath. Dimensional Creatures’ roars could occasionally be heard from the crack, and some ferocious monsters would emerged from it.

Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian stood guard on both side of the dimensional crack. They had to be extra careful and stay far away from the crack, because if they got too close and were sucked into the dimensional crack, the consequences would be devastating.

Bam!

A Late Divine Core Dimensional Creature just dropped out from the dimensional crack, but before it could do anything, Big Yellow rammed into it with his head, killing it on the spot.

Following the continuous appearance of Dimensional Creatures, Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian discovered a frightening fact. As time went by, the Dimensional Creatures that emerged from the crack became stronger and stronger.

“Big Yellow, something isn’t right, those Dimensional Creatures are getting stronger.”

Nangong Wentian said with a frown on his face.

“Damn it, if this trend continues, perhaps a huge amount of Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures will come out!”

Big Yellow couldn’t help but curse. However, right after his words left his mouth, a loud ‘boom’ was heard from the dimensional crack. After that, a huge Dimensional Creature dropped out from it, and of course... it was a Combat Soul monster!

“Watch your bad mouth! You see, what you said has come true!”

Nangong Wentian rolled his eyes and gave Big Yellow a glare. A dog’s mouth emits no ivory, what he said just came true.

[TL: A dog’s mouth emits no ivory; no good words are to be expected from a scoundrel.]

# Chapter 375 – Skymend Formation

---

Graa!

Although the Dimensional Creature was only an Early Combat Soul monster, it was still stronger than the Divine Core Dimensional Creatures.

When the Combat Soul Dimensional Creature arrived, it immediately spotted Big Yellow. Without any hesitation, it started rushing toward Big Yellow.

“Fuck you!”

Big Yellow showed no signs of being afraid, he simply sprinted toward the Dimensional Creature. He possessed the Dragon Horse bloodline, and no ordinary demon beasts could compare with him. Even though he was only at the Peak Divine Core realm, it was more than enough to fight any Early Combat Soul existence.

Bam!

His gigantic head collided with the Dimensional Creature’s palm, instantly producing a metal clanging sound, and a large amount of sparks.

No matter what, a Combat Soul Dimensional Creature was really strong. Big Yellow was knocked about 30 meters away by its palm attack. However, the Combat Soul beast was truly shocked by Big

Yellow, as it knew how much force its attack contained. In its mind, this dog should have exploded from the attack, but the dog was actually not injured at all! How can a dog's head be so powerful?

Graa!

The Dimensional Creature furiously roared, then it leapt toward Big Yellow once again. Faced with such a situation, there was no way Nangong Wentian could stand aside and relax. He immediately drew his huge ruler and joined the battle.

Bam... bam... bam...

The atmosphere surrounding them was burning because of the intense battle, and the already unstable dimensional barrier around Mount Origin had become even more fragile. A man and a dog were working together to fight this Combat Soul Dimensional Creature, and it was difficult battle. However, with Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian's near perfect teamwork, the Dimensional Creature was at a disadvantage.

Graa!

The Dimensional creature slammed its own chest with both hands while furiously roaring. It used its gigantic body to fight in all directions, attempting to rip this man and dog into a thousand pieces.

“Big Yellow, let’s kill this monster!”

Nangong Wentian shouted out, then his entire body was instantly covered in azure starlight. His and Big Yellow’s teamwork had become flawless, and with their perfect teamwork, they once again knocked the Dimensional Creature back, causing it to furiously roar out once more.

Boom!

However, before Nangong Wentian and Big Yellow could celebrate their victory, another ‘boom’ sounded out from the dimensional crack. It was the sound of another Combat Soul Dimensional Creature dropping out from the crack.

“Another Early Combat Soul Dimensional Creature!”

Big Yellow widened his eyes.

“This is bad, it looks like all the Dimensional Creatures coming now are Combat Soul beasts, and I think more of them are coming. Perhaps mid or late stage Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures will come soon, and with our strength, there is no way we can fight them.”

Nangong Wentian worriedly said.

“We need to seal this dimensional crack as soon as possible.”



Big Yellow furrowed his brows.

“It’s difficult to seal unless a Combat Warrior comes here personally.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“We can’t stop these Dimensional Creatures any longer. Let’s go find Little Chen, those two big guys will definitely chase after us, so we’ll just let Little Chen deal with them when we find him. Once we’ve killed all Dimensional Creatures in the Red City region, we need to come up with a way to seal the crack.

After saying that, Big Yellow immediately turned into a golden trail of light and flew toward the Red City region. Nangong Wentian didn’t hesitate, and immediately followed after Big Yellow.

Both of them could deal with a powerful Early Combat Soul Dimensional Creature together, and they could even fight two. However, the situation seemed to be getting worse and worse as time passed by, more and more Dimensional Creatures would arrived, and they couldn’t just fight many at once.

Graa!

The two Dimensional Creatures became furious upon seeing the duo run away from them. Without any hesitation, they

immediately chased after them while unleashing devastating energy from their bodies, killing all lives beings around where they passed.

At this point of time, in the once chaotic Red City region, peace had returned to most of the cities. Jiang Chen and his friends were too strong, they simply killed every single Dimensional Creature they found. Most of them had been eliminated, and all that remained were those in the last three cities. Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan were rushing toward those three cities, while Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu, as well as Han Yan were rushing back toward Mount Origin.

“It’s Big Yellow and Brother Nan, there are two strong Dimensional Creatures chasing after them.”

Han Yan saw Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian coming toward them from the far distance.

“There really are Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures. It looks like Big Yellow and Brother Nan can’t hold them any longer.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He had a bad feeling about this. They had arrived not long ago, and there were already Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures appeared. No one had any idea which space this dimensional crack led to, or how many Dimensional Creatures were in that space, and no one could tell how strong the strongest monster in that space was.

“Little Chen, hurry up and kill those monster!”

Nangong Wentian immediately shouted upon seeing Jiang Chen.

“Let me do it.”

Yan Chenyu flew forward at an incredible speed, passing Big Yellow and Nangong Wentian in the blink of an eye, and arrived in front of the two Dimensional Creatures.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Yan Chenyu waved her hand, unleashing two ice-cold beams. They beams were like two extremely sharp ice blades, and in an instant, they arrived in front of the two Dimensional Creatures.

Puchi! Puchi!

Yan Chenyu was an extremely powerful Early Combat Soul warrior, she was completely bringing out the Nine Yin Meridians' strength. With just two ice-cold beams, she impaled the two Early Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures, freezing them into solid ice cubes.

“The Nine Yin Meridians are truly abnormal.”

Nangong Wentian's mouth twitched upon seeing what happened. The Nine Yin Meridians in the Combat Soul realm was simply extremely formidable. Although he was a man with outstanding

talent and was able to fight Combat Soul warriors while only a Divine Core warrior, he was after all just a Divine Core warrior, and not yet a Combat Soul warrior. Therefore, the gap between him and Yan Chenyu was not small.

“Little Chen, how is it going with the Dimensional Creatures in the Red City region?”

Big Yellow asked.

“All are dead except for those in the last three smaller cities. Zihan and the others are on their way to handle it, and we’re here to help you in Mount Origin.”

Jiang Chen replied. Their number one priority was to kill all the Dimensional Creatures in the Red City region and save their families, but the source of these foul creatures was at Mount Origin, and if they didn’t seal the dimensional crack in time, more Dimensional Creatures would come. Not only that, the strength of those ferocious creatures would only increase with each batch.

“The dimensional crack has started dropping out Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures, the two of us just can’t stop them anymore.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Come, let’s go there together.”

Jiang Chen led the group toward the dimensional crack above Mount Origin.

Soon, the group returned to the place where the dimensional crack was found. Just as they arrived, two strong Dimensional Creatures dropped out from the crack at the same time.

These two Dimensional Creatures were even stronger than the others, and one of them had even reached the Mid Combat Soul realm. When they saw Jiang Chen and his group, they immediately pounced toward them.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he drew out the Heavenly Saint Sword. With two swings, he instantly killed both Dimensional Creatures.

What made Jiang Chen feel somewhat gloomy was that there were no demon souls in these Dimensional Creatures'. If there were, he would be able to accumulate some wealth for himself.

“We need to find a way to seal this dimensional crack. If not, even stronger Dimensional Creatures will emerge.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“But, without a Combat King warrior, it is impossible to seal this dimensional crack.”

Han Yan said.

“We can use another method, a formation.”

Jiang Chen said.

“A formation?”

Nangong Wentian and Han Yan were startled at the same time. Using a formation to seal the dimensional crack, they had never heard of this method before. But, would it really work?

“That’s right. What we can do now is use a formation to seal this dimensional crack, preventing those Dimensional Creatures from coming out.”

Jiang Chen continued and said, “I know an ancient formation called the Skymend Formation. It utilizes the Yin and Yang principles. Everything around us contains Yin and Yang principles, and if we can creature this formation, we will be able to temporarily seal this dimensional crack, and that should be good enough to finish this mission. At that point of time, I believe the Imperial Emperor won’t leave this behind, he will fix the dimensional crack himself.”

“I know about this Skymend Formation from the Heavenly Book of Source Formations. But, constructing this formation is extremely complicated. We also need to merge the Yin and Yang

energy together.”

Big Yellow said. He had mastered the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, that’s why he knew about pretty much every single formation that exists under the Heavens, including the Skymend Formation that Jiang Chen just mentioned.

“Little Yu has the innate Nine Yin Meridians, a true Nine Yin Physique, so she will be able to provide the Yin energy. I am cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill and the Nine Solar Energies skill, so my Yuan energy is of the purest Yang characteristic. Furthermore, I can use the Nine Solar Energies skill to gathered Six Solar Energy. That together with my Yuan energy is more than enough to supply the formation with Yang energy. With this, we have enough Yin and Yang energy to construct the Skymend Formation. Let’s delay no more and start working now. Big Yellow, since you’ve mastered the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, I’ll need your help later.

Jiang Chen said. It was no doubt very difficult to construct the Skymend Formation with his current cultivation, but with Big Yellow’s help, it would be a completely different story. This dog was an amazing existence, and he was an expert in many aspects, and his talent in formations could be considered unprecedented. Jiang Chen could still remember that when they were trapped in the Poisonous Miasma Space, this dog was able to produce the Spiraling Defense Mechanism, an ancient formation that almost no one knew how to make.

“Alright, you and I will work together and construct this Skymend Formation!”

Big Yellow's eyes lit up. He was very interested in this. His character was actually quite similar to Jiang Chen's, he liked things that were challenging.

“Little Yu, when you hear my command later on, unleash your Nine Yin Energy.”

Jiang Chen turned to Yan Chenyu and said.

“Understood, Chen Gege!”

Yan Chenyu nodded her head. She dared not cause any problems at this critical moment.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow turned into two trails of light and appeared on both sides of the dimensional crack. With a solemn expression, Jiang Chen circulated the Great Soul Derivation skill to its full strength, and he continuously drew something in the thin air in front of him, creating numerous symbols that no one could understand. In fact, those were all defense mechanisms.

Soon after, a giant illusionary web completely formed from defense mechanisms appeared in front of Jiang Chen. On the other side, Big Yellow had done the same time. He kept drawing in the air with incredible speed, constructing a gigantic web fully formed from defense mechanisms.



Han Yan and Nangong Wentian exchanged glances, both of them wore the same helpless smiles on their face. They knew how amazing Jiang Chen was, and it was hard to imagine what exactly this young 17 year old man had gone through in his early life, and why it seemed like he was an expert at everything he seemed to do. Now, he could even construct this incredible Skymend Formation which could seal the dimensional crack. They wouldn't have believed anything like this to be possible unless they witnessed it themselves.

# Chapter 376 – The Ice Demon King Strikes

---

They could do nothing other than feel shocked. However, after having been with Jiang Chen for so long, Han Yan and the others were already somewhat used to it. No matter what amazing or unbelievable things Jiang Chen did, the group was still somewhat mentally prepared.

In this world, there were things or people that just couldn't be judged using normal logic. For example, Jiang Chen's existence. He wasn't even 17 years old, but his soul was still more than thousand years old. No one were able to compare with his experience.

There were no doubts that about how difficult it was to construct a super formation like the Skymend Formation. At least, it was really difficult for the current Jiang Chen. Even with Big Yellow's help, it would still take them a long time to complete.

Furthermore, until the formation was finished, powerful Dimensional Creatures would still drop out of the dimensional crack, causing the difficult to increase significantly.

Graa!

Right at this moment, ferocious roars could be heard from the crack. The roars came from three powerful Dimensional Creatures. More and more Dimensional Creatures would start coming in batches as the dimensional crack got older.

Out of these three newly arrived Dimensional Creatures, two of them were only Late Divine Core beasts, while the other one was an Early Combat Soul beast.

“Little Yu!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. His and Big Yellow’s focus was all on constructing the Skymend Formation, and they couldn’t spare a hand to kill these Dimensional Creatures. Therefore, they could only depend on Yan Chenyu to kill this Combat Soul Dimensional Creature.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh!

Without needing Jiang Chen’s words, right after those three Dimensional Creatures appeared, Yan Chenyu had already struck. She unleash three bright ice-cold beams fast as lightning which impaled all three creatures, killing them.

Buzz...

The void surrounding them was vibrating, and the dimensional crack’s black suction force had become even stronger than before, and it was producing razor sharp tornadoes that blew onto Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. In fact, besides the two of them, no ordinary men would dare get so close to the dimensional crack, because just this terrifying tornadoes alone were enough to cause serious injuries. Not to mention the risk of getting sucked into the crack.

However, since Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's bodies were powerful, the tornadoes, although very terrifying, were unable to harm them.

As the once greatest Saint underneath the Heavens, he was an expert at everything. As for Big Yellow, he had mastered the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, and his knowledge regarding all formations was very deep. That combined with their perfect teamwork developed over a long time, they could work together in a flawless manner.

The duo were working incredibly fast, and they created complicated and mystical defense mechanisms one after the other. Han Yan and Nangong Wentian could barely recognize any of them. Following the increase of these defense mechanisms, the gigantic net entirely formed from defense mechanisms was becoming larger and larger.

But this was a slow process. During this period of time, strong Dimensional Creatures would occasionally drop out from the dimensional crack. However, all of them were killed by Yan Chenyu.

In the blink of an eye, three hours passed by, and the gigantic formation was completed.

“Big Yellow, take this!”

Jiang Chen shouted, then he threw the gigantic net in his hand forwards. At the same time, Big Yellow also threw the gigantic net

in his hand. Both gigantic nets immediately merged together upon meeting, and the Skymend Formation was now weaving itself together.

Graa!

It seemed like the Dimensional Creatures inside the crack were feeling the Skymend Formation's pressure, and they started becoming even more restless. At his moment, two bright lights shone from the crack, then two 30 meter tall Dimensional Creatures emerged.

When these two Dimension Creatures arrived, they immediately pounded their chests with both hands, then they split up and leapt toward Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Not good!”

Nangong Wentian exclaimed. These were two Mid Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures, and amongst all the people here, Jiang Chen couldn't spare his hand to kill them, and only Yan Chenyu had the ability to fight a Mid Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures. Nangong Wentian and Han Yan could at most only fight an Early Combat Soul existence, and there was no way they could be a match for a Mid Combat Soul Dimensional Creature.

“Chen Gege, what should we do?!”

Yan Chenyu was terrified and panicked, because these Mid

Combat Soul creatures had split up and were dashing toward both sides, and she could only fight one of them.

“Go help Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent manner. No signs of panicking could be seen on his face.

“Alright!”

Yan Chenyu answered. She moved her body and appeared in front of Big Yellow, then she instantly unleashed a layer of ice-cold energy toward the ferocious Dimensional Creature. On the other side, the other Mid Combat Soul creature had approached Jiang Chen. With the ruthless look on its face, it seemed like it was going to rip Jiang Chen apart.

Right now, Jiang Chen was focusing all his energy on the Skymend Formation. Once he spared his hand to fight this Dimensional Creature, all the effort up until now would go to waste.

Of course, there was no way Jiang Chen could do it now. However, he had a solution to the problem.

“Ice Demon, it’s now your turn to strike!”

Jiang Chen shouted out. After that, a white beam shot out from his storage ring. Ever since the Ice Demon King submitted to Jiang

Chen, he had always considered it his secret weapon, and had never revealed it. But now, as he was at a critical moment, he was forced to use it.

Graah!

The Ice Demon King was also 30 meters tall, and because its body was 100% solid ice, it looked like a small icy hill. When it came out, it was even more ferocious than the Dimensional Creature, and it instantly delivered a powerful punch to the Dimensional Creature's head, causing it to explode and die on the spot.

Aowuu!

The Ice Demon King howled into the sky. It was extremely satisfied after killing the Dimensional Creature. For a ferocious existence like it, staying inside the storage ring for such a long time made it feel really bored. Now, since Jiang Chen had let it out, it was like a Flood Dragon having been released back into the vast ocean, or a wild tiger back into the woods. It instantly ripped apart the Dimensional Creature and tasted the pungent smell of blood. It was a very pleasant feeling for it.

However, killing just one Dimensional Creature wasn't enough for it. The Ice Demon King dashed to the other side in a split second, and with a powerful punch, it instantly killed the Dimensional Creature Yan Chenyu was fighting. In its mind, Yan Chenyu was the true inheritor of the Ice God, its real master, and it would never allow anything to bully the Ice God's inheritor!

“Damn it!”

Big Yellow staggered and nearly fell down from the sky. He widened his big eyes and stared at the Ice Demon that had a face much more terrifying than that of the Dimensional Creatures.

Not only Big Yellow, even Han Yan and Nangong Wentian stared at it with their mouths wide open and a stunned expression. Jiang Chen had actually never told anyone about the Ice Demon King except for Yan Chenyu, so none other than those two knew about its existence, that’s why they were so shocked.

“Damn it, when did Little Chen tame that terrifying big monster? Judging from its energy just now, I think it’s at least a Late Combat Soul existence!”

Nangong Wentian said, shocked.

“Extremely fierce, a Mid Combat Soul creature’s head exploded with just a single punch! I never knew Little Chen had such a powerful secret weapon, it really amazes me! With the help of this formidable existence, I don’t think we have to fear the Shangguan Clan or the Myriad Sword Sect anymore!”

Han Yan said with a sigh.

“I think Little Chen tamed the monster on the Island of Ice. He’s too talented, he actually has the ability to make that extremely formidable monster surrender. I really wonder, how did he do



that?”

Nangong Wentian shook his head. He was completely speechless when it came to Jiang Chen’s talent.

“With that monster’s help, no matter how many Dimensional Creatures appear, they will all be killed. Now, Little Chen and Big Yellow has plenty of time to construct the Skymend Formation.”

After saying that, the worried expression on Han Yan’s face disappeared.

Rrrrrumble...

The rumbling sounds coming from the dimensional crack didn’t seem to stop. Sensing the existence of the Skymend Formation, those Dimensional Creatures hiding inside became even more restless, and they were trying even harder to dash out from the crack. This actually increased the difficulty of making the formation.

Luckily, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were both experts at formations, and they continued building the Skymend Formation in a proper order. Soon, a gigantic illusionary net was nearly completed.

During this process, more and more Dimensional Creatures rushed out from the dimensional crack, and each batch was stronger than the previous one. There were a few Mid Combat Soul

creatures, but when faced with the invincible Ice Demon King, these Dimensional Creatures were no match at all.

The Ice Demon King simply stood outside the dimensional crack. Whenever a new Dimensional Creature came out, it would just deliver it a punch. Although it was just a simple punch, it was more than enough to instantly cause those foul monsters to explode.

One hour later, the Skymend Formation was finally completed. Jiang Chen let out a loud shout, then he covered the dimensional crack with the formation. The next second, the black suction force began slowly disappearing, and the once restless dimensional crack instantly quieted down. Finally, the sky above Mount Origin returned to its original bright and blue color.

“We made it!”

Nangong Wentian widened his eyes, throwing his glance onto the spot where the dimensional crack was found. But, he couldn't find any signs of the Skymend Formation, as if there was nothing there.

Huu...

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow breathed out long sighs of relief at the same time. The man and dog's faces were covered in sweat, and it wasn't difficult to imagine how much energy they used to build this Skymend Formation.

“Incredible! They really sealed the dimensional crack!”

Han Yan praised.

“Two Divine Core guys has sealed the dimensional crack with a formation. Damn it, is there anything more awesome than this?”

Nangong Wentian couldn't help but say. This was such an amazing situation, and it would certainly bring a huge storm to the world if known! Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's reputation would definitely reach new heights after this.

Bam! Bam!

Suddenly, some subtle slamming sounds could be heard from the sky, and the Skymend Formation started violently shaking. In the blink of an eye, cracks started forming on the formation, and black smoke started rising out again.

“This is bad, there are some powerful Dimensional Creatures attacking the Skymend Formation. I think it's at least some Late Combat Soul creatures. If they keep doing it, the Skymend Formation won't last for too long!”

Big Yellow's expression changed dramatically.

“Our strength is limited, which is why the Skymend Formation's strength is limited as well. Those Dimensional Creatures don't want to be trapped in there, that's why they're attacking it.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“Chen Gege, what should we do now? If the Skymend Formation is broken, even stronger Dimensional Creatures will come out. Although we have the Ice Demon King, we have no idea how many Dimensional Creatures there are. We must do something!”

Yan Chenyu worriedly said.

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's expressions turned gloomy once again. It looked like fixing this dimensional crack was indeed a difficult mission.

# Chapter 377 – Reinforcing The Formation With Laws

---

Boom! Boom!

The explosive sounds coming from the other side of the dimensional crack had become even more intense. At the same time, the faint roaring of those furious Dimensional Creatures had become clearer, and more cracks had formed on the Skymend Formation

Everyone's expressions were ugly. If the situation went on like this, it wouldn't be long before the Skymend Formation was completely destroyed, and at that point of time, Dimensional Creatures even stronger than those before would come into their world, and with that large group of Dimensional Creatures, even the Ice Demon King wouldn't be able to kill them all. The possible scenario they had to face was devastating.

“Damn it! It looks like all our effort is going to go to waste!”

Big Yellow gloomily said. Faced with such a situation, even with his mastery of the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, he just had no other solutions. They were simply just too weak, and it was very difficult for them to make the Skymend Formation operate at full strength. The one they made just now cost them all effort, and if it failed, there really wasn't much else they could do.

Everyone were panicking, only Jiang Chen could still maintain his calm expression. This caused Big Yellow to feel much

admiration for him. No matter what kind of situation he was facing, it seemed like nothing could make this young man panic. He always had the same calm attitude.

“All of you, stand back.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

Hearing what he said, the group was startled for a moment, and immediately flew back from the place, including the Ice Demon King. All of them fell back to a place far away from the dimensional crack, even Big Yellow kept far away from the Skymend Formation.

“Does Little Chen have any other ways to solve this problem?”

Nangong Wentian asked in a shocked manner. He just couldn't think of any possible solutions Jiang Chen might come up with.

“It's hard to tell. This guy is an amazing man, he might really have some secret trick, so let's just wait and see. He always has a calm attitude when dealing with problems, and the Dimensional Creatures is a huge threat to the safety of the Red City region, so I'm certain he'll handle it with utmost seriousness.”

Big Yellow said.

The group held their breath as they looked at Jiang Chen. They eagerly wanted to know what other solutions Jiang Chen had, and

how he was going to reinforce the Skymend Formation and completely seal the dimensional crack.

Clang!

Jiang Chen moved his arm and drew the Heavenly Saint Sword. He looked at the buzzing sword in his hand and gently stroked it, then he said, “Don’t disappoint me.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen closed his eyes to communicate with the Heavenly Saint Sword. Right at this moment, there was only one way left to reinforce the Skymend Formation and completely seal the dimensional crack. He was going to use the leftover Great Saint Laws located in the Heavenly Saint Sword!

This sword was once the ultimate Saint weapon, and although he had only found two parts of it so far, those two parts still contained some of the Great Saint Laws. However, the Great Saint realm was too far away from Jiang Chen, so even if there were some remaining Saint Laws, with Jiang Chen’s current strength, he couldn’t utilize them.

However, the actual situation was a little different, because the Heavenly Saint Sword was made by himself, and the Great Saint Laws within were infused by him. If there was a person who could utilize the Great Saint Laws while in the Divine Core realm, that would be Jiang Chen. Only, he would have to call the laws from the Heavenly Saint Sword.

The Great Saint Laws sat above everything else, they were the

ultimate laws that existed in this realm. Although Jiang Chen couldn't use them to attack, he could still call them out to reinforce the Skymend Formation. With that, the formation would become extremely rigid, and the dimensional crack would be tightly sealed.

Swoosh!

One minute later, Jiang Chen waved his hand, unleashing an invisible force from the Heavenly Saint Sword. When this invisible force appeared, it instantly froze the dimension in front. Han Yan and the others could feel a supreme pressure pushing down from the sky above, a pressure so mighty their souls trembled and their breaths became heavy. Although that pressure only lasted for a split second, it still gave them a strong desire to worship it.

When the invisible force entered the inner parts of the Skymend Formation, the shaking formation instantly calmed down, and the slamming sounds from the other side of the dimensional crack also disappeared, while the sky once again returned to its original bright blue color. Now, the dimensional crack was completely sealed.

Swoosh!

The Heavenly Saint Sword let out a loud cry. Then, Jiang Chen stored it back into his storage ring. Right at this moment, peace had finally returned to Mount Origin, and no Dimensional Creatures' auras could be sensed any longer.

Struck by this sudden change, Han Yan and the group were



greatly terrified to the point where their mouths were wide open. They had no idea what just happened, they only felt a sudden pressure, and then, nothing.

With their eyes, they could feel a formation right at the spot where the dimensional crack was found. Other than that, they could find any changes. In fact, with their eyes, it was impossible to sense the existence of the Great Saint Laws. For them, it was an invisible existence.

Not only them, even if the Imperial Emperor who was a Combat King warrior came here, he would only be able to see the Skymend Formation, and not the Great Saint Laws within.

The Saint realm was too far away from a Combat King warrior, the gap between them was huge. A real Saint could easily kill millions of Combat King warriors in the blink of an eye.

“Damn it, buddy, quickly tell daddy, how did you do it?!”

Big Yellow leapt toward Jiang Chen and bared his teeth. He had witnessed many miraculous actions from Jiang Chen, and today, Jiang Chen had shocked him once more. Big Yellow was unable to find out what kind of method Jiang Chen used to reinforce the Skymend Formation, completely sealing the dimensional crack.

“Little Chen, what method did you use just now? Also, what was that pressure we felt just now?”

Han Yan jumped in and threw his questions at Jiang Chen. Although Nangong Wentian didn't say anything, his eyes were filled with curiosity. He was astonished by what Jiang Chen did, in just a short amount of time, the Skymend Formation on the brink of destruction had become so rigid, and completely sealed the dimensional crack. This was really amazing!

“That’s my secret.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. He decided to keep it a secret, as he couldn't just tell them he actually used the Great Saint Laws, as they would just think he was bluffing.

“Damn you!”

Two men and a dog cursed out at the same time. Although they had already guessed Jiang Chen wouldn't tell them how he did it, when they heard Jiang Chen say it, they still couldn't help but curse.

“That’s enough. Since the problem has been solved, let’s go back home before we return to the Martial Palace. The Red City region has suffered badly from the Dimensional Creatures’ attacks, and many innocent lives have been lost. There’s a lot of things we need to settle, and I barely even returned, so if I just left without informing anyone, my dad will scold me to death!”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He felt a warmth in his heart whenever he thought of Jiang Zhenhai. The feeling that a family gave him was something he really cherished.

“En, many member of the Yan family were seriously injured. Chen Gege has a lot of pills that are good for healing them, so we need to help them recover as soon as possible.”

Yan Chenyu said. She was really worried about Yan Zhanyun and the others' injuries.

Haha...

Right as the group was getting ready to proceed to the Red City, a loud laughter suddenly sounded out from behind their backs. After that, a man suddenly landed in front of them from the far distance.

This was an old man wearing imperial clothes. He looked to be in his fifties, and he was unleashing an extremely powerful aura from his body, giving the group a tremendous pressure.

The expressions of Jiang Chen and his friends changed instantly upon seeing this old man. This old man was no stranger to them, he was amongst those men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect who went to the Martial Palace, a respectable elder of the Shangguan Clan. He was a Late Combat Soul warrior, and a frightening enemy.

“Hmph! The Shangguan Clan is truly shameless, you really followed me here.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He was really angry when he saw

this man. Although he didn't know his name, but he did know that this man was from the Shangguan Clan, and he was clearly no here to chit-chat.

Jiang Chen felt really disgusted about what the Shangguan Clan did. They knew he was in the middle of a difficult mission, but they still sent someone here to kill him. This really pissed him off.

This old man was Shangguan Yiqing's grandfather, Shangguan Ying. His hatred toward Jiang Chen couldn't be imagined by others.

With Shangguan Ying's sight, he could clearly see the Skymend Formation in the sky, which brought him extreme shock.

"I never expected you to really solve this problem, using a formation to seal the dimensional crack. My grandson had amazing talent in the field of formations, and if he wasn't killed by you, he would definitely become a generational master of formations!"

Shangguan Ying said. When he saw the Skymend Formation, he couldn't help but recall his grandson, the pride of his life. With Shangguan Yiqing's talent in the field of formations, his future achievements would definitely have been extraordinary.

"You're Shangguan Yiqing's grandfather?"

Jiang Chen finally knew who this guy was.

“That’s right! Jiang Chen, you have killed my grandson, and I am going to rip you into a thousand pieces today! You don’t have the Ninth Emperor here to protect you, there is no way you can escape from me now!”

Shangguan Ying said with a sneer on his face. In fact, it wasn’t the Shangguan Clan’s idea to send him here, but his own. The mission to fix the dimensional crack was given by the Imperial Emperor, and even the Ninth Emperor was forbidden from helping in this matter. So, he had actually violated the rule set down by the Imperial Emperor.

But, in order to get revenge for his grandson, Shangguan Ying didn’t care too much about that. He just wanted to kill Jiang Chen, and nothing was going to stop him!

However, Shangguan Ying had his attention fully focusing on Jiang Chen, causing him to completely neglect the Ice Demon King standing next to Yan Chenyu. He never expected Jiang Chen to have such powerful help.

“Damn it, the Shangguan Clan is really despicable! We’ve accepted this impossible mission, but you still want to sneak attack us! You guys just don’t want to keep your face anymore!”

Han Yan couldn’t help but curse.

“Hmph! I thought the Shangguan Clan was a supreme power in the Jian Province, but your behavior is really disgusting!”

Nangong Wentian showed a loathing expression as well.

## Chapter 378 – Fierce Fight

---

Nangong Wentian and Han Yan were really angry. However, their fury didn't make Shangguan Ying feel ashamed or uncomfortable, in fact, it brought him satisfaction. For him, the angrier these guys became, the more fear they had of him.

The feeling of making his enemies feel scared of him was really pleasant. Shangguan Ying was enjoying the expressions on the faces of these people now. In his mind, they were all turtles in a jar, and none of them could escape from his palm. He was going to kill every single one of them, especially Jiang Chen. He wanted to give him good torture before killing him. If not, he would feel sorry to his grandson.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, there is no way you can escape from me today, all of you are going to die miserably; this is the result of challenging the Shangguan Clan!”

Shangguan Ying let out a vicious laugh, because he couldn't think of any possible way these juniors could run away from him. The strongest one here was Jiang Chen, and although he was able to kill Mid Combat Soul warriors, he didn't have any chance when facing a Late Combat Soul warrior.

“Haha, Shangguan Ying, are you sure you can kill us all today?”

Instead of feeling angry, Jiang Chen was actually laughing. There were no signs of nervousness on his face.

Not only Jiang Chen, even Han Yan and Nangong Wentian were smiling. Their angry look was all gone, and they weren't nervous or panicked. This situation startled Shangguan Ying for a moment, but soon, he concluded that these guys were just pretending.

“Hmph! It's useless to pretend to be calm, no one is going to save you today, not even the Ninth Emperor! Jiang Chen, I heard you found a broken piece of an Emperor Weapon on the Island of Ice, if you give it to me, I might consider giving you a quick death!”

Shangguan Ying coldly harrumphed and threw his sharp gaze onto Jiang Chen's face. The news about Jiang Chen finding a broken piece of an Emperor Weapon was known by many, including Shangguan Ying. Greed was the nature of almost all people, especially when the prey was right in front of them.

“I'm sorry, it is impossible for me to give you the broken part of the Emperor Weapon. Furthermore, who told you we will definitely die today? If I say you're going to die today, would you believe it?”

Jiang Chen folded his arms and spoke in a casual manner.

“What? I'm going to die today? Haha...”

Shangguan Ying was startled for a moment upon hearing what Jiang Chen said, then he immediately burst into laughter, as if he had just the funniest joke in this world. It was as if a tiny mouse had put on a fierce look and said to a cat ten times bigger than itself that the cat was going to die, what a joke!



“You’re really funny, Jiang Chen! I had no idea you could make such jokes! But, since you don’t want to hand over the broken part of the Emperor Weapon, I’ll take it myself later. Once I kill you, all your belongings will be mine.”

Shangguan Ying unleashed his killing intent. He didn’t want to waste any more breath on Jiang Chen, he just wanted to kill him.

Rumble...

A gigantic illusionary palm suddenly descended from the sky with a loud rumbling sound. Shangguan Ying was perfectly unleashing his Late Combat Soul energy. It was so powerful that no one could stare right into his face. The gigantic palm carried a devastating force, and approached Jiang Chen in the blink of an eye.

Faced with Shangguan Ying’s formidable attack, Jiang Chen still maintained the same calm smile on his face, and hadn’t moved a step. He didn’t even show any signs of counter-attacking.

“Hmph! What an ignorant young man, you still want to pretend you aren’t afraid of me? Die!”

Shangguan Ying coldly harrumphed, his face filled with a vicious smile. With incredible speed, the gigantic palm continued descending toward Jiang Chen.

Graa!

Right at this moment, a ferocious cry suddenly resounded. Within a split second, Shangguan Ying saw a white beam jump right in front of Jiang Chen. It was a huge monster over 30 meters tall, and when it appeared, it simply punched out with its fist.

Rumble...

The void was shaking and burning because of the tremendous force. With just one punch, the Ice Demon King shattered Shangguan Ying's attack easily as if it was breaking dry branches.

Tap tap tap!

Shangguan Ying was forced to take three steps back.

“What?”

Shangguan Ying's expression changed dramatically, then he threw a look of disbelief toward the monster made from ice. A massive storm erupted in his mind, and he was greatly terrified.

Actually, Shangguan Ying did notice this monster when he arrived, but since the Ice Demon King just stood there without leaking any of its aura, Shangguan Ying just ignored it. However, he had never expected this monster to be so powerful. Judging from its punch just now, it was a peak Combat Soul existence, and it possessed combat strength greater than his.

“How is it, Shangguan Ying? I told you, there is no way you can kill me today, oh, and since you’re already here, don’t even think about leaving.”

Jiang Chen said.

“How could this be possible? How can you control such a powerful monster?”

Shangguan Ying felt he could hardly breathe now. He had no idea how Jiang Chen did it, how could a young Peak Divine Core warrior control a Peak Combat Soul demon beast? This was too shocking!

“That’s not what you should be worrying about right now, you better put more consideration into the situation you’re currently facing.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen, you really think you can defeat me with just a monster? Fat chance! This monster only has a strong body and cold elemental attack, it doesn’t have any strong combat skills! With my own combat skills and combat weapon, I’ll be able to kill it!”

Shangguan Ying said with a loud voice. He had found out that although this monster’s combat strength was powerful, it all came

from its body's strength. It didn't know any powerful combat skills, and it didn't own any combat weapons. That was the difference between them.

“Let me give you a friendly reminder, if you want to run away, you better do it now, while you still can.”

What Jiang Chen said was correct. With Shangguan Ying's Late Combat Soul cultivation, if he wanted to run away, even the Ice Demon King would be unable to stop him. This wasn't the world of glaciers, so the Ice Demon King's combat strength and speed wasn't at peak form.

“What a joke, you're all going to die! Earth Shattering Palm!”

Would Shangguan Ying choose to run away? Definitely not! For him, this was a rare chance to kill Jiang Chen. He simply strengthened his spirit and attacked with the Shangguan Clan's mighty skill, the Earth Shattering Palm. When this skill was unleashed by him, its power was far beyond that of any of the other men from the Shangguan Clan who had used it against Jiang Chen before.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen and the group immediately moved to the side, giving space to the Ice Demon King and Shangguan Ying. At the same time, Jiang Chen circulated his Great Soul Derivation skill and locked down on Shangguan Ying, preventing him from running away from the scene. Jiang Chen knew very well how horrifying

the Ice Demon King was, and once Shangguan Ying was entangled in a battle with it, there wouldn't be any good endings for him.

In fact, Jiang Chen didn't want to let Shangguan Ying run away today. The reason was simple. First, Shangguan Ying was from the Shangguan Clan, Jiang Chen's deadly enemies, and there was no way he would set his enemy free. Secondly, Shangguan Ying had found out about the existence of the Ice Demon King, so if he ran away from here, his secret weapon would no longer be a secret. For him, the Ice Demon King was his biggest secret weapon, and it would lose its significant meaning if the secret was exposed.

Graa!

The Ice Demon King furiously roared out, then it threw its gigantic fist onto Shangguan Ying's Earth Shattering Palm.

Bang!

The atmosphere was once again stirred up, but this time, the Ice Demon King wasn't in an advantageous position. Just like Shangguan Ying had said, the frightening part of the Ice Demon King was its body strength, but on the other side, Shangguan Ying could attack with a powerful combat skill. A mighty combat skill could easily boost his combat strength by many times.

Therefore, the Ice Demon King was knocked back by Shangguan Ying this time.

“Haha, this monster is no match for me! Jiang Chen, if this is your secret weapon, you are all going to die today! Once I kill this monster, I’ll proceed to kill you all!”

Shangguan Ying burst into laughter after seeing the Ice Demon King knocked back by his attack. After that, he brutally unleashed his combat skill once again, causing colorful energy ripples to sweep across the sky toward the Ice Demon King.

Graa!

The Ice Demon King furiously roared out. It didn’t know what death was, so it just countered the attack without any focus on its own defense.

“Little Chen, can this Ice Demon defeat Shangguan Ying?”

Han Yan asked with mixed emotions.

“I don’t think so.”

Nangong Wentian shook his head.

“Just wait and see. Shangguan Ying will die if he doesn’t run away from here.”

Jiang Chen said with a sneer on his face. He was the only one who knew the Ice Demon King’s incredible ability, the ability to

resurrect endlessly. Since Yan Chenyu was here, it also meant that the Black Ice Talisman was here, and as long as the Ice Demon King was near it, it would be able to hide its demon soul and resurrect instantly.

Han Yan and Nangong Wentian exchanged glances. They had no idea how Jiang Chen could be so confident.

On the other side, Shangguan Ying and the Ice Demon King were fighting each other intensely. The more they fought, the more scared Shangguan Ying became, because this monster was extremely hard to defeat. It simply fought without a single care for its own safety, and all it knew how to do was attack crazily and never defend. The way it fought simply shocked Shangguan Ying.

“Damn it, is this monster not afraid of death? Since you don’t want to defend yourself, let me kill you!”

Shangguan Ying cursed loudly, then he moved his arm and drew out a dazzling broadsword, a Superior Weapon. With Shangguan Ying’s status, the combat weapon in his hand was actually a top Superior Weapon, not something those ordinary Superior Weapons’ could compare with.

“Die now!”

Shangguan Ying raised the blade in his hand high up into the air, and with all the Yuan energy in his body, he swung the blade toward the Ice Demon King that was rushing in his direction.

Slash!

The Ice Demon King didn't dodge the attack. In an instant, its body was slashed into two pieces by Shangguan Ying, then its entire body shattered and turned into solid ice cubes.

“What?!”

Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow cried out at the same time. When they saw the Ice Demon King killed by Shangguan Ying, their expressions immediately became extremely ugly.



# Chapter 379 – The Death Of Shangguan Ying

---

“Haha, Jiang Chen, your monster help is nothing! Aside from having mighty strength, it’s a useless thing! Now, I’ve killed it with my blade. Do you have any other tricks?”

Shangguan Ying burst into laughter. He was pleasantly satisfied. He felt that he had overestimated this Ice Demon. Initially, he believe it to have some powerful skills, but in the end, it was just a fool who didn’t know how to do anything other than attack. An existence like this would never pose any threat to him.

“Is that so? How do you know you’ve killed it? It’s standing behind you right now.”

Jiang Chen responded with a laugh.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, is there something wrong with your mind?”

Shangguan Ying continued laughing.

“If you don’t believe what I said, turn around and look for yourself.”

Jiang Chen pointed behind Shangguan Ying.

Shangguan Ying’s expression changed, and he couldn’t help but tremble. What made him shock wasn’t Jiang Chen’s words, but the

cold sensation coming from his back. Without any hesitation, he instantly turned around, and what he saw was a huge fist coming toward his face.

“What?!”

Now, Shangguan Ying was completely baffled. In a split second, he countered with the Earth Shattering Palm, blocking the Ice Demon King’s attacks. But, since the attack came without his awareness, he was knocked back at least 30 meters before he could stabilize his body. Now, there was a storm raging in Shangguan Ying’s mind.

“Impossible, this is impossible! I just killed it, how can it still be standing right in front of me, unharmed?! And not only that, it’s still at full strength!”

Shangguan Ying just couldn’t accept this, as he had cut this monster in two just moments ago. It was a devastating attack that no one could recover from, that’s why he was completely baffled by what was in front of him.

Shangguan Ying was clearly in shock, but the Ice Demon King didn’t give him any time to think. It simply stormed with violent attacks, continuing its brutal assault with absolutely no care for its own defense.

Rumble...

Once again, the Ice Demon King and Shangguan Ying fought intensely. After resurrecting, the Ice Demon King's combat strength hadn't weakened at all. It was still furiously attacking Shangguan Ying, because it knew its own advantage; it would never die. Therefore, it just didn't bother defending itself.

But for Shangguan Ying, it was completely different. Struck by the fact that the Ice Demon King could resurrect, his mind was now greatly disturbed, causing his combat strength to weaken.

“What the fuck, this is also possible?!”

Han Yan rolled his eyes. He felt as if the world he knew had just been turned upside down.

“Little Chen, what's going on? The Ice Demon King was killed just now, so why was it suddenly resurrected?”

Nangong Wentian stood next to Jiang Chen and asked eagerly. If he couldn't get the answer to this question, he would be driven nuts.

“This is the Ice Demon King's special ability. It actually has two amazing abilities; it can hide its demon soul in the thin air, and furthermore, once its body is destroyed, it can still come back to life near instantly with its hidden demon soul.”

Jiang Chen told them about the Ice Demon King's terrifying abilities, but he didn't mention anything about the Black Ice

Talisman.

“Damn it, this ability is really amazing! If this is the case, Shangguan Ying is going to die today!”

Big Yellow was so excited that he started bouncing around. He had never heard about any ability similar to the Ice Demon King’s special ability, and if everything was as said, then this Ice Demon King was an existence that would never be killed. As Shangguan Ying fought with it, his energy would sooner or later be depleted, and in the end, he would definitely be defeated.

“Haha, this is incredible! That old man is going to be finished!”

Han Yan burst into laughter. Knowing this fact made him very excited, and Nangong Wentian also gave Jiang Chen a big thumbs up. He really admired Jiang Chen for being able to control this amazing monster.

“Once Shangguan Ying’s mind has been disturbed, I will need your help to seal up this place, don’t let him run away from us. Little Yu, you and Big Yellow, Brother Nan, and Brother Yan stand on that side, I’ll be on this side. We have to prevent this old man from running away, if not, the Ice Demon King’s secret will be exposed.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright.”

Yan Chenyu nodded his head. She was the strongest person here besides Jiang Chen, and with this group's teamwork, as well as the formidable Ice Demon King, trapping Shangguan Ying here was a piece of cake.

Rumble...

The intense battle was still ongoing, and both Shangguan Ying and the Ice Demon King were locked in a fierce battle where no one seemed to be able to defeat the other.

“Damn it, I refuse you believe you really are invincible!”

Shangguan Ying was really furious. This was the first time in his life he had to fight such a bizarre battle; it was simply unbelievable.

He once again drew out his blade, then he unleashed all his Yuan energy, causing it to shine brightly. With a tremendous force, he swung the blade toward the Ice Demon King.

Boom!

Hit by this tremendous attack, the Ice Demon King was cut into two parts once again and died. However, before Shangguan Ying could feel happy about it, a new Ice Demon King emerged into his sight once again. Not only that, the new Ice Demon King was back at full strength. Then, it simply continued ferociously attacking

Shangguan Ying.

“What?!”

Shangguan Ying cried out in shock once more, and his eyes had turned red. He felt like he was in a dream, the monster's insane ability had gone beyond his knowledge. In his knowledge, even if a monster had the ability to resurrect, the monster would have to pay a heavy price for doing so. At least, its combat strength would be reduced by a lot. However, this Ice Demon in front of him was a completely different case. Every time it resurrected, it would be back at full strength, showing absolutely no signs of having weakened.

As for Shangguan Ying himself, after killing the Ice Demon King two times, he had used up a lot of his energy. That combined with his disturbed mind, it was really difficult to fight utilizing all his strength.

“Amazing!”

Han Yan shouted out loudly. This really was an eye opening moment for him, he never knew there was such an insane demon species in this world. With the ability of being unable to die, no matter how strong an enemy was, it would still give them a headache.

In fact, only Jiang Chen knew the truth. The Ice Demon King could be killed, but its ability to hide its demon soul made is incredible. With Shangguan Ying's abilities, there was no way he

could find out about the hidden demon soul. But, if a Combat King warrior was here, he might be able to find the Ice Demon King's weak spoke, just like Jiang Chen had done when he killed those Ice Demons back in the world of glaciers. He needed to completely destroy their consciousness within their demon soul right after killing them. With that, the Ice Demon would be completely destroyed.

But too bad, Shangguan Ying didn't possess the ability to destroy the Ice Demon King. It was destined for him to be killed by it.

The more Shangguan Ying fought, the more depressed he felt. In the end, he could only furiously cry out.

"Damn monster, I don't believe you have three lives. Now die!"

Shangguan Ying's eyes turned extremely red, and he didn't care so much at this moment. With both hand clenching the blade's handle tightly, he raised it high up into the air and swung it down with all his force, leaving a deep mark in the air as his golden blade fell downwards. It was a terrifying strike!

This was Shangguan Ying's last strike at full strength, as his Qi and Blood was already in a mess. This attack was more than enough to kill the Ice Demon King who didn't know how to defend itself. If it was still able to resurrect after that, Shangguan Ying's combat strength would be reduced by half, and he wouldn't be a match for the Ice Demon King anymore.

Slash!

Without anything different happening, just like Shangguan Ying thought, his formidable attack once again killed the Ice Demon King. But, too bad, in the following moment, a new Ice Demon King appeared, and it was back in perfect shape.

Blergh!

Looking at this, Shangguan Ying simply threw up a mouthful of blood. The blood was actually forced out by his extreme fury. He couldn't take it any longer, with his condition, he just couldn't fight anymore.

Roar!

The Ice Demon King once again delivered its gigantic fist toward Shangguan Ying. On the other side, Shangguan Ying who had nearly depleted his energy was no match for it any longer. As the Ice Demon King delivered its fist with speed fast as lightning, Shangguan Ying could only raise his arm to block the attack.

Bam!

Hit by the Ice Demon King's ferocious attack, one of Shangguan Ying's arms exploded into a blood mist, causing him to instantly let out a miserable shriek.

"Damn it, I admit defeat!"



Shangguan Ying tried his best to endure the pain coming from his arm. Without saying anything, he simply turned around and flew. He was not an idiot, he knew that in the current situation, there was no way he could kill Jiang Chen, and if he kept fighting, he would be killed by this monster in the end. He was also feeling really upset about not knowing about Jiang Chen's hidden tricks before coming here.

“Shangguan Ying, don't you think it's too late for you to run away?”

A young man in white stopped in front of Shangguan Ying.

“Jiang Chen, go to hell!”

Seeing Jiang Chen, Shangguan Ying simply swung his blade toward the wicked young man.

“Too bad, with your current strength, you are no match for me.”

Jiang Chen drew out the Heavenly Saint Sword and hit Shangguan Ying's blade with it. The collision of the two combat weapons instantly produced a large amount of sparks, and Shangguan Ying's arm started feeling numb. However, he was more shocked when he looked at his blade.

His combat weapon was a mighty Superior Weapon, but with just a single exchange with Jiang Chen's longsword, he could actually see cracks on his weapon.

“What a divine sword!”

Shangguan Ying was extremely shocked. However, he didn't have time to think about it, because the Ice Demon King had already caught up to him.

Bang!

The Ice Demon King's attack was simple, it simply delivered a punch to Shangguan Ying upon arriving. However, this was the simplest attack that Shangguan Ying couldn't take at all. He immediately used all his strength to block the attack, but that made him neglect the attack coming from Jiang Chen.

Slash!

The Heavenly Saint Sword mercilessly fell onto Shangguan Ying's shoulder, instantly chopping off his other arm.

Arghh!

After losing both arms, Shangguan Ying simply let out a furious and unreconciled cry. He knew he was doomed today, he had lost his chance to escape, causing him to feel a lot of regret.

“True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen shouted with a low voice as he unleashed a huge blood red dragon claw that turned into a giant cage, trapping Shangguan Ying within. Shangguan Ying was an arrow at the end of its flight, he simply had no strength to defend himself from Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm.

"I gave you a friendly reminder just now. If you had chosen to run away at the beginning, you might still have a chance to live, but now? You're dead meat."

Jiang Chen spoke with a smile on his face, showing no courteousness.

## Chapter 380 – Returning Home

---

Trapped by the True Dragon Palm, Shangguan Ying felt he was in a critical situation, and he could clearly feel his life was in danger. Although he had never faced Jiang Chen personally before this, he still knew very well what kind of person Jiang Chen was. This was a young, yet merciless man, and now, since he was captured by Jiang Chen, what awaited him was certain death.”

“Jiang Chen, you dare kill me? The fury of the Shangguan Clan is not something that you can withstand!”

Shangguan Ying furiously roared.

“Can you people from the Shangguan Clan choose a different speech to use before death? It’s getting really boring.”

Jiang Chen responded with a sneer, then he made the True Dragon Palm squeeze down. With that, Shangguan Ying’s body started twisting, then cracking sounds came from his bones. In just a split second, his body started tearing, and shooting out arrow of blood.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you’re going to die soon, don’t think that the Ninth Emperor will be able to protect you! The Imperial Emperor doesn’t like you at all, your end will not be good!”

Shangguan Ying burst into laughter.

“You’re talking too much rubbish, you can go die now.”

Jiang Chen really couldn’t bother talking to Shangguan Ying anymore. He simply squeezed the True Dragon Palm with tremendous force, causing the man to explode into ashes. After that, he took over Shangguan Ying’s blade and storage ring which fell down not far away from him.

Shangguan Ying was a respectable elder of the Shangguan Clan, and he was also a Late Combat Soul warrior. Therefore, the wealth he possessed was overwhelming. Since Jiang Chen had killed him, it would be really stupid to not take his belongings.

As for the blade he used, it was a top tier Superior Weapon. Although there were cracks on it caused by the Heavenly Saint Sword, Jiang Chen could easily fix it with his abilities.

Although Shangguan Ying was now dead, Jiang Chen wasn’t feeling happy at all, because he didn’t like what Shangguan Ying said before he died. In fact, what Shangguan Ying said was perfectly correct.

The Imperial Emperor didn’t like him, and Jiang Chen could clearly feel that. The reason wasn’t that he didn’t kneel down before the Imperial Emperor, but something else.

Jiang Chen had a feeling that the reason was because of Wu Jiu. On the surface, the Imperial Emperor showed a lot of respect to Wu Jiu, but that didn’t mean he truly liked Wu Jiu. No one liked living underneath the shadow of someone else, especially the

Imperial Emperor who was the most powerful man in the Eastern Continent; he needed respect from all his people. Wu Jiu's existence was like a permanent shadow hovering in his heart, and every time he smiled at Wu Jiu and showed him respect, it would make him feel really bad, because it would make him feel as if everything he had this day was given to him by Wu Jiu.

For a person who sat as high as the Imperial Emperor, he would never allow a shadow like this to exist. Therefore, Jiang Chen had a feeling that the conflict between Wu Jiu and the Imperial Emperor would sooner or later flare up, and his appearance might be the trigger. In fact, it was already possible to see some signs of this from the fact that the Imperial Emperor assigned him an impossible mission.

“Chen Gege, what are you thinking about?”

Yan Chenyu asked upon seeing the unusual expression on Jiang Chen's face.

“Yea, Little Chen, we should feel happy about killing that old fool, why do you not look happy at all?”

Han Yan teased.

“Nothing.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders and responded with a smile. He decided to put all those questions behind him, because it

was useless for him to think about that right now. The Imperial Emperor was a Combat King warrior, and the gap between their cultivation was not small. To be honest, if the Imperial Emperor decided to kill him and Wu Jiu, all they could do was sit back and wait to be killed. Therefore, what he needed to do now was to improve his cultivation as soon as possible. In this cruel world, only strength could help him survive.

As for Wu Jiu, Jiang Chen believed the Imperial Emperor wouldn't dare touch him for now. Since the Imperial Emperor was the ultimate ruler of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and the Ninth Emperor was also a respectable man with a lot of power in his hands, the Imperial Emperor would need to find a reason that no one could object to, if he wanted to kill Wu Jiu.

“Little Chen, where are we going next? Are we going back to the Martial Palace?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“We're in no hurry, let's return to my home now. Most of the cities in the Red City region are badly damaged, it will take a long time for them to recover, and the Jiang family has to stand out and lead the recovery mission.”

Jiang Chen said in a serious tone. There were a total of 28 cities in the Red City region, and now, every single one of them were severely damaged. Many of them had lost their leaders, and the entire region was in a mess. Right at this moment, in order to start over, someone needed to stand out and pull everyone together. Right at this moment, this region needed to be unified and ruled by one

power, and with that single authority, it would be much easier to start fresh, and only the Jiang family could do this.

“Oh and, if this guy leaves without notifying everyone, his dad will definitely scold him for three days and nights.”

Big Yellow said while baring his teeth.

Haha...

Everyone, including Jiang Chen burst into laughter at the same time. After that, he simply leapt into the sky and flew toward the Fragrant Sky City. In his current life, his father was an existence equally important to his own life.

Without any hesitation, the group followed after Jiang Chen and left the place. The dimensional crack had been sealed tightly, and they had also killed Shangguan Ying. Both accomplishments made them feel really happy. As for Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu, after leaving their homes for so long, the feeling they had now of being able to return was not something that the others could understand.

During this past year, Jiang Chen had been traveling around, and had gotten used to the life of fighting and slaughtering. Now, his trip back home gave him a nostalgic feeling. As for the Martial Saint Dynasty's Imperial Emperor, whether or not he liked Jiang Chen, no matter what his reason for assigning this difficult mission onto Jiang Chen, he still wanted to thank the Imperial Emperor for this. Because, if the Imperial Emperor hadn't done so, Jiang Chen wouldn't have known about the devastating things



happening in Mount Origin, and if he was later for this, he would regret it for the rest of his life, because no matter how much success he had in life, when his family members died, it would be a grief that would follow him for the rest of his life. Because of the Imperial Emperor, that didn't happen.

The group soon left Mount Origin. On their way back, they bumped into Yu Zihan and the other two. The three of them were rushing back to Mount Origin after having killed all Dimensional Creatures in the Red City region, and when they saw Jiang Chen and the group, they immediately went to regroup.

“Little Chen, what's the situation with the dimensional crack?”

Yu Zihan asked.

“It has been solved.”

Jiang Chen replied.

“What?! Solved? How did you do that?”

Tian Yishan cried out in surprise. His shock was as expected, as Han Yan and the others were also shocked even though they were at the scene, let alone Tian Yishan and the other two.

“It really has been solved. Little Chen and Big Yellow constructed the Skymend Formation, temporarily sealing the dimensional crack. For the time being, those Dimensional Creatures won't be

able to come to our world.”

Nangong Wentian explained.

After finding out that the dimensional crack had been temporarily sealed by the Skymend Formation, the trio were immersed in extreme shock. However, when they thought about all of Jiang Chen’s previous miraculous achievements, they felt it was perfectly normal, because when it came to this man, it seemed like anything was possible.

“Zihan, have you killed all those Dimensional Creatures?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Yes, they’re all dead now. I can guarantee you won’t be able to find a single creature in this region.”

Yu Zihan pounded his chest proudly as he spoke.

“Perfect, let’s go to Fragrant Sky City now.”

Jiang Chen said.

The city closest to Mount Origin was the Red City, and it was also the biggest city in the region. Before Jiang Chen left a year ago, it was actually the strongest city among all the other cities here, but now, the Fragrant Sky City was the strongest. After Jiang Zhenhai

received the Xuanyuan Cultivation Skill, his cultivation had improved a lot, and now, he was a Late Heavenly Core warrior, and had surpassed Yan Zhanyun.

“Chen Gege, can I ask you for some healing pills? I need to rush back and save the members of the Yan family, my dad and Great Elder, as well as uncle Meng has suffered really bad injuries, and if they aren’t treated, their lives will be at risk.”

Yan Chenyu said.

“If that’s the case, let’s proceed to Red City first. We’ll bring father-in-law and Great Elder back to the Fragrant Sky City.”

Jiang Chen said.

“En.”

Yan Chenyu nodded her head. When she heard Jiang Chen address her father as ‘father-in-law’, she couldn’t help but blush.

The entire Red City was in a sorrowful state. Many people who had lost their families and homes were crying their lungs out. This grief would last for quite a long period of time, as it was really hard to handle this trauma.

“Those Dimensional Creatures are really hateful! If we didn’t arrive on time, all the cities in this area would become cities of the dead.”

Looking at this painful situation, Han Yan couldn't suppress his anger.

"Let's move on, no one could predict and control this kind of natural disaster."

Jiang Chen shook his head, and continued toward the Yan family.

Compared to the other places in the Red City, the Yan family could be considered to be in a good shape, except for the Misty Rain Tower which had been completely destroyed. All the other buildings belonging to the Yan family were still intact.

When Yan Zhanyun and Yan Hongtai saw Jiang Chen, they immediately came forward to greet them.

"Daddy!"

Yan Chenyu felt her heart ache when she saw her father. She quickly moved forward and carried Yan Zhanyun's shoulder.

"Father-in-law, I'm sorry for coming back late."

Jiang Chen bowed toward Yan Zhanyun.

"Not late, you're not late at all! I'm really happy to see you all

come back!”

Yan Zhanyun was really excited, and he kept throwing examining looks at Jiang Chen, affirming his own judgment when he decided to let his daughter follow this young man.

“Father-in-law, Great Elder, here are some pills, please consume them. After that, you can follow me to Fragrant Sky City and continue healing over there.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand, throwing some pills to Yan Zhanyun and Yan Hongtai’s hand. Some of these pills were found on the Island of Ice, but most of them came from his enemies. They were all the best pills for healing injuries. Any single one of them were considered extremely valuable in the healing area.

“Alright, Yu’er, take these pills and give to our men.”

Yan Zhanyun and Yan Hongtai swallowed one pill each, then they gave the rest of the pills to Yan Chenyu, asking her to distribute them to their men.

After Yan Chenyu finished distributing the pills, the group continued toward the Fragrant Sky City together with Yan Zhanyun and Yan Hongtai. Jiang Chen had greeted his father-in-law, and now, it was Yan Chenyu’s turn to meet her father-in-law.

The group flew fast as lightning, and they soon arrived at the Fragrant Sky City. Without any more delay, Jiang Chen simply

landed in the Jiang family's courtyard.

# Chapter 381 – All Gathered Happily Under One Roof

---

“Yong master is back! Young master is back!”

Right when Jiang Chen and the group landed in the Jiang family’s courtyard, someone immediately announced his return with a voice loud enough for everyone to hear. When the guards of the Jiang family saw him, they started screaming their lungs out, excite expressions filling their faces.

They just couldn’t help themselves, Jiang Chen had become the legend of the Jiang family, and everyone in the family took great pride in having this young master. And not long before this, their young master had come back at the most critical moment and killed all Dimensional Creatures, saving their lives.

After Jiang Chen left the Fragrant Sky City, his legend was still being told in every corner of the city, or more accurately, every city in the Red City region. Now, he had once again returned and eliminated all Dimensional Creatures, saving the lives of every person in this region. It could be considered a great deed done to all living beings in this region. Therefore, everyone felt extremely proud about being part of the Jiang family.

All the guards were cheering and shouting over and over again. People started walking out from the inner area of the Jiang family, more accurately, they were running toward Jiang Chen.

The leading man was none other than the mayor, Jiang Zhenhai.

There were dozens of men following him. One of them was an old man with an imposing appearance, he was the Black Hawk who had submitted to Jiang Chen. The alchemist Zhou Beichen was in the group as well. Many of them had suffered from different degrees of injuries, some were even walking unevenly, but they still insisted on coming out to greet Jiang Chen.

There were clearly more strong warriors in the Jiang family now than when Jiang Chen left. Many of them had joined after Jiang Chen left, and because of Jiang Chen, the Jiang family had become the most respectable existence in this region. Therefore, it was perfectly normal for those people to come and join them because of their good name.

Many of the men from the Jiang family had been badly injured, but since Jiang Chen had previously given them some pills, after spending some time healing themselves, many of them had nearly recovered, just like Jiang Zhenhai and the Black Hawk. The only ones still injured were those who had been severely wounded, and were currently slowly recovering.

“Chen’er!”

Jiang Zhenhai shouted from afar, expressing his excitement of seeing Jiang Chen. Although he had met Jiang Chen before this when they were fighting with the Dimensional Creature, their time was limited, and he didn’t even have the chance to talk to him.

“Dad!”



Jiang Chen responded with a loud shout as well. With big steps, he arrived in front of Jiang Zhenhai and gave him a big hug. Jiang Zhenhai placed his arm around Jiang Chen's shoulder tightly. This was how men released their emotions. Jiang Chen enjoyed the strong sense of family coming from Jiang Zhenhai.

After some moment, Jiang Zhenhai finally let go of Jiang Chen. He threw an examining look at Jiang Chen, and the more he looked, the happier he got."

"Good, perfect! Do you guys see this? This is my son, Jiang Zhenhai's son!"

Jiang Zhenhai said in high spirits. This young man was his pride, his everything! He used to spend so much energy and effort on this son who was a useless fool, but now, who would dare look down on his son?! He was incredibly proud of Jiang Chen.

"Dad, you've broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm? That's good!"

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He could tell Jiang Zhenhai's cultivation with just one look.

"The Xuanyuan cultivation skill you gave dad is really amazing! Not only does it make me feel as if I have been reborn, it also gave me a spurt in my cultivation, allowing me to obtain such incredible strength in a very short amount of time! This is something that I could never even dream of!"

Jiang Zhenhai said with a sigh. A year ago, he was just an ordinary man at the peak Qi Hai realm, and his biggest dream was to break through to the Mortal Core realm in his life. But now, he had become a mighty warrior at the Late Heavenly Core realm!

“Dad, your potential has once again been cultivation. Soon, you will be able to break through to the Divine Core realm, and there is a high chance you can break through to the Combat Soul realm in the future.”

Jiang Chen continued and said. Jiang Zhenhai didn't know too many details about the Xuanyuan skill. The Xuanyuan skill was the skill Jiang Chen cultivated with in his previous life, and it was the skill that allowed him to climb up to the throne of the greatest Saint underneath the Heavens.

“Master.”

The Black Hawk walked up to Jiang Chen and bowed down deeply. His gratitude toward Jiang Chen was tremendous, and without the Sacred Heavenly Demonic skill Jiang Chen had given him, he would have no way of breaking through to the Divine Core realm for the rest of his life, not to mention the Mid Divine Core realm.

“En, Old Black, you've done a lot this time by protecting the Jiang family, I'll give you a reward later.”

Jiang Chen patted the Black Hawk's shoulder. He wasn't

surprised to see how much Jiang Zhenhai and the Black Hawk had progressed in their cultivation, because no one knew better than him how powerful the Xuanyuan skill and Sacred Heavenly Demonic skill was.

“Thank you, master!”

The Black Hawk was immediately struck with awe upon hearing what Jiang Chen said.

“Young master, Uncle Zhou is really happy to see your achievements!”

Zhou Beichen was wiping away his tears while speaking. If not for Jiang Chen arriving at the most critical moment, he would have been dead by now.

“Uncle Zhou, you’re so old, why are you still crying in front of so many people? Don’t you feel ashamed?”

Jiang Chen said with a laugh. In the Jiang family, Zhou Beichen was one of the men he respected, because this was a man who had always been loyal to Jiang Zhenhai.

Haha...

Jiang Chen’s words caused the entire crowd to burst into laughter, causing the atmosphere to become relaxed.

“Young master, young master...”

Right at this moment, someone called out from the inner area of the Jiang family. After that, Jiang Cheng walked out, clearly injured. When he saw Jiang Chen, his face was instantly covered with tears.

“Young master, you’re finally back! I’ve really missed you, so much!”

Jiang Cheng started crying out loudly, causing Jiang Chen to feel speechless. However, this was the sincere emotions this man had toward his young master, he was clearly not pretending.

“Jiang Cheng, don’t act like that.”

Although Jiang Chen scolded him, he still strode over and grabbed Jiang Cheng’s arm, helping him stand.

“Young master! Ever since you left, I’ve no longer been able to act like a tyrant.”

Jiang Cheng said in a grieving manner.

Hearing the words ‘act like a tyrant’, Jiang Chen couldn’t help but roll his eyes.

“That’s enough. Jiang Cheng, you’re a man, why are you crying like that? Don’t you feel ashamed?”

Jiang Zhenhai scolded. After that, he turned around and looked at Han Yan and the others. He knew Big Yellow, but he had never met Han Yan and the others. However, the auras of these people made him breathe heavily. This proved that none of these men were ordinary characters.

“Chen’er, who are these people?”

Jiang Zhenhai asked.

“They are all my brothers.”

Jiang Chen introduced the group to Jiang Zhenhai.

“Greetings, uncle!”

Han Yan and the group bowed deeply toward Jiang Zhenhai. Actually, with their status and cultivation, they would never bow toward a Heavenly Core warrior. But, Jiang Zhenhai was different, he was Jiang Chen’s father, which meant he was also their senior.

“Good, good!”

Jiang Zhenhai kept nodding his head, he felt really proud at this moment, because some Divine Core geniuses had just bowed at

him. This was such a glorious moment, and perhaps only he, Jiang Zhenhai had the privilege of receiving this honor.

“Brother Jiang, you look very majestic now!”

Yan Zhanyun walked up from the back. He had only just consumed the healing pill, and wasn't in a good shape, so Yan Chenyu was holding his arm, assisting him.

“Brother Yan, are you alright?”

Jiang Zhenhai quickly walked up and expressed his concern over Yan Zhanyun's condition. However, he wasn't looking at Yan Zhanyun at all, he was looking at Yan Chenyu. There was a saying that when a father-in-law looked at his daughter-in-law, the more he looked, the more satisfied he was.

“Yu'er, hurry up and greet your father-in-law!”

Yan Zhanyun said with a smile.

“Little Yu... Little Yu greets father-in-law!”

Yan Chenyu blushed as she spoke. She felt really shy, as this was the first time she had met Jiang Zhenhai.

“Haha, good, perfect! Little Yu is such a clever girl! Not only do you have a beautiful appearance, your talent is amazing too! The

Jiang family is truly lucky to have you as our daughter-in-law! Brother Yan, your condition isn't good, let's not stand here and talk, we better go inside."

Jiang Zhenhai said with a loud voice. He was really happy today, so happy he nearly forgot his own surname.

Soon, led by Jiang Zhenhai, the group entered the Jiang family's main hall. Although there were many of them, the Jiang family's main hall was huge, it still had plenty of empty space after having been occupied by so many people.

The entire main hall was filled with a joyful atmosphere, and the roars of laughter didn't seem to stop sounding out. Previously, a shadow had been cast in everyone's minds because of the Dimensional Creatures, but now, that shadow was completely gone. With Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu arriving, everyone was excited.

"Chen'er, what exactly were those monsters?"

Jiang Zhenhai asked.

"Dad, father-in-law, those monsters came from another dimension. There was a dimensional crack in the sky above Mount Origin, that's where those monsters came from. They are powerful creatures, and if we didn't make it on time, the consequences would be devastating, all living beings in the Red City region would be killed by them, and this place would definitely become a land of the dead."

Jiang Chen explained.

Hearing this explanation, everyone present couldn't help but sigh. There still was some lingering fear in their minds, even though the disaster was over. All the people here had experience how terrifying those Dimensional Creatures were, and if Jiang Chen hadn't come back in time, all of them would become their food.

“Chen'er, if that's the case, will more Dimensional Creatures come out from that dimensional crack?”

Jiang Zhenhai worriedly asked.

“Don't worry, dad. I have sealed the dimensional crack with the Skymend Formation, there is no way those Dimensional Creatures can come out. All we need to do now is calm the people in the Red City region, and start over.”

Jiang Chen said.

“That's easier said than done. All the cities here were seriously damaged by those foul Dimensional Creatures, and countless lives have been lost. The survivors are in deep sorrow right now, and it'll be really difficult to start over. I think it'll be impossible for this region to return to its previous prosperity.”

Yan Zhanyun shook his head and breathed a sigh of



disappointment. Those ruined buildings were easy to repair, but the wounds the souls of the survivors were the hardest to fix.

## Chapter 382 – Leaving

---

The joyful atmosphere instantly became gloomy. The Dimensional Creatures had dealt a huge blow to this region, causing everyone to be immersed in anxiety.

Jiang Chen slowly stood up from his seat, then said, “Therefore, right at this moment, we need a backbone for this region. There are a total of 28 cities in the Red City region, and all of them are independent. All this time, there hasn’t been much cooperation between each city. Since we’re facing a situation where everything needs to be rebuilt, we need someone to stand out and be the leader. It would be a great help for restoring this place, and more importantly, we can unite all 28 cities and form a new power.”

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, everyone from the Jiang family, as well as Yan Zhanyun’s eyes lit up. The powers in this region were scattered around, and they had never been united, because no person had the strength to rule the entire region. Try thinking about it like this, if all 28 cities belonged to a single power, they would have been able to react instantly when the Dimensional Creatures attacked them. Having a single command center to focus their forces was what they needed the most, and with that, the casualties would be reduced to a minimum, and they would be able to concentrate their force.

If it was in the past, it would be very difficult to alter the power structure of this territory, no one was willing to be that leader. And, even if there was a man willing, there would be many who wouldn’t agree with him. However, the current situation was completely different, all the cities had been severely damaged, and their emotions were at an all-time low. They urgently needed a

mainstay right now.

If someone was really needed to stand out, the Jiang family would be the only choice, since the people would only agree with them. The reason was very simple. First, the Jiang family had the strength and ability to do so. Secondly, Jiang Chen had saved everyone's life, and they were all grateful to him.

“What Chen'er said is correct. With the situation all 28 cities are now facing, if a leader can stand out and be the backbone, regardless of whether it's for rebuilding this region or helping the people get over their pain, it is the best option. Furthermore, the only candidate for leadership is the Jiang family.”

Yan Zhanyun expressed his opinion. In fact, with the relationship between Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu, the Jiang family and the Yan family were actually considered one single family. Therefore, Yan Zhanyun was the first person to agree to this idea.

“I'll send a message to all 28 cities using my name. From now on, everyone in this region will follow the Jiang family's order.”

Jiang Chen said with a serious expression. He wanted the Jiang family to be the ultimate ruler of this territory, and only the Jiang family was capable of that.

Everyone nodded their heads. No one had any objections. Currently, all the survivors in the different cities were grateful for what Jiang Chen had done, and it was the perfect moment to rule

this place using Jiang Chen's name.

“Dad, it looks like you are going to be very busy.”

Jiang Chen turned to Jiang Zhenhai and said.

“It is better than having nothing to do.”

Jiang Zhenhai replied with a smile. He could understand why Jiang Chen wanted to do this. His son was an amazing genius, and he was sooner or later going to soar through the heavens. But, no matter what, this region would forever be Jiang Chen's home, and only by making sure his home was safe and sound would he be able to chase his dreams with no worries. Therefore, Jiang Chen was trying his best to make the Jiang family stronger.

On the same day, Jiang Chen announced his order, and during the next two days, all the different City Lords started coming to the Fragrant Sky City to greet Jiang Chen. No one objected the idea of having the Jiang family as the ultimate leader of this region, because no idiot was capable of being a City Lord. Therefore, they knew what they should do now. Also, they were really grateful, as their lives had been saved because of Jiang Chen. Not only would they do as the Jiang family told them to in the future, if Jiang Chen asked them to follow the Jiang family from now on, none of them would disobey.

Everyone could tell that the Jiang family had an unrivalled character, and that his future was limitless. Being able to cling onto the Jiang family was actually something they wanted.

After all the 28 cities had been united, the people here had finally found their backbone, and under the Jiang family and Yan family's lead, all the cities began rebuilding their broken homes. Finally, the shadows left in their hearts because of the disaster had slowly begun fading away.

During the next few days, Jiang Chen didn't rush back to the Martial Palace, he spent all his time together with Jiang Zhenhai. He truly cherished the time he had with his father, because he knew he wouldn't have too much time for his father in the future.

At night, the bright moon climbed high into the sky, showering its silvery light onto the ground. On top of the tallest building in the Jiang family, both men stood side by side.

"All of this seems like a dream to me."

Jiang Zhenhai looked at the bright moon, a smile filled with satisfaction on his face.

"Dad, this isn't a dream."

Jiang Chen responded with a smile on his face. He knew what Jiang Zhenhai meant. For all those years, he was the number one useless fool in Fragrant Sky City, and the only hope Jiang Zhenhai had for his son was to grow up healthily. This father never dreamt his son would actually become someone great.

But, every parent wished their child could become someone useful, hoping their precious child could live a colorful life, and that one day could take great pride in their own child. It was the same for Jiang Zhenhai, only he believed that to be a mere dream until a year ago.

Now, his unrealistic dream had come true, and it truly made Jiang Zhenhai feel as if he was dreaming.

“You’re my son, of course you will become someone extraordinary!”

Jiang Zhenhai said with the utmost pride.

“Of course!”

Jiang Chen took the opportunity to flatter himself.

“Chen’er, when are you planning to leave?”

Jiang Zhenhai asked with a serious expression. During the past few days, he hadn’t asked Jiang Chen anything about the Eastern Continent, because he knew that with Jiang Chen’s abilities, he would be able to handle all kinds of situations himself, so there was no need for Jiang Zhenhai to worry.

On the other side, Jiang Chen didn’t mention anything about what he had faced in the Eastern Continent. His only desire was for his father to live a peaceful life, he didn’t want to let him feel any

pressure.

“Tomorrow.”

Jiang Chen said in a faint tone. He knew that his words were somewhat cruel for Jiang Zhenhai, but he really had to leave, there were still many things waiting for him to settle in the Eastern Continent. Furthermore, he couldn't stay here for too long, as he didn't want to drag the Jiang family into his conflicts. The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, for the Jiang family, those superpowers were just too massive.

“You're leaving tomorrow?”

Although Jiang Zhenhai was mentally prepared for the answer, but when he heard that Jiang Chen was leaving, he still felt sad in his heart. For him, this gathering seemed to pass by so quickly. Sometimes, he truly wished his son was just an ordinary man, the same useless fool who always brought him trouble. At least, he would still have him by his side.

However, Jiang Zhenhai understood a fact, someone like Jiang Chen would never be trapped in one place. He belonged to the vast world outside this tiny land.

“Dad, most of the issues here are almost settled, and the Jiang family has now become the ultimate ruler of this region. All the cities are properly rebuilding, and it's time for me to leave. But, don't worry, dad. Once I've settled everything out there, I'll come back and visit you.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“En, just go and do your things, don’t worry about us here.”

Jiang Zhenhai patted Jiang Chen on the shoulder.

“Oh and, dad, I have something for you, it will provide you great help.”

Jiang Chen stretched his arm and gave Jiang Zhenhai a storage ring, “There are some pills in this storage rings, as well as some combat weapons. They can help you improve the strength of the Jiang family. As for how to use them, you can decide for yourself. With the help of these pills and the Xuanyuan Cultivation Skill, I believe it won’t take long before dad breaks through to the Divine Core realm.”

Jiang Zhenhai was struck with mixed emotions. The Divine Core realm seemed so far away to him, and he had never dreamt he would one day be able to break through to this realm. He took the storage ring and examined it with his Divine Sense, and to his surprise, he found a lot of different pills in it, some he couldn’t even name. Besides that, there was a huge amount of Mortal Restoration Pills, and a handful of Earth Restoration Pills. And also, in the corner of the storage ring, there were a few dazzling combat weapons. With Jiang Zhenhai’s experience, he had never seen such powerful combat weapons before.

“This...”



Jiang Zhenhai widened his eyes, and his breathing became heavy. He couldn't be blamed for this, as the Red City region was a territory with poor resources, it just couldn't compare to the other places in the Eastern Continent. At this place, even a 100% effectiveness Mortal Restoration Pill was something extremely rare, let alone those rare pills and Earth Restoration Pills.

The wealth Jiang Chen had given Jiang Zhenhai was worth a fortune. With these items, it would be easy for the Jiang family to become really powerful.

“Dad, keep these things carefully, and do increase you and the Jiang family's strength as soon as possible. The stronger you and the Jiang family becomes, the less I will have to worry.”

Jiang Chen said with a serious expression. He had no choice, as his enemies were too powerful. All he could do was try his best to reduce the risk of having his family attacked by those enemies.

“Chen'er, take good care of yourself when you are out there. Remember, no matter what happens, this place will forever be your home.”

Jiang Zhenhai said in a solemn tone. Hearing something like this from his father brought him great warmth. This was the feeling Jiang Chen enjoyed the most after his reincarnation.

The next day, at the Jiang family's front gate, two groups of people were facing each other. On one side was Jiang Chen and his

friends, and on the other side was the ones from the Jiang family and Yan family.

“Dad, father-in-law, we’re leaving now.”

Jiang Chen bowed toward Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun. Yan Chenyu was doing the same next to him.

“Take good care of yourself, don’t worry about here.”

Jiang Zhenhai said.

“Daddy, you have to take good care of yourself when Yu’er isn’t here!”

Yan Chenyu said with tears in her eyes. She was actually a quite emotional girl.

“Don’t worry, your dad is a strong man!”

Yan Zhanyun forcefully pounded his own chest. After that, he turned to Jiang Chen and said, “Chen’er, I’ll leave Yu’er to you, do take good care of her!”

“Don’t worry, father-in-law.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen grabbed onto Yan Chenyu’s hand

and flew into the sky. Han Yan, Big Yellow, and the others followed after, and soon, the group disappeared into the far distance.

Jiang Chen didn't like the feeling of departing, so he chose to leave without turning back. Although he didn't look back, he could clearly feel the eyes filled with concern on his back. When the group disappeared, those eyes were still hanging in the air, and no one knew how long it lasted.

## Chapter 383 – None Believes

---

With the help of Wu Jiu's dimensional talisman, Jiang Chen saved a lot of travel time when they left the Martial Saint Dynasty. However, they didn't have it any longer, so with their speed, it would take them a few days before finally returning to the Martial Palace.

A few days later at the Martial Palace!

Wu Jiu was pacing back and forth restlessly while occasionally looking over in Mount Origin's direction. He wanted to help Jiang Chen in Mount Origin, but since this mission was given by the Imperial Emperor, he couldn't just break the rule and prove Jiang Chen any help. Furthermore, even if he did go there, he would still have no solution to that dimensional crack. All he could do was help them kill some Dimensional Creatures."

"This is really making me worried."

Wu Jiu shook his head and sighed.

Suddenly, Wu Jiu's eyes lit up. He raised his head and threw his glance into the distance, and a split second later, a man suddenly appeared in front of him. The man looked about 17 years old, he was wearing white clothes, and his face carried a faint smile. He was none other than Jiang Chen.

"Brother, you're finally back!"

Wu Jiu quickly walked up to Jiang Chen, then he impatiently asked, “How was it?”

“I finished the mission, and we’ve eliminated all the Dimensional Creatures. I spent a few days resting at home, that’s why we came back so late.”

Jiang Chen said as he shrugged his shoulders.

“What?! Finished? You’ve fixed the dimensional crack? How can this be possible? This is impossible!”

Wu Jiu’s expression changed. He thought Jiang Chen was joking, because only a Combat King warrior could deal with a dimensional crack. No matter how talented Jiang Chen was, he was only a Divine Core warrior. Even Wu Jiu couldn’t fix it, let alone Jiang Chen.

“I obviously don’t have the ability to fix it, so I used a formation to seal it up, preventing those Dimensional Creatures from coming into our world. I believe this should be considered enough to finish the mission, right?”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“What?! You sealed the dimensional crack with a formation? That’s impossible, it’s even more difficult to seal a dimensional crack than fixing it! I know all kinds of formations, but none of

them can do it, and with your cultivation, it's just impossible!"

Wu Jiu was unable to believe what Jiang Chen said. In his mind, Jiang Chen was just joking with him. If it was real, it would really turn everything he thought he knew upside down.

"My home is on the other side of Mount Origin, how could I make fun of this matter? If brother Jiu doesn't believe me, you can follow me to Mount Origin and see for yourself."

Jiang Chen said.

Wu Jiu stared at Jiang Chen, his breath heavy. If anyone else had told him this, Wu Jiu would have just slapped him, sending him far away. However, since it came from Jiang Chen, Wu Jiu had more than a hundred reasons to believe him.

"Brother, can you tell me what formation you used to seal the crack?"

Wu Jiu asked.

"The Skymend Formation."

Jiang Chen answered.

"The Skymend Formation? Never heard of that one before."

Wu Jiu was startled for a moment, and the way he looked at Jiang Chen changed.

“Frankly speaking, Big Yellow has mastered the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, he knows all kinds of ancient formations. This Skymend Formation comes from Big Yellow, I just worked together with him and helped construct the formation.”

Jiang Chen explained, pushing the origin of the Skymend Formation onto Big Yellow.

“Brother, you’ve just created another miracle. Since you’ve completed the mission, let’s proceed to the Martial Saint Dynasty. Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi are still waiting for you over there, it’s time for us to give them a shock!”

Wu Jiu was really excited.

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

Both men flew into the sky, and soon after disappeared from the Martial Palace. They were heading toward the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Wu Jiu had a unique method to communicate with the Imperial Emperor, so when both men entered the Martial Saint Dynasty, the Imperial Emperor had appeared inside the Martial Saint Palace.

“Greetings, Imperial Emperor.”

Wu Jiu and Jiang Chen bowed at the Imperial Emperor at the same time.

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

At the same time, trails of light started shooting into the Martial Saint Palace. Those who could come in like this, aside from the ones with the Imperial Emperor’s approval, their statuses were incredibly high.

Soon, a dozen men arrived at the Martial Saint Palace. These were all the emperors, as well as Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi, the same group of people as the last time Jiang Chen was here.

“Jiang Chen, I never expected you to still have the courage to return!”

The Seventh Emperor was the first person to provoke Jiang Chen.

The Imperial Emperor raised his hand, signaling for everyone to be quiet. After that, he threw his gaze at Jiang Chen’s face and asked with an indifferent tone, “Jiang Chen, have you completed the mission I gave you?”

“It is completed.”



Jiang Chen lowered his head said.

“Ridiculous, how dare you make such a shameless boast in front of the Imperial Emperor?! You simply have no respect for the Imperial Emperor! We shall have you beheaded right now!”

Right after Jiang Chen finished speaking, the Seventh Emperor immediately flipped out. Not only him, all the other men sneered. Only Shangguan Sheng had a gloomy and vicious look in his eyes, because he had received a message from the Shangguan Clan a few days ago, a message stating that Elder Shangguan Ying’s soul tablet had broken a few days ago, meaning he had died.

A Late Combat Soul warrior was considered the backbone of the Shangguan Clan, the real top of the clan. A loss like this was unbearable.

“Jiang Chen, you said you’ve fixed the dimensional crack?”

The Imperial Emperor was startled for a moment, then he asked with great interest.

“Of course. I wouldn’t be here otherwise.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“Impossible, this young man is simply making an irresponsible

remark, there is no way he can fix a dimensional crack!”

The Tenth Emperor said loudly.

“Jiang Chen, you better think twice before letting out such irresponsible remarks.”

Shangguan Sheng said with a somber expression.

“I think you’re the ones being ridiculous here, you don’t have the right to judge anyone in front of the Imperial Emperor!”

Wu Jiu opposed the group with equally harsh words.

“Jiang Chen, since you said you have fixed the dimensional crack, I would like to know, how did you do it?”

The Imperial Emperor asked.

“I think the Imperial Emperor knows that only a Combat King warrior who has mastered the Dimensional Laws can fix a dimensional crack, and since I’m only a Divine Core warrior, there is no way I can do that. Based on this, I assumed that the reason why the Imperial Emperor gave me this mission was to find another method to settle this problem, and I did. I used a formation called the Skymend Formation to seal the dimensional crack, bringing peace back to Mount Origin. No Dimensional Creatures on the other side of the dimensional crack can break this seal.”

Jiang Chen explained. He was being tricky with his words, silently putting the Imperial Emperor in checkmate, because he said he sealed the dimensional crack with the Skymend Formation, and hadn't fixed it completely. The Imperial Emperor couldn't pick on what he said, or else, it would appear as if the Imperial Emperor had some bad intentions behind his decision.

“You said you sealed the dimensional crack with a formation?”

The Imperial Emperor's expression changed.

“That's right.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

“Impossible! With your Late Divine Core cultivation, even if you've mastered some formations, their power would be too limited; there is no way it could seal the dimensional crack.”

The Imperial Emperor suddenly stood up from his throne.

“Precisely! This guy is just making things up! This isn't something a Divine Core junior can accomplish!”

The Seventh Emperor said loudly.

“How does the Seventh Emperor know I can't accomplish this?”

Do you mean that the Imperial Emperor purposely gave me an impossible mission, and sent me to hell? The Imperial Emperor is an honorable man, he is not wicked like you think he is!”

Jiang Chen looked at the Seventh Emperor with a cold gaze.

“You...”

The Seventh Emperor was furious, but there wasn’t really anything he could say, as Jiang Chen had dragged the Imperial Emperor into their conversation.

“Jiang Chen, I’ll proceed to Mount Origin and take a look. You need to know what the consequences for lying to me are.”

The Imperial Emperor threw a sharp gaze onto Jiang Chen’s face.

“Imperial Emperor, you can just go have a look, and you will know whether or not I’m lying to you.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Fine.”

After saying that, the Imperial Emperor simply disappeared from the Martial Saint Palace. It seemed like he was going to Mount Origin to find out the truth. All Combat King warriors had mastered the Dimensional Laws, and they could travel between

dimensions any time they wanted to without leaving behind any traces.

Jiang Chen looked relaxed now. He knew the Imperial Emperor would definitely go and find out the truth himself. After all, what he had done was something unbelievable, and the Imperial Emperor wouldn't believe it without seeing it himself.

As for the Skymend Formation, Jiang Chen didn't worry the Imperial Emperor would find the Great Saint Laws, and with the Imperial Emperor's position, he wouldn't purposely lie either.

“What a joke! Sealing a dimensional crack with a formation? You just don't know your own limits!”

The Tenth Emperor said with a sneer on his face.

“My abilities are not something you'll ever be able to imagine.”

Jiang Chen threw his glance onto the Tenth Emperor's face.

“Young man, who do you think you are? How dare you talk to me like that?!”

The Tenth Emperor was really angry. With his status and position, as well as his cultivation, no junior would dare talk to him like that.

“Who do you think you are then? Stop relying on your seniority in front of daddy! In less than a year, I will be able to crush you with just the tip of my finger!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. It was a huge mistake for this Tenth Emperor to pick on him.

“Bastard, you’re courting death!”

The Tenth Emperor was extremely pissed off, he instantly unleashed his killing intent.

“Lao Shi, are you going to attack someone in the Martial Saint Palace?”

Wu Jiu shouted.

Only now did the Tenth Emperor retract his killing intent. The Martial Saint Palace was the heart of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and he just didn’t have the right to attack someone here, even though he was an emperor.

“The Imperial Emperor has gone there to check it out himself. If this guy is lying, there will only be one ending for him. Let’s just wait and see.”

Tiangang Yi said. Just like all the other men, he also didn’t believe that Jiang Chen could really seal the dimensional crack with a formation.

“Jiang Chen, let me ask you, did you kill Shangguan Ying?”

Shangguan Sheng asked in a cold manner.

“I’m sorry, I’ve killed too many people, I can’t really remember who that person you asked about is.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. When talking to his enemy, he would never be polite.

Mount Origin!

A sudden vibration appeared in the quiet sky. After that, a man wearing dragon robe came out from the thin air, just like a ghost. The place he appeared was where the dimensional crack was found. This man was none other than the Imperial Emperor who came here from the Martial Saint Palace.

With the Imperial Emperor’s incredible speed, it only took him a few minutes to reach Mount Origin. After he arrived, he immediately looked at the Skymend Formation.

# Chapter 384 – The Imperial Emperor’s Ill Feeling

---

The Imperial Emperor’s eyes lit up as he stood underneath the Skymend Formation, looking deep into it with his Divine Sense. However, doing so only made him become even more shocked.

“That young man truly didn’t lie to me, he does have the ability to seal this dimension crack. However, although the formation is truly miraculous, it isn’t strong enough to completely seal the crack. It’s as if there is a special force mixed in with it, and that’s why the formation is so rigid, preventing those Dimensional Creatures from coming out.”

The Imperial Emperor murmured to himself. With his sight, he could easily tell what purpose the Skymend Formation served. This was an amazing formation, but the cultivation of those who constructed it was too weak, so its strength was limited, not enough to completely fix the dimensional crack. However, presented in front of him was the dimensional crack was completely sealed, as if there was a mysterious force hidden within the formation that became its backbone.

And that was the part that baffled the Imperial Emperor.

“Let’s see what trick Jiang Chen used to accomplish this.”

After saying that, the Imperial Emperor stretched his arm to tear the Skymend Formation. In an instant, the formation was ripped apart with a loud tearing sound. However, right as the Skymend



Formation was broken, the Great Saint Law disappeared without any notice. Not even the Imperial Emperor noticed.

Actually, with the Great Saint Laws mixed in with this Skymend Formation, it was impossible for even a Combat King warrior to break it so easily. However, when Jiang Chen was constructing the formation, he purposely left behind a loophole. He channeled all the power of the formation into the other side of the crack, preventing the violent energy and Dimension Creatures from escaping. He didn't put any defense on the outer side, so even an ordinary Combat Soul warrior would be able to break it from the outside with ease. That's why the Imperial Emperor could rip it apart so easily.

Jiang Chen was an intelligent and wise man, he never left any problems behind. He knew the Imperial Emperor would definitely come and check out this formation, and he would want to know how Jiang Chen did it. Therefore, there was no question that the Imperial Emperor would rip the Skymend Formation apart, that's why Jiang Chen didn't construct the formation to its perfect state. If he had done so, if the Imperial Emperor would have to exert much effort in order to break it, his suspiciousness toward Jiang Chen would be even greater.

At the same time, in the Martial Saint Palace, invisible Great Saint Laws shot into Jiang Chen's body. None of the great warriors on the spot noticed anything happening, even Wu Jiu who stood right next to Jiang Chen wasn't aware of anything.

A faint smile emerged onto Jiang Chen's face. Next, the Imperial Emperor would certainly have to fix the dimensional crack

himself, and this was the final result that Jiang Chen wanted, because sealing the crack with the Skymend Formation was not a permanent solution, it still required a Combat King warrior to get it fixed once and for all. Since the Imperial Emperor had ripped apart the formation, as the ultimate ruler of the Martial Saint Dynasty, he had the responsibility to permanently fix the dimensional crack.

Mount Origin!

Graa...

Right after the Skymend Formation was ripped apart, furious roars started sounding out from the other side of the dimensional crack, as well as a powerful suction force. Within a split second, three powerful Combat Soul Dimensional Creatures dashed out from the crack, three Late Combat Soul monsters. There was also a large group of Dimensional Creatures right behind them. There truly was a lot of Dimensional Creatures on the other side of the dimensional crack.

“Hmph!”

The Imperial Emperor coldly harrumphed. He waved his hand, unleashing a golden light toward the three Dimensional Creatures. In an instant, all three Dimensional Creatures let out miserable shrieks, then their bodies exploded and turned to ashes. This was how powerful a Combat King warrior was, any existence below this realm was like ants to them; no one could withstand a single strike.

Finally, the Imperial Emperor showed his mightiness. As he killed those Dimensional Creatures rushing out from the dimensional crack, he was circulating the dimensional force and fixing the crack. In just half an hour, peace had once again returned to Mount Origin, the dimensional crack was completely fixed.

After that, the Imperial Emperor's body swayed, and he disappeared from the scene. In the next moment, he reappeared in the Martial Saint Palace.

Everyone threw their glances at the Imperial Emperor, especially Wu Jiu. He was Jiang Chen's protector, and if Jiang Chen really lied to the Imperial Emperor, even he would have no way to save Jiang Chen.

There was only one punishment for lying to the Imperial Emperor; death!

"Jiang Chen, I really want to know, how did you seal the dimensional crack with a formation?"

The Imperial Emperor looked at Jiang Chen and asked, shock still existing within his eyes. He couldn't find anything weird when he ripped apart the Skymend Formation, but with that formation alone, the dimensional crack had actually been tightly sealed. This was something unbelievable to him.

"What?! He spoke the truth?!"

The Seventh Emperor cried out, his face filled with disbelief. The crowd who were just about to ridicule Jiang Chen became startled. The scornful expressions on their faces was all gone, and now they were only looking at Jiang Chen with shock. The Imperial Emperor's words proved the authenticity of Jiang Chen's words, and even the Imperial Emperor himself had no idea how Jiang Chen did it.

“Imperial Emperor, there is a fantastic miraculous beast following me, and he has mastered some ancient formations. The Skymend Formation was actually taught to me by him. As for his miraculous it is, I too have no idea, but I'm sure the Imperial Emperor has ripped apart the formation and fixed the dimensional crack. If even the Imperial Emperor can't figure out what's so special about this mystical ancient formation, how could I know?”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist as he spoke. His words left no room for response, so even the Imperial Emperor couldn't say anything. He actually placed the Imperial Emperor at a new height; how was Jiang Chen supposed to know something that even the Imperial Emperor didn't? If the Imperial Emperor kept asking for the answer, that would prove he was pretty stupid.

As the Imperial Emperor who ruled everything, how could he admit he was stupid?

“En, all ancient formations has their own miraculous effects. Jiang Chen, you have done a good this time. Although you didn't quite fix the dimensional crack, but I'll still consider it a successful mission.”

The Imperial Emperor nodded his head and said.

“Haha, do you guys hear this? This is a genuine genius! You guys couldn’t do it, so don’t question others for having the ability to do so! You’re just a group of frogs in a small well!”

Wu Jiu burst into laughter. He could finally exhale upon hearing those words.

“Imperial Emperor, even if Jiang Chen really did accomplish the mission, he has killed so many men from the Shangguan Clan, how can we just let this matter go so easily?!”

Shangguan Sheng asked while gnashing his teeth in anger. Tiangang Yi who stood next to him had the same opinion. They both thought Jiang Chen was going to end up dead, they never expected him to actually complete the mission.

“Shangguan Sheng, didn’t you hear what the Imperial Emperor said just now? The Imperial Emperor confirmed that Jiang Chen had completed the mission, and that all the resentment between you will be written off once and for all!”

Wu Jiu loudly said.

“Written off once and for all? It’s a blood debt filled with the blood of so many men, how can we write it off just like this?”

Tiangang Yi was really angry.

“Imperial Emperor, one of our Elders, Shangguan Ying suddenly died a few days ago, and I suspect his death is related to Jiang Chen.”

Shangguan Sheng said.

“Shangguan Clan Chief, you really know how to tell a funny joke! Shangguan Ying is a Late Combat Soul warrior. Even if I wanted to kill him, do you really think I have the strength to do so?”

Jiang Chen sneered and continued, “Furthermore, I was busy with the mission in Mount Origin, so there’s no possible way I could have met your Sect Elder... Well, unless your Shangguan Clan purposely sent someone there to kill me?”

Jiang Chen’s words nearly caused Shangguan Sheng to choke. The mission was given to him by the Imperial Emperor, and he wanted Jiang Chen to complete the mission alone, without the help or interference from anyone on the spot. Even Wu Jiu was forbidden to help Jiang Chen. If the Shangguan Clan sent someone to kill Jiang Chen, it would be a violation of the Imperial Emperor’s rule, and if Shangguan Sheng insisted that the death of Shangguan Ying was related to Jiang Chen, it would prove that they had broken his rule.

Also, even Shangguan Sheng himself didn’t quite believe that Shangguan Ying was killed by Jiang Chen, as he was a Late Combat Soul warrior, while Jiang Chen was only a Late Divine Core

warrior. The gap between them was entire real, three stages! This was a gap that nothing could compensate for!

“That’s enough.”

The Imperial Emperor waved his hand and said, “This is the end, I hereby announce that all resentment between Jiang Chen, the Shangguan Clan, and the Myriad Sword Sect are written off once and for all. Jiang Chen is now the official disciple of the Martial Palace.”

The Imperial Emperor finally made his authoritative decision. Regardless of whether or not this decision was sincere, he had to do it, because this concerned the dignity of an emperor, and as an emperor himself, he had to honor his promise.

“Imperial Emperor!”

Although Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi weren’t satisfied with the decision, they dared not say anything else. All they could do now was silently gnash their teeth.

“Haha...”

Wu Jiu burst into laughter. Among all the people in the Martial Saint Palace, he was the happiest person right now. He felt as if he had just won a tough battle.

“Wise judgment, Imperial Emperor.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward the Imperial Emperor and spoke with a loud voice.

“Jiang Chen, I’ve heard you found a broken piece of an Emperor Weapon on the Island of Ice, could you show it to me?”

The Imperial Emperor suddenly changed the topic to the Emperor Weapon piece. Although he was a Combat King warrior, the gap between the Combat King and Combat Emperor realm was huge. He had never seen a legendary Emperor Weapon, so he was greatly interested in seeing one.

“This...”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, he didn’t expect the Imperial Emperor to bring up this topic; this caused him to feel somewhat bad. Last time, when Jiang Chen had refused to kneel down before the Imperial Emperor, that had already put an ill feeling in the Imperial Emperor’s heart, and if he didn’t take out the Emperor Weapon now, it would be equal to not giving the Imperial Emperor face once again. However, Jiang Chen really couldn’t take it out. Others might think it was just a broken Emperor Weapon piece, but Jiang Chen knew it was actually a broken piece of the Heavenly Saint Sword, and he had now already used that to make a brand new Heavenly Saint Sword. He just didn’t have this ‘Emperor Weapon’ piece any longer.

Furthermore, although the Imperial Emperor said he wanted to look at it, he did in fact want Jiang Chen to give the broken piece



of the Emperor Weapon to him.

“Jiang Chen, with your cultivation, the Emperor Weapon piece is useless, you should just give that precious treasure to the Imperial Emperor.”

The Seventh Emperor said.

“I apologize, but it isn’t an Emperor Weapon, it’s just a broken piece of a King Weapon, and I have already smelted it into my Natal Weapon.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Bullshit, many people saw it, it is definitely an Emperor Weapon! Jiang Chen, you’re just making this up! Even if it was a King Weapon, how could you fuse it with your Natal Weapon with your cultivation?!”

The Tenth Emperor shouted.

# Chapter 385 – The New Plot

---

Everyone in the Martial Saint Palace thought Jiang Chen was just making up an excuse, and it was a really bad excuse. Even in Wu Jiu's mind, it wasn't a wise decision to offend the Imperial Emperor because of a broken Emperor Weapon.

“Tenth Emperor, how do you know I can't smelt it? This sword is my Natal Weapon, and if the Tenth Emperor isn't satisfied with my answer, you can use your combat weapon and hit my sword.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen directly drew out the Heavenly Saint Sword. The sword had been seen by many people, so it was no secret. Therefore, Jiang Chen didn't fear revealing it to the Imperial Emperor.

Buzz...

When the Heavenly Saint Sword was drawn out, it immediately caused the atmosphere in the Martial Saint Palace to vibrate and produce a loud buzzing sound. The crystal-like sword body shone brightly, making it difficult for people to stare directly at it.

“What an amazing sword, this sword can definitely be considered a peak Superior Weapon, it's even leaking out the aura of a King Weapon!”

Tiangang Yi's expression changed. He was actually an expert at making combat weapons, and although he didn't feel like admitting it, there were no other Superior Weapons that could

compare with Jiang Chen's. At least, none of the combat weapons owned by anyone on the spot could compare with it. If there was one combat weapon that could surpass this world, it would be the Imperial Emperor's King Weapon.

"I've heard that Jiang Chen had an extremely razor sharp sword as mighty as a King Weapon. Cong'er was defeated by him because of this sword, and all those Combat Soul geniuses from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were killed by this sword. Looks like the rumors were true."

The Tenth Emperor said, shocked by the sword.

"Good sword!"

Wu Jiu couldn't help but praise. A magnificent sword like this could easily dazzle anyone who saw it. The most shocked man on the spot was actually the Imperial Emperor. He was the man with the strongest cultivation here, and after reaching the Combat King realm, his senses had reached a level that none of the others in this room could compare with. However, for some unknown reason, this peak Superior Weapon actually gave him a faint pressure. This was a really rare situation for the Imperial Emperor.

"Jiang Chen, I really didn't expect you to have such amazing talent, enough to forge the broken piece of the Emperor Weapon into your own combat weapon! It looks like you are indeed a man with great talent! In my opinion, you should give the sword to the Imperial Emperor, as a token of appreciation!"

The Seventh Emperor suggested. He didn't even try to hide his sinister.

He wasn't alone, Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi both wore vicious smiles as well. They thought there was no way they could get revenge now, but unexpectedly, the whole situation had made U-turn. The Imperial Emperor clearly had a great interest in Jiang Chen's sword. Or, put it this way, he was greatly interested in that broken Emperor Weapon piece. If Jiang Chen refused to give him the Heavenly Saint Sword, it would truly be no different from not giving any face to the Imperial Emperor, and after Jiang Chen had offended the Imperial Emperor, he just wouldn't have any good endings in the Eastern Continent.

Two bright beams shout out from Jiang Chen's eyes. He threw his glance at the Seventh Emperor's disgusting face with a strong desire to leave a shoe mark on this evil person's face.

Appreciation? Appreciation your fucking sister!

If the Imperial Emperor really appreciated Jiang Chen, he wouldn't have asked him to complete an impossible mission. And now, he was trying to take away Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword. What kind of appreciation is this?

Jiang Chen had a strong desire to go a rampage right now, but he did know the difference between himself and the Imperial Emperor. This was not the time for him to fall out with the Imperial Emperor, there were just no benefits of doing so, and Jiang Chen was no longer a loner, he had family and friends, so he needed to think twice before making any decision.”

“This sword is my Natal Weapon. I believe the Imperial Emperor knows what a Natal Weapon is, it is linked with my own life, and if I give it to someone else, I’ll suffer a serious injury. The Imperial Emperor is the ultimate ruler who sits high above all, and you possess a mighty King Weapon. I believe you don’t want my sword.

Jiang Chen put the Heavenly Saint Sword back into his storage ring, then cupped his fist toward the Imperial Emperor once again.

An obscure cold light leaked out from the Imperial Emperor’s eyes, and although it was really obscure, Jiang Chen still noticed it, causing him to feel uneasy.

“Jiang Chen, you’re thinking too much. I never said I want your Natal Weapon, I only said I wanted to have a look at that broken piece of the legendary Emperor Weapon. Since you have already merged it with your Natal Weapon, just forget it.”

The Imperial Emperor said with a smile. There was an obvious unsatisfied expression hidden within his smile, and everyone on the spot could clearly see it.

“Alright, that’s all, you can all leave.”

The Imperial Emperor waved his hand and disappeared from the palace.

“Brother Jiu, let’s go.”

Jiang Chen turned around and left the Martial Saint Palace in a bad mood. Soon, he disappeared from the sky above the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Hmph! What a lucky bastard, he actually escaped this time!”

The Seventh Emperor coldly harrumphed.

“Although he managed to escape this time, it doesn’t mean he’ll be able to escape a second time! This guy was being disrespectful to the Imperial Emperor, his ending won’t be a good one!”

The Tenth Emperor walked out from the palace with a sneer on his face.

Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi exchanged a glance. Both men wore gloomy expressions on their faces, and they could tell something from each other’s glance; neither of them were going to let go of this matter so easily.

The unpleasant feelings between Jiang Chen and the Imperial Emperor also left Wu Jiu in a bad mood, but he still felt happy for Jiang Chen, as his brother had escaped punishment.

“Brother, I’ll give you the disciple status of the Martial Palace once we return. The Imperial Emperor has made his final judgment, all the resentment between you and those guys are now written off, and you’re part of the Martial Palace now, and that

means those who challenge you are also challenging me!”

Wu Jiu patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder.

“Brother Jiu, the Imperial Emperor is a man of deep thoughts, but you are a man with a straightforward character. There is a huge difference between you two, I think you should be careful in the future.”

Jiang Chen reminded Wu Jiu. He had a feeling that the conflict between Wu Jiu and the Imperial Emperor would one day erupt, and at that point of time, Wu Jiu would be the one in a disadvantageous position.

“Brother, you’re worrying too much. The Imperial Emperor and I are brothers. Furthermore, he is the Imperial Emperor now, the ultimate ruler of the Martial Saint Dynasty and Eastern Continent, don’t think too much about it.”

Wu Jiu said with a smile. It wasn’t difficult to tell that he was defenseless against the Imperial Emperor.

“I hope so.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile and didn’t continue. In Jiang Chen’s mind, Wu Jiu was a true man, a man with a straightforward character. He never resorted to tricks or plots, especially toward his own guys. However, the Imperial Emperor was different. He was a man with deep thoughts, and it wasn’t

difficult to see this from how he had obtained the right to visit the Island of Ice a hundred years ago.

What Wu Jiu said was correct. The Imperial Emperor stood on the peak of the Martial Saint Dynasty, he was respected and worshipped by all his people. However, because of this, he was unable to take any rejections, because that would be no different from a challenge to his sovereignty.

Furthermore, the Imperial Emperor really hated it when someone mentioned the rights to visit the Island of Ice a hundred years ago, it always made him feel as if what he got today was given to him by Wu Jiu. This mentality gave birth to an ill-feeling toward Wu Jiu, and now, because of Jiang Chen, this ill-feeling had become worse.

Jiang Chen didn't mention anything about this, as he knew it was useless to tell Wu Jiu. It was impossible to get rid of this ill feeling, and Wu Jiu also wouldn't accept his words.

The only thing Jiang Chen needed to do now was to improve his cultivation as soon as possible. He really hated the feeling of his nose being pulled by someone else. Furthermore, right after Jiang Chen walked out from the Martial Saint Palace's main gate, a new goal rose into his mind.

He wanted to topple the Martial Saint Dynasty and let Wu Jiu become the Imperial Emperor.

Of course, this was a humongous goal, and if Wu Jiu knew about



it, he would perhaps trip on his own feet and fall down from the sky. However, Jiang Chen was forced to have this goal, because the current Imperial Emperor was a terrifying man. This emperor would definitely not give Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu a good time. He didn't kill Jiang Chen today because he cared for his own dignity, and there wasn't any good opportunities to do so. Jiang Chen believed that once he had a perfect excuse, the Imperial Emperor would get rid of Wu Jiu without any hesitation.

Jiang Chen didn't want to let this happen, and in order to change this, he would need much more strength. In this cruel world, nothing was more important than powerful strength. Therefore, Jiang Chen was impatient to obtain great strength, he was hungry to improve his cultivation. Only with a mighty cultivation could he change everything.

After returning to the Martial Palace, Jiang Chen went straight into secluded cultivation. For now, he would be safe in the Martial Palace. He wanted to use this moment of leisure to improve his own cultivation.

Jiang Chen planned to leave the Martial Palace and continue his cultivation in the outside world. He had a total of 4,500 Dragon Marks right now, and he only needed another 500 to break through to the Combat Soul realm. He wanted to seek an opportunity to break through to the Combat Soul realm outside the Martial Palace. As long as he broke through to the next realm, his combat strength would be greatly improved, and he wouldn't have to worry about the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect any longer.

Next day!

Martial Saint Dynasty, the Tenth Emperor's mansion!

Within a beautifully decorated main hall sat five men, the Tenth Emperor in the master seat. These four men were the Shangguan Clan Chief, Shangguan Sheng, the Myriad Sword Sect Chief, Tiangang Yi, the Seventh Emperor, and at last, Wu Cong, son of the Tenth Emperor. In fact, his hatred of Jiang Chen was much stronger than anyone else's hatred, and he had a tremendous desire to kill Jiang Chen. Whenever he thought about his trip to the Island of Ice, he felt as if his face was being thrown into the ground.

“With the Imperial Emperor's final decision, all resentment between us and Jiang Chen has been written off. The Ninth Emperor is also protecting him, and he is hiding in the Martial Palace. There is no way we can kill him now.”

Tiangang Yi said.

“We have to find a solution! This guy has incredible talent and is really frightening, even though is only at the peak Divine Core realm now. If we give him room to grow, it will be really difficult for us to kill him in the future.”

Shangguan Sheng said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“Didn't you guys see? That guy actually made the Imperial

Emperor angry! Although the Imperial Emperor couldn't do anything to him at that moment, he has started disliking Jiang Chen, which we can easily tell from the mission the Imperial Emperor gave him. Therefore, since the old resentments are written off, let's create some new resentments!"

The Tenth Emperor said with a vicious smile on his face.

# Chapter 386 – The Nangong Family’s Situation

---

“However, that Jiang Chen is in the Martial Palace, and I don’t think he will come out at all. The Ninth Emperor is also the Palace Chief, so I think it will be extremely difficult to create new resentment.”

Shangguan Sheng furrowed his brows. He had a strong desire to kill Jiang Chen, but he was extremely safe when staying in the Martial Palace, because the Ninth Emperor wouldn’t give them any chance to get close to Jiang Chen.

“Although we can’t, I do know someone who can, and he is the perfect candidate.”

Wu Cong slowly stood up from his seat and spoke with a sneer on his face.

“Oh? Can we know who you’re talking about?”

Tiangang Yi enquired.

“The Imperial Prince.”

Wu Cong squinted his eyes and brought up another heavyweight in the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“The Imperial Prince? He has a noble status and is above us, he’s basically guaranteed to become the next Imperial Emperor. He has already broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm, and even we are no match for him. Furthermore, the Imperial Prince is the commander of the Golden Guards, and he controls thousands of people. I don’t think he will help us because of Jiang Chen, there is no reason for him to help us.”

Shangguan Sheng shook his head. It was nearly impossible to get the Imperial Prince to help them, he had thousands of matter he needed to attend to every day; he just didn’t have the time to play with them.

“We don’t have to beg the Imperial Prince, he will help us by himself. I have a pretty close relationship with him. He is a man with amazing innate talent and a formidable cultivation. His position is very high, and he care for no one. However, he does have his weakness, and I believe you all know about it.”

Wu Cong said with a laugh.

“Women!”

The group responded at the same time.

“Precisely, the Imperial Prince is considered perfect in all aspects, but his only weakness is his love for woman. Currently, he has eighteen wives, and each of them are dazzling beauties, the best one can find. I found out that there is a perfect beauty following Jiang Chen, and Jiang Chen treats her like the most precious

person in his life. This girl's name is Yan Chenyu, and she looks like a fairy. Her simple and spiritual character is not something the Imperial Prince's wives' can compare with. If the Imperial Prince sees her, I'm sure he will want to make this girl his wife. With this, there will definitely be a conflict between Jiang Chen and the Imperial Prince, and since Jiang Chen has given the Imperial Emperor a bad expression, if he offends the Imperial Prince on top of that, even if he has ten lives, he will still have to face death in the Eastern Continent."

Wu Cong explained with a vicious expression.

"What a perfect plot! That Jiang Chen has the Ninth Emperor's protection, so there is no way we can touch him, but if we drag the Imperial Prince and the Imperial Emperor into this, it will be a completely different story!"

Shangguan Sheng's eyes lit up, and he gave Wu Cong a thumbs up.

"Haha, leave this matter to me. The Imperial Prince is in secluded cultivation, and I think he will come out in about half a month. At that point of time, I'll show him the surprise!"

Wu Cong burst into laughter, as if his evil plot had already taken effect.

The group planned their evil plot using Yan Chenyu. However, none of them knew that Yan Chenyu was no longer the same weak girl as she once was. Her Nine Yin Meridians has completely

awakened, and even Wu Cong was unable to do her any harm now. She also had the mysterious Black Ice Talisman, and the Ice Demon King to protect her. Their evil plot was not going to work as simply as they thought.

.....

Martial Palace.

Within the lone courtyard, Jiang Chen was pacing back and forth. He would occasionally raise his head and look at the moon the sky. The moon was half covered by dark clouds, causing Jiang Chen to feel as if there was a shadow hovering in his mind. He had previously entered secluded cultivation, but for some unknown reason, he was feeling really frustrated and couldn't stay calm.

As the once greatest Saint underneath the Heavens, it was rare for Jiang Chen to be so frustrated. He had a feeling that something bad was going to happen sooner or later. Although he was safe in the Martial Palace, it seemed like there was a rapid current hidden underneath the calm surface. He could feel evil intentions brewing.

For the first time in his life, Jiang Chen felt as if some situations and conditions would go beyond his control, and he didn't like this feeling, because he wasn't alone anymore. He had friends and family, he had emotions just like any other normal human being; he was no longer the same martial arts maniac who only knew battle and slaughter.

The enemy was very strong. If Jiang Chen was still a loner, he would just go off somewhere far away where no one could really find him, where nobody was a threat to him. But now, he couldn't just do that anymore. If he left, all his friends and family would still be here. Therefore, he had to solve those resentments sooner or later.

“Strength, it all goes back to strength! Looks like I need to go out and get more experience.”

Jiang Chen let out a long sigh. He was getting closer to the Combat Soul realm, but it still wasn't an easy task to break through.

Jiang Chen decided to leave the Martial Palace as soon as possible, so that he could train in the outside world. The sooner he broke through to the Combat Soul realm, the better, as his foundation and abilities would be much stronger.

Creak!

Right at this moment, the courtyard's door was pushed open by someone. After that, a tall man walked inside. It was Nangong Wentian.

After Nangong Wentian came into the courtyard, he turned around and shut the door. He had a dull expression on his face, and it looked as if something was troubling him. He walked up to Jiang Chen.



“Brother Nan, what happened?”

Jiang Chen asked. Although he hadn't known Nangong Wentian for a long time, they had become brothers who knew each other very well. Nangong Wentian was a bright and cheerful man, and no matter how dangerous a situation, he never wore such a gloomy expression. Jiang Chen knew something not right had happened to him.

“Little Chen, I'm here to say goodbye to you.”

With a bitter smile on his face, Nangong Wentian told Jiang Chen.

“Oh? You're going back to the Southern Continent?”

Jiang Chen asked in a puzzled manner.

“Yes, I'm going back soon, I hope I can still make it in time.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“What happened exactly?”

Jiang Chen asked with a frown on his face.

Nangong Wentian let out a long sigh but didn't say anything. He

knew Jiang Chen had a lot of troubles of his own, so he didn't want to bother his brother with his own troubles.

“Brother Nan, you are my brother.”

Jiang Chen patted Nangong Wentian on the shoulder. The way Jiang Chen addressed him made his heart feel warm.

“My family, the Nangong family is considered one of the superpowers in the Southern Continent. It is a humongous existence that can fight the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. However, in the recent years, there have been some internal disorders in my family. When I left home, my dad gave me a Natal Message Talisman, a special talisman for our family. With it, my dad can communicate with me in a real time manner even though I am in the Eastern Continent. Furthermore, this talisman can only be used once, and my dad wouldn't use it unless it was something really urgent. Just half an hour ago, my dad summoned me with it and told me there is a critical situation in my family, he asked me to return home at once.

Nangong Wentian explained to Jiang Chen with his brows furrowed. There was one thing he didn't mention to Jiang Chen, and that was the fact that the talisman had exploded after he got the message. It was a sign that his family was in a very grave condition.

“I'll go with you.”

Jiang Chen said without any hesitation.

“What?”

Jiang Chen's words caused Nangong Wentian's eyes to light up. But soon after, a bitter smile replaced the sudden thrill, “Little Chen, I appreciate your kindness, but you have so many issues here. I don't want to trouble you with my family's troubles.”

Nangong Wentian did in fact wish he could get Jiang Chen's help, since he had no idea what kind of changes were happening in the Nangong family right now. He had no idea what he should do, and even if he returned, with his cultivation and strength, it seemed like there wouldn't be much he could do to help. However, in his mind, Jiang Chen was a man capable of achieving everything, and no matter what kind of situation Jiang Chen faced, he would always create a miracle. If Jiang Chen really went with him, Nangong Wentian could at least have more confidence.

However, Jiang Chen was busy with his own problems in the Eastern Continent, and the distance between the Eastern and Southern Continent was really far, and Nangong Wentian also had no idea what situation his family was in right now. Therefore, he didn't want to trouble Jiang Chen.

“Brother Nan, you are my brother, I will definitely help you! Furthermore, I've already made a decision to leave this place and continue my training in the outside world, I need to look for the perfect opportunity to break through to the Combat Soul realm. I can just take this opportunity to go to the Southern Continent with you! I might be able to get something beneficial to myself.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He had decided to continue training in the outside world, but he hadn't decided where he wanted to go. Since something was happening in the Nangong family, he could just take this opportunity and go to the Southern Continent. He might be able to find his breaking point there.

More importantly, he and Nangong Wentian were brother who had gone through many dangers together. When a brother was facing a difficult time, Jiang Chen couldn't just sit back and do nothing.

“Little Chen, thank you.”

Nangong Wentian didn't say anything else, he just expressed his gratefulness.

“That's enough, we are brothers, you don't have to be so formal with me.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile.

“Let's delay no longer, we need to leave now. The distance between the Eastern and Southern Continent is far, and with our speed, I don't know how long it'll take for us to get there. At that point of time, I'm afraid...”

Nangong Wentian said with a gloomy expression. Their destination was indeed very far away, and without any teleport formations, it was going to take a lot of time to reach the Southern

Continent, and when they do arrive, everything might already be too late.

“Before we leave, I need to arrange something.”

While saying that, Jiang Chen sent out a few messages through his Divine Sense from his sea of consciousness. A few minutes later, a few people arrived from different directions. Han Yan, Yan Chenyu, Big Yellow, and Wu Jiu, all his friends had arrived.

“Little Chen, I thought you were in secluded cultivation? Why did you ask us to come here in such a rush?”

Han Yan asked.

“Something happened in the Nangong family, I will follow brother Nan to the Southern Continent. Before I leave, I need to arrange some things.”

Jiang Chen went straight to the point.

“What? You’re going to the Southern Continent?”

The group exclaimed at the same time, especially Wu Jiu. His face was filled with shock. Even with his cultivation, he had never gone to the Southern Continent before.

“Let me follow you!”

Han Yan, Big Yellow, and Yan Chenyu all said at the same time. They didn't care how far away the Southern Continent was, they just wanted to stay next to Jiang Chen. They also wanted to help Nangong Wentian.

“No, I have no idea what kind of situation we will face over there. Therefore, only I and brother Nan will go there, you guys stay back in the Martial Palace, as it is the safest place for now. If we all leave together we will also definitely be noticed by our enemies. Once we've settled the matters in the Nangong family, I'll come back at once.”

Jiang Chen's words left no room for questions.

Han Yan and Yan Chenyu had no choice but to nod their heads. Big Yellow kept muttering something to himself at the side, he was really unhappy about Jiang Chen's decision. However, they knew that once Jiang Chen made up his mind, there was nothing they could do about it.

“Before I leave, I have something to tell you.”

Jiang Chen said with a serious expression.

## Chapter 387 – Revisiting The Island Of Ice

---

Jiang Chen threw his glance at Wu Jiu first. Wu Jiu was the most important person right now, because with his status, position, and strength, he could ensure the safety of Jiang Chen's friends. But at the same time, Wu Jiu was the person Jiang Chen worried about the most.

“Brother Jiu, I still want to remind you to keep a close eye on the Imperial Emperor. I hope that before I come back, you can stay in the Martial Palace without getting in touch with the Imperial Emperor. Also, don't let Little Yu and my friends leave the Martial Palace.”

Jiang Chen reminded with a solemn expression. Although the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect didn't defeat Jiang Chen this time, but with their approaches, it was impossible for them to give up. They would definitely seek other means to get Jiang Chen into trouble. Also, the Imperial Emperor had ill feelings toward Wu Jiu. Therefore, the best option now was to keep everyone in the Martial Palace.

“Rest assured brother, your brother Jiu will make sure all of them are safe!”

Wu Jiu pounded his own chest as he spoke. He was still very confident in himself.

“Alright, I'll have fewer worries with brother Jiu's help.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. After that, he turned to Han Yan and said, “Brother Yan, brother Nan, you two follow brother Jiu and leave us here. I have something to tell Little Yu and Big Yellow.”

The three men exchanged glances, then left the courtyard.

“Chen Gege, please be careful on your trip to the Southern Continent!”

Yan Chenyu told Jiang Chen in a worried manner after the three men left.

“Don’t worry, Little Yu. I am taking this opportunity to experience the Southern Continent, and I might perhaps find an opportunity to break through to the Combat Soul realm. Also, Brother Nan is facing some trouble, so I need to help him. Actually, I’m worried about you here. Although the Martial Palace seems safe for now, the situation could change at any moment. I’ll leave the Ice Demon King with you, it can provide you with great help at a critical moment.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen let the Ice Demon King out from his storage ring. He purposely waited for Wu Jiu to leave before taking out the Ice Demon King, as he didn’t want Wu Jiu to misunderstand him. Wu Jiu still believed that his relationship with the Imperial Emperor was harmonious, so Jiang Chen had to keep this as a secret.

“Master.”



The Ice Demon King bowed toward Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu.

“Ice Demon, during the period where I am not here, you need to stay with Little Yu and listen to her command.”

Jiang Chen told the Ice Demon King.

“Understood.”

The Ice Demon King nodded its head. After that, it simply turned into a white beam and entered Yan Chenyu’s storage ring.

“Buddy, how can you go to the Southern Continent without this master dog? Bring me with you, I want to experience the Southern Continent as well!”

Big Yellow spat out his tongue and stared at Jiang Chen with a begging look.

“No way, you are the one I truly can’t bring with me.”

Jiang Chen instantly rejected him.

“The fuck, why?!”

Big Yellow was really unhappy about Jiang Chen’s decision.

What did Jiang Chen mean by his words? This was discrimination!

“You have great senses, and you’re an expert in all kinds of advanced and mystical formations, and you also have some secret tricks. You are our biggest secret weapon, so I’ll need you to stay back and handle the most important task. Please don’t disappoint me.”

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow’s head. This dog was an amazing existence, and he could truly help out at the most critical moment.

“If that is your honest opinion of me, it proves you are a very wise man! This master dog is a being who will achieve great things!”

When Big Yellow heard about his importance, his attitude immediately changed. According to what Jiang Chen said, he would be the main character here after Jiang Chen left.

“If you have nothing to do now, quickly go to sleep, and break through to the Combat Soul realm. Or else, your importance will become weaker.”

Jiang Chen said with a laugh.

“Fuck, daddy isn’t sleepy right now!”

Big Yellow helplessly glared at Jiang Chen. Breaking through to the Combat Soul realm wasn’t something simple, especially for Big

Yellow who was an incredible Divine Beast, it was even more difficult for him to break through compared to others. However, once he did break through, he would go through a thorough change and obtain unimaginable benefits.

“That’s enough, Nangong Wentian’s situation is really critical, so we need to rush now.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen disappeared in a ghostly manner.

“Chen Gege, remember to be cautious out there!”

Yan Chenyu shouted.

Outside the Martial Palace, two figures were leaving the place like two ghosts sneaking in the dark night. With Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian’s abilities, they could easily leave the Martial Palace without getting noticed by anyone.

Even Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi didn’t expect that Jiang Chen would leave the Martial Palace at this time, as the safest place for Jiang Chen to stay was inside the Martial Palace. If he left, he would have to face the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect’s revenge. They knew Jiang Chen was no idiot, so he would definitely hide in the Martial Palace.

Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian landed on a desolate mountain range about a thousand kilometres away from the Martial Palace.

“Little Chen, will anyone from the Shangguan Clan or Myriad Sword Sect follow us?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“Don’t worry, I just returned from the Martial Saint Dynasty yesterday, so they won’t expect me to leave the Martial Palace today.”

Jiang Chen said.

“The distance between the Eastern Continent and Southern Continent is really far, and with our speed, it will take us perhaps a few months to arrive, provided we don’t get lost. I’m scared it will already be too late by the time we arrive.”

Nangong Wentian shook his head. He never expected he would travel so far away from the Southern Continent when he left his family. Now, it was extremely difficult for him to return home. Not only was it a long journey, they would also have to face countless demons and devils along their way, and if they got lost, that would be even worse.

“You’re right, it will take us a really long time to travel. Ah, if only we had a Teleport Formation...”

Jiang Chen added. It was easy to say he was going to go to the Southern Continent, but when it came to the actual travel, the distance was enough to make them gloomy.

“Teleport Formation?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes suddenly lit up, and he nearly shouted out loud.

“Little Chen, what are you thinking about?”

Nangong Wentian turned to Jiang Chen and asked.

“Do you remember that Black Altar we saw before leaving the Island of Ice? When the exit was activated, there was an ancient Teleport Formation next to it! We were in a rush to leave the island, and had no time to check it out. If that Teleport Formation is still working, we can use it to reach the Southern Continent!”

Jiang Chen recalled the Teleport Formation on the Island of Ice. It was a huge Teleport Formation, and it was more than enough to send them to another continent.

“Little Chen, that’s useless. The Island of Ice only appears once ever hundred years, and we don’t even have any clue where the Island of Ice is right now, let alone the Teleport Formation on the island.”

Nangong Wentian felt speechless.

“Perhaps I can make a miracle happen. Take a look, what is

this?”

Jiang Chen flipped his palm, taking out a bright bronze plate.

“A bronze plate? I thought all nine bronze plates disappeared when the gate to the ancient pagoda was opened? Why do you still have one with you? No, this bronze plate is different from those nine, those bronze plates looked rusty and broken like some scrap metal, but this bronze plate is shining brightly? Just what is this bronze plate?”

Nangong Wentian asked in a shocked manner.

“The truth is, the nine bronze plates didn’t disappear that day. Right after the gate to the ancient pagoda opened, they merged together into a brand new bronze plate. I took it and kept with me without anyone else finding out, that’s why you guys thought they had disappeared.”

Jiang Chen explained. After leaving the Island of Ice, he hadn’t paid any attention to this bronze plate, and had nearly forgotten about it. However, when he mentioned the Teleport Formation just now, it instantly emerged into his mind.

“However, what is the usage of this bronze plate? Can it point us to the Island of Ice?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“We need to give it a try.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen shot his Divine Sense out from his sea of consciousness into the bronze plate. In an instant, a buzzing sound could be heard from the bronze plate as it began violently vibrating. It seemed like the bronze plate was an object without any owner, and right after it received Jiang Chen’s Divine Sense, it immediately resonated with Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen’s Divine Sense was swimming within the bronze plate’s inner space. At the beginning, all he saw was a murky void, but when his Divine Sense was accepted by the bronze plate and resonated with it, everything became much clearer.

Jiang Chen could clearly see a routed that led to a specific spot in the ocean. On that spot, a magnificent Island of Ice was floating on the surface of the water.

“I found it, I found the exact location of the Island of Ice!”

Jiang Chen was really surprised.

“What?”

Nangong Wentian cried out in surprise. Jiang Chen really found the exact location of the Island of Ice with this bronze plate, this proved that the bronze plate had a tight connection with the Island of Ice, as it was used to open up the gate to the ancient pagoda, and now used to give them the exact location of the Island of Ice. This

meant that they could use it to enter the Island of Ice.

“I have gained the acceptance of this bronze plate, we can rush to the ocean now and find the Island of Ice. With the help of this bronze plate, we should be able to enter the Island of Ice without any problems, and even find the Black Altar with ease. If we can activate the Teleport Formation, travelling to the Southern Continent will be a piece of cake.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Haha, this is great! Little Chen, you truly are an amazing man capable of achieving anything, I feel great joy when travelling with you!”

Nangong Wentian burst into laughter. Being able to travel together with Jiang Chen, who was a man with a tremendous destiny, felt really enjoyable to him. It was as if no matter how big the problem they faced was, Jiang Chen would always find the perfect solution. Now, they had found the exact location of the Island of Ice, and if they were able to use the Teleport Formation, it would simply save them months of travelling time. For Nangong Wentian, this was truly good news.

“Let’s move, we need to reach the ocean first. It’ll take us about two days to reach the ocean if we travel at full speed.”

Jiang Chen stored the bronze plate back into his storage ring, then both men started flying with incredible speed, dashing through the dark night like two ghosts, and leaving behind



afterimages wherever they passed.

Two days later, in the dark night. Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian finally arrived at the ocean's border. Jiang Chen took out the bronze plate and sent his Divine Sense into it. The location of the Island of Ice had become much clearer now.

“The Island of Ice is hidden in a secret location within the ocean, I can feel it through the bronze plate.”

Both men continued their journey and flew toward the location of the island.

## Chapter 388 – A Large Teleport Formation

---

Compared to the previous time Jiang Chen came to the ocean, he was much stronger now, and he was several times faster than before. When he flew at full speed, Nangong Wentian was unable to keep up with him, so Jiang Chen had to carry Nangong Wentian in order to fly at full speed. This really dealt Nangong Wentian a heavy blow, because no matter what, he was still a genius of his generation, a famous young talent from the Nangong family. He had never been convinced by anyone from the younger generation, but when compared to Jiang Chen, the gap between them was too obvious. Jiang Chen was just an abnormal monster.

In just an hour, Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian arrived close to an island. It was an island with green hills and clear water. White fog hovered around it, causing it to look like a paradise in the ocean.

“We are at the Blissful Island again.”

Nangong Wentian said with a smile.

“Master Blissful helped me a lot. If I have time in the future, I’ll come visit him again.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Let’s hurry up and find the Island of Ice!”

Nangong Wentian urged.

Jiang Chen once again took out the bronze plate. From it, he found out there was still quite a long distance between where they were and the Island of Ice. They still needed to travel deeper and further into the ocean.

The ocean waves were rolling, and from time to time, some gigantic sea monsters would extend their heads out from the ocean surface and show a fierce look to any creatures passing by. However, all these sea monsters had developed some intellect, so when they sensed the auras of the two men passing by above them, they immediately pulled their heads back into the water, not daring to show any aggressiveness.

Soon, both men arrived at an area with a turbulent current. The water was flowing really fast here, causing many huge whirlpools to form. These whirlpools carried a devastating force, so no sea monsters dared come close.

Right at this moment, the bronze plate started shining brightly. Jiang Chen sent his Divine Sense into it and found out they were very close to the Island of Ice.

“We’re here, the Island of Ice is hidden underneath this area. Let’s dive in, but be careful of those whirlpools.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. Both men covered themselves with a Yuan energy barrier, then they dived into the water. After spending some time swimming around the area, they were unable

to find any signs of the Island of Ice.

“Little Chen, this can’t be right. The Island of Ice is gigantic, we should have found it by now, but there is nothing here? Furthermore, I thought this area would be frozen, because the Island of Ice is so cold?”

Nangong Wentian was puzzled.

“The Island of Ice is in stealth mode. It only appears once every hundred years, that’s why this area isn’t frozen and we can’t see it. If we could see it with bare eyes, someone else would have already found it before us. Now, we have to use the bronze plate.”

Jiang Chen raised the bronze plate, then unleashed a bright beam which completely covered it.

Buzz...

A deafening buzzing sound immediately came from the bronze plate, and soon after, the bronze plate established a connection with the Island of Ice. Then, a golden gate suddenly appeared right in front of Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian.

Right when this golden gate appeared, all the surrounding water was pushed back, and a vacuum zone was formed.

“Let’s go!”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He took the lead and entered the golden gate, Nangong Wentian quickly following after. The golden gate still remained where it stood after both men entered it.

Jiang Chen turned around and waved his hand. In an instant, the golden gate turned back into the bronze plate and fell into Jiang Chen's palm.

“Haha, this bronze plate is really good!”

Jiang Chen said with a laugh. He knew there was something unusual about this bronze plate when he obtained it, but he had never thought he could use it to enter the Island of Ice once again.

With a flicker, Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian instantly appeared right above the Black Altar. The eerie looking Black Altar didn't affect the duo's emotions, it actually made them feel really excited.

“We actually came immediately to this Black Altar!”

Nangong Wentian was surprised.

“The bronze plate is the key to the inner area of the Island of Ice, it's perfectly normal for us to come here with the gate opened up by it. Let's see if we can activate the Teleport Formation.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen walked straight to the Teleport Formation on the Black Altar. The Teleport Formation looked really old, and if not for the mystical symbols, it might already have lost all use.

It was a black Teleport Formation with a diameter of three meters. There were countless symbols engraved on it. The entire Teleport Formation looked dead, and it seemed like it hadn't been activated for a really long time.

“Little Chen, does it still work?”

Nangong Wentian was nervous because the Teleport Formation's bad shape. It would be a big problem for them if it didn't work, as they would have to travel to the Southern Continent by flying, which would take them a few months, and they would be too late to stop anything bad from happening.

“I think it will work, let's give it a try. Look at the center of this Teleport Formation, there is a socket which has a shape identical to the bronze plate. If my guess is correct, the bronze plate we have is the key to activating this Teleport Formation.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen took two steps forward and came in front of the Teleport Formation. He stretched his arm and placed the bronze plate into the socket.

Click!

A crystal clear ‘click’ sound was heard when the bronze plate was inserted into the socket. In an instant, the dead silent Teleport Formation started glowing brightly, and countless golden beams shout out from it. It no longer looked like a ruined formation, and the symbols engraved into the formation had become alive and were withering around like snakes.

Crack... crack...

Cracking sounds started coming from the Teleport Formation, and not long after that, a dimensional crack appeared right in the center of the formation. An ice-cold dimensional force burst out from the crack and blew into Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian’s face, causing their bodies to sway.

Crack... crack...

Soon, the crack grew larger, and a few minutes later, the crack transformed into a huge dimensional gate. It was nearly three meters tall, and it was blinking brightly.

After that, three golden lines appeared within the dimensional gate. One pointed to the south, one pointed to north, and the last one pointed to the center.

“Look! That line is pointing to the Southern Continent! The bright light at the end of the line is the Southern Continent!

Nangong Wentian was really surprised. The bright light at the

end of the line pointing to the south was the brightest, and it was also where the Southern Continent was located. This was an amazing Teleport Formation that could send them straight to the Southern Continent.

However, Jiang Chen was looking at the center line. That line was much longer than the other two lines, it was at least a dozen times longer. The bright dot at the end of this line was also the largest, it was the size of a human fist. Compared to that, the bright dots that represented the Southern and Northern Continents were only the size of a thumb. The difference was really huge.

“That is the legendary Divine Continent?”

Nangong Wentian also threw his glance over to the center line and asked in astonishment.

“That’s right, the line leads to the center of the Saint Origin Realm, the Divine Continent.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were glowing. It was his real destination, his final goal.

“I heard the Divine Continent is a vast land. If we added up all the lands from the Eastern, Western, Southern, and Northern Continents, the total size would only amount to 10% of the Divine Continent! It is the sacred land of the Saint Origin Realm, and the warriors there are extremely strong, not something the warriors in the four remote continents can compare to! However, in order to



reach the Divine Continent, one would have to cross countless big territories. The distance is just unbelievable, and that's the reason why all four remote continents are isolated from it. Few can travel from a continent to the Divine Continent. However, this Teleport Formation can actually lead us to the Divine Continent, this is amazing!"

Nangong Wentian said with a sigh. As a genius from the Nangong family, he was very familiar with the geography of the Saint Origin Realm. He knew that although the Southern Continent was a huge land, it was only a tiny land when compared to the Southern Continent.

"Brother, once we've settled everything here, are you interested in going to the Divine Continent with me? The world there is much more exciting than the world here."

Jiang Chen asked with a smile. He kept looking at the bright dot representing the Divine Continent, unable to move his eyes away from it.

Nangong Wentian was shocked by Jiang Chen's question. Similar to Jiang Chen, he dreamt about one day visiting the Divine Continent. However, he had no plans of doing so yet. Jiang Chen's words had instantly ignited his passion.

That's right, the Divine Continent was where true excitement awaited.

"Alright, if there is a chance, I'll follow you to the Divine

Continent. With that, I won't have lived for nothing!"

Nangong Wentian strengthened his spirit.

"Let's move on, now is not the right time to go there. Since the Teleport Formation has been activated, let's proceed to the Southern Continent."

With a thought, the bronze plate fell back into Jiang Chen's palm, then he threw it toward the bright dot representing the Southern Continent.

Swoosh...

In an instant, a strong wind blew by, then a powerful dimensional force covered both Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian, causing their bodies to feel much lighter, and lifted them. They were then sent into the dimensional gate.

With a flicker, the scene in front of them immediately changed. Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian appeared in the middle of a dimensional tunnel, and the bronze plate was steadily hovering three meters away from them.

Swoosh...

Strong wind kept blowing by. Nangong Wentian threw his glance at the surrounding variegated dimensional turbulence, and couldn't help but tremble.

“Fuck, so this is dimensional turbulence? This is amazing! Just these dimensional tornadoes alone are more than enough to kill me! Without the protection of this tunnel, we would either die or get lost in this turbulence!”

Nangong Wentian was struck with mixed emotions. This was the first time he had walked among dimensions and experienced the mysterious dimensional environment.

Compared to Nangong Wentian, Jiang Chen was very calm. With his experience as the once greatest Saint underneath the Heavens, he was already used to travelling across different dimensions. When he was at his previous peak, he didn't even need any Teleport Formations. With the Dimensional Shift, he could easily travel a few million kilometers in an instant. Crossing dimensions was just a piece of cake to him.

“Once you've mastered the Dimensional Laws and broken through to the Combat King realm, you won't feel as amazed.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Combat King, that realm seems so far away from me.”

Nangong Wentian shook his head. Although he was a man with amazing innate talent, and had confidence in himself, he had never thought about breaking through to the Combat King realm, because he wasn't even a Combat Soul warrior now. The gap between his current cultivation and the Combat King realm was

too huge.

“It is not as far away as you imagine. Remember, there is a long path ahead of us, and even if we break through to the Combat King realm, that is just the beginning.”

Jiang Chen said. Nangong Wentian was not a man without aspiration, and he wasn't a man who lacked self-confidence, he just lacked experience, as he hadn't seen the world yet. A person who has never gone to the Divine Continent before just didn't have enough experience and knowledge about how huge this world truly was.

## Chapter 389 – Southern Continent

---

Within the dimensional tunnel, the bronze plate was floating in front of the two as a guide while Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian quietly sat there, moving forward with the help of the dimensional force.

“Little Chen, how long will it take before we reach the Southern Continent?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“We need to cross a huge territory in order to travel from the Eastern Continent to the Southern Continent. Even with the help of the Teleport Formation, I think it will take at least four hours. This dimensional tunnel is strong, it can last until we arrive at the Southern Continent.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Four hours?! Damn it, you have no idea how long it took daddy to travel from the Southern Continent to the Eastern Continent, and I almost got myself killed! Luckily, we have this Teleport Formation!”

Nangong Wentian said with mixed emotions. Compared to this Teleport Formation’s speed, he was just like a crawling turtle.

“Brother Nan, tell me about your family.”

Jiang Chen asked with great interest. Since he had decided to help Nangong Wentian, he needed to know more about his family.

“Our family doesn’t have a long history in the Southern Continent, so our foundation isn’t as strong as the other superpowers. According to what my dad told me, the Nangong family only has about a one hundred years history in the Southern Continent.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“One hundred years of history?”

Jiang Chen was startled for a moment. He was always touched by this timing. It was as if most of the major changes in the Saint Origin Realm happened one hundred years ago, the year when he swung his sword toward the Heavens and broke the gate to the Realm of Immortals, causing the entire barrier of the Saint Origin Realm to change. The realm’s entire structure had gone through many changes because of that year, that day.

“That’s right, one hundred years ago, my grandfather came to the Southern Continent, and with his extraordinary talent, he established a massive foundation for the Nangong family. After that, he decided to make that land his permanent home, then he married and had a lot of children. Also, the Nangong family has an amazing treasure that no outsiders know about. My grandfather brought it with him when he arrived at the Southern Continent, and even I have no idea what the treasure looks like, I only that my

grandfather hid it in a secret place within the Nangong family and blocked all access to it with the Profound Sun Formation. However, the hidden treasure doesn't have any powerful usages, its only function is to produce a certain amount of Nine Solar Holy Water each years, and because of the Nine Solar Holy Water, the Nangong family has risen abruptly in just a few dozen years, becoming one of the true superpowers in the Southern Continent."

Nangong Wentian continued. As the Nangong family only had a history of one hundred years, he could still remember it all with ease.

"What? A treasure that can produce Nine Solar Holy Water?"

Jiang Chen was shocked. However, nothing was too strange in this world, there must be a reason why this treasure exists. If that was the case, it wasn't really surprising that the Nangong family became a superpower in such a short amount of time. Try thinking about it like, when every new descendant of the Nangong family was born, they were immediately given Nine Solar Holy Water, causing all of them to be geniuses since a young age. A family like this would definitely become a superpower.

"Yes. Although it doesn't produce too much each year, it is still more than enough to help our family become a superpower. Remember how I used Nine Solar Holy Water in exchange for pills? I brought the Nine Solar Holy Water from home. My dad is the Family Chief, and as his son, I can still get some benefits."

Nangong Wentian replied with a mischievous laughter.

“I’m really curious, since your family possess such a great treasure, I suppose there are some superpowers paying close attention, and are trying to rob it from you?”

Jiang Chen felt this matter strange. There was a saying that an innocent man’s wealth would bring his own ruin for causing the greed of others to emerge. With such an amazing treasure, some other powers must have been eyeing the Nangong family before they became one of the superpowers. No one would let this extraordinary treasure slip away in front of their eyes.

Even with the Nangong family’s current powerful strength, they at most comparable to the Shangguan Clan, not a level where they could dominate the entire Southern Continent. The Southern Continent was a huge land, and there were surely some humongous existences comparable to the Martial Saint Dynasty. However, even a gigantic power like the Martial Saint Dynasty would be tempted when seeing a treasure capable of producing Nine Solar Holy Water. Honestly, it was a miracle for the Nangong family to survive for one hundred years.

“That’s why I said it’s our family’s secret. That treasure is locked away with the Profound Sun Formation and hidden in a concealed face. Even as the son of the Family Chief, I only know about its existence, but have never seen it with my own eyes. There aren’t many people in the Nangong family who knows about this treasure, even some of the descendant who were given Nine Solar Holy Water has no idea where it came from. Furthermore, none of us would tell any outside about this secret, because if anyone did that, it would be a completely disaster for us. My dad called me back in such a rushed manner, I wonder if it is related to that



treasure?”

Nangong Wentian explained with a frown on his face.

“I see.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. It couldn't have been easy for the Nangong family to keep this secret for a hundred years.

“However, the current Nangong family is no longer a monolithic family. Three years ago, my grandfather died after depleting his energy in order to fix the Profound Sun Formation, then he made my father the next Family Chief, and that's when the Nangong family started dividing. My eldest uncle and his family didn't want to follow my father's command, and after that, he simply broke the family into two parts.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Sounds like your eldest uncle is the root cause of all the changes in the Nangong family.”

Jiang Chen understood now.

“That's right, my eldest uncle blames my grandfather for not making him the next Family Chief. Therefore, he keeps causing all kinds of problems in the family. I really hate this kind of internal conflict, that's why I chose to leave home. I also wanted to travel the world and give myself a different kind of experience, and that's

what led me to you.”

Nangong Wentian said.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He now finally understood why Nangong Wentian left home. It looked like the current changes in the Nangong family was related to their internal conflict as well.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen had a great interest in the treasure that could produce Nine Solar Holy Water.

“Perhaps the current event is related to my eldest uncle, and it must be very serious. As for what exactly is going on, we can only know when we return to my home.”

Nangong Wentian said.

Swoosh...

Numerous dimensional tornados kept sweeping across, sending strong winds toward Jiang Chan and Nangong Wentian. Suddenly, a purple colored bright dot flew past Jiang Chen. With a quick movement, Jiang Chen instantly caught it in his hand.

“Dimensional Purplesand Crystal! What a lucky day!”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. The object he caught just now was a transparent human fist-sized purple crystal, and it was emitting a

faint purple light. Although it was only about the size of a human fist, the energy it contained was enormous.

“Dimensional Purplesand Crystal? What is this thing?”

Nangong Wentian glanced at the purple crystal. He had never seen anything like this before.

“It’s a crystal that only exists in dimensional turbulence, and it’s formed after absorbing the purest dimensional force together with dimensional sand. It contains an enormous amount of energy, and just with this Dimensional Purplesand Crystal alone, I will be able to form another 100 Dragon Marks.”

While explaining, Jiang Chen unleashed a suction force from his palm and started absorbing the energy, causing the Dimensional Purplesand Crystal to slowly start shrinking. Nangong Wentian knew Jiang Chen was absorbing this rare treasure, so he just sat aside without saying anything.

Half an hour later, the Dimensional Purplesand Crystal had been completely absorbed by Jiang Chen. Numerous blood red Dragon Marks could be seen hovering around his body, each of them looking like a real tiny dragon, giving Jiang Chen a mystical image.

Sitting next to Jiang Chen, Nangong Wentian could clearly feel that Jiang Chen’s aura was much stronger compared to before.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen suddenly opened his eyes, causing two bright beams to shoot out and some ripples to appear in front of him. Right at this moment, his Yuan energy was rolling like the violent ocean waves within his Qi Sea. The purple crystal had given him one hundred new Dragon Marks, causing him to have a total of 4,600 Dragon Marks, and one step closer to the Combat Soul realm.

“Haha, this is so satisfying!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter, he felt really lucky today. Dimensional Purplesand Crystal was an extremely rare item, it was so rare that one could spend a hundred years in dimensional turbulence and still find nothing. Also, who would spend so much time in dimensional turbulence? That was clearly just a pure act of courting death!

Jiang Chen was simply a man with heaven defying lucky. A Dimensional Purplesand Crystal just flew past him, just like that, giving him another 100 Dragon Marks. If he wanted to get the same amount of energy by absorbing demon souls, he had no idea how many demon beasts he would have to kill.

“Damn it, this is such a good treasure! Let’s watch closely, there might be more of them coming!”

Nangong Wentian’s face was filled with excitement. He kept looking around without daring to blink his eyes, but all he could see was the variegated dimensional currents. No more Dimensional Purplesand Crystals were to be found.

“Stop looking around, you will find it if you’re lucky enough.”

Jiang Chen patted Nangong Wentian on the shoulder. If Dimensional Purplesand Crystals could be found in bulk quantities, the world would be in a mess.

Four hours passed by, and Nangong Wentian was left with a bitter face in the end. He was forced to accept Jiang Chen’s incredible lucky, it was truly a miracle for him to obtain that Dimensional Purplesand Crystal, but too bad, the same miracle would never happen to him.

Buzz...

Suddenly, the dimensional tunnel started violently shaking. Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian quickly stabilized their bodies, and soon, they saw a bright light not far away from them. The wind coming from the dimensional tornadoes had become stronger as well.

“We’re almost there.”

Jiang Chen reminded.

Right after Jiang Chen’s words left his mouth, they had come to the end of the dimensional tunnel. Jiang Chen then immediately grabbed the bronze plate in front of him. This was a precious treasure that Jiang Chen could never lose.

Both men felt a force pulling their bodies, and unable to control their bodies, they were thrown away from where they stood.

Bam! Bam!

The sky was bright and clear. Suddenly, some 'boom' sounds resounded in the thin air. With a split second, two objects rolled out from the thin air, and it seemed as if the two were unable to control themselves, as they were thrown onto the ground, causing two huge craters to appear on the flat surface.

“What is that?”

Someone shouted and started slowly walking toward the holes. This was the outer area of a beautiful mountain range. Many caravans were resting around the area, and this was the first time they had seen some unknown objects falling down from the sky.

“Cough... cough... fuck, can't it be any gentler?!”

Raging curses could be heard from the bottom of the crater. After that, a man with a face fully covered in dust climbed out.

# Chapter 390 – The Nangong Family's Upheaval

---

“The fuck #%&α...”

While climbing out from the huge crater, Nangong Wentian was cursing loudly. This guy obviously wasn't prepared, and had no prior experience at all, that's why his was covered with dust. Compared to him, Jiang Chen's image was much better. Although he too had been thrown into the ground, he just looked calm.

After Nangong Wentian came out from the crater, he immediately found out something wasn't right, because he was welcomed by countless enquiring glances.

“Damn it, what are you looking at?! Get lost!”

Nangong Wentian was truly pissed off, he was in a bad mood after being thrown into the ground like that, and now there were so many people looking at him as if he was a monkey. He was unable to endure it.

“Why are you guys still looking at me?! Never seen such a handsome man before?! Fuck!”

Nangong Wentian kept cursing at those bystanders, and while getting rid of the dust on his body, he was walking away from where he landed.

Cough, cough...

Jiang Chen faintly coughed a few times and quickly kept distance from Nangong Wentian, pretending he didn't know that guy. At least, he was pretending he wasn't familiar with Nangong Wentian. Although Nangong Wentian was the young master of the Nangong family, he just didn't want to live that image out.

The bystanders didn't wake up from their shock until the two walked far away.

“Who was that idiot? Is there something wrong with his brain?”

“What the hell, an idiot just fell down from the sky?”

“If not for there being something wrong with his brain, I would have delivered him a slap just now!”

.....

Far away from the scene, Nangong Wentian shook his body with his Yuan energy and got rid of all dirt. After that, he took out another set of green clothes from his storage rings and quickly changed into it. Only now had he recovered from the messy fall.

“Damn it, that dimensional tunnel is just not meant for humans! That fall just now was too hard!”



Nangong Wentian said in a gloomy manner.

“I can only say; you don’t have any experience at all.”

Jiang Chen responded with a mocking smile.

“I’m finally back! But, we are at the border of the Southern Continent, I think we’ll need to travel another one or two days to reach the Nangong family.”

Nangong Wentian threw an examining look at the surrounding area.

“The Southern Continent’s climate is really different from the Eastern Continent. Although it’s hot, the air is pretty humid and full of natural Yuan energy, it is a nice place to live.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head and said. Although the climate between the Eastern Continent and Southern Continent was different, but the natural Yuan energy was almost the same. For him, or any other cultivator, a slight difference in the climate didn’t affect them much.

“But, there are a lot of demons and devils in the Southern Continent. We humans and they have never gotten along well, and there are frequently battles where some demons besiege the human cities. This place is much messier than the Eastern Continent.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“This is a cruel world.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile.

“Let’s go, time to return home!”

Nangong Wentian looked in the direction of the Nangong family, then both men turned into two trails of light and started flying at incredible speed.

Right now, within the city closest to the mountain range where Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian had arrived, a young man was resting in a courtyard with eyes closed. He was wearing white clothes, and looked to be in his early twenties. Besides him, a mighty white eagle was lying on the floor, seemingly overcome with boredom.

Suddenly, the vulture stood up and threw its bright eyes into the far distance.

“Eagle, you’ve found brother Wentian?”

The eyes of the young man in white lit up.

Caw!

The white eagle let out a loud cry, then it swung its wings and flew into the sky. On the other side, the young man's face had a joyful expression. Without hesitating, he stepped into the sky and stood on top of the eagle's back, then they flew out from the city together.

In the far distance, Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian who were in the middle of flying heard a loud eagle cry. The sound instantly shocked Nangong Wentian. He quickly turned to the direction where the sound came from, then saw a white dot quickly approaching them.

“That's my family's white eagle!”

Nangong Wentian was thrilled. He was very familiar with this white eagle, it was specifically raised by the Nangong family. Not only did it possess a powerful attack strength, it could also fly with incredible speed. Most importantly, this white eagle had a special ability, it could easily track down anyone. Just like now, the white eagle had sensed Nangong Wentian's aura, and had come straight for him.

Soon, the white eagle arrived in front of Nangong Wentian. It clearly had a close relationship with him, as it was letting out cries of excitement upon seeing him.

“Brother Wentian, you're finally back!”

The young man in white was thrilled to see Nangong Wentian. He immediately left the white eagle's back and walked up to

Nangong Wentian.

“Wenyang, why are you here?”

Nangong Wentian was surprised. He never expected to meet a family member right after returning to the Southern Continent.

“Brother Wentian, you’ve been gone for too long this time, I guessed you must have gone to a place far away, that’s why I brought the white eagle here to wait for you in that city. It’s still not too late, I’ll inform the Family Chief right away!”

Nangong Wenyang took out a golden message talisman and shattered it with his Yuan energy, causing it to turn into a trail of golden light and disappear in an instant.

“Brother Wentian, this is?”

Nangong Wenyang turned to Jiang Chen and asked.

“Let me introduce you, this is my brother who has gone through life and death together with me. Jiang Chen, this is my cousin, Nangong Wenyang.”

Nangong Wentian introduced both of them to each other. After that, he gave Nangong Wenyang a light punch to his shoulder and said, “Not bad! You’re a Mid Divine Core warrior now!”

“Hehe, but I am still far away from brother Wentian!”

Nangong Wenyang responded with a laugh. Both of them were clearly close.

“You asshole!”

These brothers were clearly happy to see each other.

“Brother Wentian, something big is happening back home, we need to rush back now!”

Nangong Wenyang’s expression became serious.

“Wenyang, what’s going on? My dad only asked me to come back as soon as possible, but he didn’t mention anything else?”

Nangong Wentian asked in an impatient manner.

“It is eldest uncle, he just couldn’t get over the fact that grandfather made your dad the next Family Chief. After he left with his family, he has now come back, and he wants the Family Chief to hand over the position.”

Nangong Wenyang angrily said.

“I knew it had something to do with Nangong Yunzheng, that

guy just won't stop causing trouble! However, it won't be easy for him to fight for the position of Family Chief!"

Nangong Wentian coldly harrumphed.

"It's different this time, because the Profound River Palace is involved."

Nangong Wenyang said.

"What?! Why does the Profound River Palace want to involve themselves in the Nangong family's internal conflicts? Is it because of grandpa's treasure?"

Nangong Wentian exclaimed.

"What is the Profound River Palace?"

Jiang Chen asked.

"The Profound River Palace is the number one sect in the Southern Continent, and its status is equal to the Martial Saint Dynasty in the Eastern Continent. It is the superpower that rules the entire Southern Continent, and they usually don't interfere in the internal conflicts of other powers and families, but this time they're involved. I don't think the reason behind them doing so is simple."

Nangong Wentian's brows were tightly knitted in a frown.

“What brother Wentian said is correct, when a superpower like the Profound River Palace decides to put their hands on the Nangong family's internal conflict, there must be a big motive behind it. Our Family Chief is guessing that it's highly possible that it's related to eldest uncle, Nangong Yunzheng. He believes he has made an agreements with them and told them about or secret family treasure.”

Nangong Wenyang said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“Using the Profound River Palace to get rid of your father, and then help him obtain control of the Nangong family, fulfilling his own desire for high power and authority. As an exchange, Nangong Yunzheng might have promised to give them your secret family treasure.”

Jiang Chen said.

Nangong Wenyang threw a glance at Jiang Chen. He didn't feel much regarding this friend Nangong Wentian had brought back with him, but what Jiang Chen said was correct.

“Brother Jiang's conclusion is the same as the Family Chief's. A few days ago, eldest uncle gave the Family Chief his final warning, and in two weeks' time, he will hold a competition. The final result of this competition will decide who will get to be the next Family Chief, and who gets to control the treasure left behind by grandpa.”

Nangong Wenyang said.

“What kind of competition?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“Although he said it is a competition, but in fact, it is a deathmatch, because the Profound River Palace is involved, and the Family Chief can’t just reject this proposal. There will be three matches, the first one is between you and Nangong Wenyan, and the second match is between Family Chief and Nangong Yunzheng. Because you are the Nangong family’s young master, you can’t escape from the match, and the top of the Nangong family has the same thought, only the strongest man from the younger generation can be the Nangong family’s young master.”

Nangong Wenyang continued, “This battle will decide survival or extinction for the Nangong family, the treasure left behind by grandpa is our biggest foundation, and we can never give it to any outsider. Furthermore, Family Chief doesn’t want to ruin the Nangong family under his hands, that’s why he called you back in such urgency, as he needs you to fight for the survival of the Nangong family, but...”

“But what?”

Nangong Wentian’s expression turned real ugly, because he never expected his eldest uncle to actually sell his own family to outsiders.



“Brother Wentian, I need to warn you, Nangong Wenyen broke through to the Combat Soul realm not long ago, and with your current cultivation, I don’t think you will be a match for him.”

Nangong Wenyang said in a worried manner.

“Looks like eldest uncle is really determined to win this battle. How long do we have until the match?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“Two weeks.”

Nangong Wentian felt time was too short. Even for a genius like him, trying to break through to the Combat Soul realm was not an easy task.

“Two weeks? Fine, Nangong Wenyen, I’ll definitely fight you! I won’t give up even though I only have two weeks, and since this concerns the survival of the Nangong family, I, Nangong Wentian will never surrender!”

Nangong Wentian clenched his fist so tightly that cracking sounds could be heard.

After calming himself down, Nangong Wentian turned to Nangong Wenyang and asked, “My dad’s strength is similar to

eldest uncle, I think it will be very difficult for them to defeat each other. I'm sure eldest uncle think I will be defeated, so who will fight in the third match?"

"The third match will be fought with any helper we can find. I'm sure Nangong Yunzheng has found a formidable warrior to help him, and that person might be a mighty warrior from the Profound River Palace. However, for us, we still haven't found anyone strong enough. Therefore, our only hope is that you and Family Chief can win the match."

Nangong Wenyang said.

"Looks like Nangong Yunzheng has properly prepared this time."

Nangong Wentian clenched his teeth. He could suddenly feel a tremendous pressure resting on top of his shoulders.

## Chapter 391 – The Helper's Strength

---

The three men and the eagle were flying above the clouds extremely quickly. Both Nangong Wentian and Nangong Wenyang wore ghastly expressions on their faces. Their eldest uncle, Nangong Yunzheng was well prepared this time, and was supported by the Profound River Palace. He was determined to seize all of the Nangong family's resources and the Family Chief position. Nangong Wentian couldn't let this happen, as he didn't want to let the hundred year old Nangong family fall into the hands of that guy.

It seemed perfectly normal for them to solve this problem with a duel between both parties. Whoever won two matches out of three would be the final victor. However, Nangong Wentian had no confidence in this duel at all. In the first match where he had to fight Nangong Wenyang, it was a match between a Divine Core warrior and a Combat Soul warrior. Although Nangong Wentian was a talented man, he was only able to fight an ordinary Combat Soul warrior while at the Peak Divine Core realm. However, that was just an ordinary Combat Soul warrior, not a genius like Nangong Wenyang.

Both men were raised in the Nangong family since they were young, and had gotten almost identical amount of resources. Their talent was also pretty much equal. However, there was a big gap between their cultivations, so it would be very difficult for him to win this match.

As for the Family Chief, Nangong Yunfan, his cultivation was similar to Nangong Yunzheng. The result of their match was unpredictable, so therefore, the most vital match was the third

match. He knew Nangong Yunzheng must have found a mighty warrior from the Profound River Palace, but for the Nangong family, they just couldn't find anyone who was strong enough to help them. Even if they found some candidates, who would be willing to offend the Profound River Palace?

It was just like Nangong Wenyang had said, they could only hope to win the first two matches. However, this hope was very faint.

“Little Chen, can you fight the third match for us?”

Nangong Wentian turned to Jiang Chen and asked with a smile on his face.

“What?!”

Before Jiang Chen could answer, Nangong Wenyang instantly cried out in surprise. He threw a look of disbelief at Nangong Wentian, attempting to find out if this guy had consumed some weird medicine. Why did he ask a young man who wasn't even a Combat Soul warrior to fight the most important match, was there something wrong with his brain?

“Brother Wentian, are you serious? This match could decide the future of the Nangong family!”

Nangong Wenyang had no idea what Nangong Wentian was thinking.

“Can our family find someone who is more suitable?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

Nangong Wenyang was speechless. Indeed, their family were unable to find any suitable candidates to help them, but this young man in front of him didn't look suitable either.

“Little Chen, don't forget your purpose for coming here, you're here to help me, and my mind can only be at ease if you agree to fight this third match. Only with your help can the Nangong family win this battle!”

Nangong Wentian looked at Jiang Chen and expressed his confidence.

“Why do you have so much belief in me?”

Jiang Chen asked with a laugh.

“Of course, you're a man who can do anything! We still have two weeks, and I believe that's more than enough for you, right?”

Nangong Wentian responded with a smile. He was sincerely confident in Jiang Chen! This was a young man of miracles, no matter how difficult the situation he faced was, no one would ever be able to find any signs of panic on his faces. Furthermore, Nangong Wentian knew what Jiang Chen was capable of achieving. With just a Late Divine Core cultivation, Jiang Chen

was able to kill any Mid Combat Soul warrior, and now, he was only one step away from the Combat Soul realm. As long as he managed to break through to the Combat Soul realm within two weeks, he would be invincible, and even those Combat Soul warriors would be no match for him. With that, Nangong Wentian believed they would be able to win the third match with ease.

In fact, the strongest helper Nangong Yunzheng could find would be a Late Combat Soul warrior, as it was impossible for them to get the help of Combat King warriors, because those were mighty existences with extraordinary status, they wouldn't easily get themselves involved in this kind of issue.

“Alright, I'll do it for you.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. The reason he came to the Southern Continent was to help Nangong Wentian, and since his brother had asked him to help, there was no way Jiang Chen could reject his request. Furthermore, after absorbing the Dimensional Purplesand Crystal, Jiang Chen could clearly feel that two weeks were more than enough for him to break through to the Combat Soul realm.

“Fuck, he just doesn't know his own status and cultivation, how can he agree to this match?”

Nangong Wenyang was really unhappy with the decision and muttered to himself by the side. Although his voice wasn't loud, Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian could still hear him.

“Little Chen, just ignore Wenyang.”

Nangong Wentian said.

Jiang Chen responded with a faint smile. He wasn't bother by Nangong Wenyang's criticism, anyone would have the same doubts. Furthermore, judging from Nangong Wentian's feelings regarding Jiang Chen, it seemed like a childish decision to ask him to fight in the third match, as this match would decide the future of the Nangong family.

While flying past a desolate field where no one was in sight, a killing intent suddenly appeared in front of Jiang Chen and the group. It was so powerful that even the atmosphere around them started producing cracking sounds.

“Looks like someone is trying to stop us from going further.”

Jiang Chen said while a sneer emerged onto his face.

Right after he finished speaking, two men suddenly appeared in front of them. They were two old men were grey clothes, and they were both Early Combat Soul warriors. After these men arrived, they instantly locked down on Nangong Wentian and sealed the surrounding area with their auras, clearly showing their hostility.

“Jiejie, young master Wentian, we've been waiting for you here!”

One of the old men let out a vicious laugh as he threw his glance

onto Nangong Wentian, as if he had finally found the prey he had been waiting for.

“It’s you guys!”

A cold expression emerged onto Nangong Wentian’s face. He and Nangong Wenyang knew these two guys, they the guest elders working for Nangong Yunzheng; Zhang Feng and Li Gai.

“What are you two trying to do here?”

Nangong Wenyang shouted.

“What are we trying to do? Little man, do you think we came here to talk? We are here to kill!”

Zhang Feng responded with a sinister laugh. When facing these three Divine Core junior, he felt he could kill them easily like pinching some ants with his finger.

“Bastard, we’ve agreed to battle in two weeks, why are you guys still here trying to kill brother Wentian? Don’t you guys feel any shame?!”

Nangong Wenyang gnashed his teeth in anger.

“Shame? Who will know about this if you’re all dead? Furthermore, after Nangong Wentian dies, the Nangong family



will need a new young master, and at that point of time, young master Wenyen will be the Nangong family's new young master. According to ancestor's rule, we won't even need to fight it out in two weeks."

Zhang Feng replied with a laugh.

What he said caused a ghastly expression to emerge onto Nangong Wenyang's face. This was the Nangong family's rule, if young master Nangong Wentian died, they would have to appoint a new young master, and Nangong Wenyen would be the best candidate. At that point of time, the three matches would be unnecessary, as Nangong Yunzheng could just seize the Family Chief position.

"I didn't expect Nangong Yunzheng to be this shameless!"

Nangong Wenyang's body was trembling with extreme anger. No one could have expected Nangong Yunzheng to come up with such a despicable tactic, even the current Family Chief, Nangong Yunfan hadn't thought this a possibility, that's why he only sent Nangong Wenyang here to fetch Nangong Wentian. If not, he would have sent some strong warriors here to protect Nangong Wentian.

But who could have predicted this? Who could have known Nangong Yunzheng would deploy such dirty tricks, even after the three matches were guaranteed to happen.

Compared to the nervous and furious Nangong Wenyang,

Nangong Wentian was much calmer, because when judging from the current situation, these two old men weren't here to kill, but to die.

It was out of Nangong Wentian's expectations that his eldest uncle would actually send some mighty warriors to kill him. However, his opponents didn't know that he was followed by a true malefic, a brutal devil king whose name was capable of sending shivers down the spines of those in the Eastern Continent.

“You two shameless old dogs, do you really think you can kill me today? Haha, I'll give you two a chance, kneel down right now and kowtow before me until I feel satisfied. Then, I might consider leaving your dead bodies intact.”

Nangong Wentian suddenly became extremely aggressive. His baseless arrogant attitude instantly startled these two old men, even Nangong Wenyang was shocked by him. He had no idea what had happened to his cousin, there was no way they could run away from this dangerous situation, so why did he let out such a boastful speech? Was he not scared of death?

“Haha...”

Zhang Feng and Li Gai suddenly burst into loud laughter, as if they had just heard the funniest joke under the Heavens. It was to the point where tears almost burst out from their eyes.

“Young master Wentian, I didn't expect you to become a master of bluffing after have been gone from the Nangong family for so

long!”

Li Gai couldn't help but laugh.

“That's enough, cut the bullshit! Li Gai, kill them all, leave no survivors!”

Zhang Feng's expression turned cold in an instant, then he gave out his order. With that, Li Gai immediately walked toward Nangong Wentian with an extremely powerful killing intent. As for the young man in white beside his target, he didn't even take a look at him. A weak warrior like that wasn't worth his time.

“Little Chen, did you hear what that old dog just said?”

Nangong Wentian turned to Jiang Chen and asked with a big smile on his face.

“He said leave no survivors.”

Jiang Chen responded with a vicious smile. Then, he took a step forward, arriving in front of Li Gai.

“En?”

Li Gai was startled for a moment. Then, he unleashed a slap toward Jiang Chen and said, “What a moron. Go to hell!”

Bam!

A dull 'bam' sound was heard from between Jiang Chen and Li Gai, and within a split second later, Li Gai's body was sent flying back with a miserable shriek. While uncontrollably flying back, blood kept pouring out from his mouth.

Swoosh!

The next moment, Jiang Chen disappeared from where he stood, and with incredible speed, he caught up to Li Gai and delivered a powerful kick to the top of his head.

Crack!

The powerful kick instantly caused Li Gai's head to explode and turn into a blood mist. After that, his dead bod simply fell down from the sky.

“What?!”

Zhang Feng and Nangong Wenyang cried out in disbelief at the same time. The sudden change had struck both men, they were shocked by the brutal approach of this young man with unknown origins.

Jiang Chen was really fast, he was so fast that before they could react, Li Gai was already dead. Li Gai was absolutely no match for him, he didn't even have the ability to fight back.

“This, how can this be possible?”

Nangong Wenyang's mouth was wide open in shock. He just couldn't believe what he just saw. However, he finally realized how strong this young man Nangong Wentian brought back with him was. No wonder his cousin requested this young man to help in the third fight. When he recalled how he had ridiculed Jiang Chen, Nangong Wenyang couldn't help but feel embarrassed.

## Chapter 392 – Nangong City

---

The scene seemed to have completely pause, even the air felt like it was freezing up. Both Nangong Wenyang and Zhang Feng were terrified by this young man in front of them. Of course, their feelings weren't alike, Nangong Wenyang was terrified, mixed in with surprised, because Jiang Chen was after all on his sides. However, it was a completely different feeling for Zhang Feng.

Zhang Feng felt his soul trembling, he was struck by fear that came from the bottom of his heart. Just by looking at this young man in white, he could clearly feel death breathing down on his neck. He had never felt so close to death before in his entire life.

He knew how powerful Li Gai's cultivation was. Li Gai was an Early Combat Soul warrior, but even with that mighty cultivation, this young man had actually killed him with just a single strike. Zhang Feng kept examining this young man with his senses, confirming that he was truly only a Peak Divine Core warrior, not even a Combat Soul warrior.

However, with just his Peak Divine Core cultivation, this young man had actually killed an Early Combat Soul warrior like he was killing an ant by pinching it. If he didn't witness this by himself, he wouldn't have believed it at all.

“You, who are you?!”

Zhang Feng asked with a trembling voice. He was clearly scared now, as all his aggressiveness had disappeared.

Zhang Feng firmly believed he had never met this young man before, and no one had ever told him about this guy either. However, a genius capable of easily killing a Combat Soul warrior while only a Peak Divine Core warrior must definitely be someone famous. However, Zhang Feng just couldn't recall the Southern Continent ever having had such an incredible genius.

“Haha, old dog, are you still thinking of killing me now?”

Nangong Wentian burst into laughter. Even if they sent two Mid Combat Soul warrior here, Jiang Chen would still be able to kill them without any problems, let alone these two old Early Combat Soul men.

“Who I am is not important. Thing is, you've done something that can't be forgiven.”

Jiang Chen said with a calm voice as he shook his head. Indeed, his opponent had done something that couldn't be forgiven, as Jiang Chen would never let any of his enemies go, especially those enemies who have tried to kill him and his brothers.

“Fine, young man, I will remember you. What happened today will not just end here!”

After leaving behind some threatening words, Zhang Feng moved his body and transformed into a trail of light, and started flying into the far distance. He had clearly failed this mission, as even Nangong Yunzheng didn't expect such a young genius to be

following Nangong Wentian. Faced with such a situation, the only option left for him was to run away. Furthermore, Zhang Feng had a feeling that even if he couldn't defeat this young man, he could still easily escape with his Combat Soul cultivation.

If anyone told him that a Combat Soul warrior was unable to escape from a Divine Core warrior, he would think it was just bullshit.

But too bad, what he thought to be bullshit was actually true. Zhang Feng was really unlucky, as he had met Jiang Chen.

“Don't run away from me!”

Right as Nangong Wenyang felt that Zhang Feng was going to run away with ease, Jiang Chen suddenly shouted and stretched his arm forward, unleashing a gigantic blood red dragon claw that descended from the sky above.

The blood red dragon claw was fully covered with dragon scales, and looked like a real dragon's claw. It produced cracking sounds and a large amount of sparks as it went toward Zhang Feng.

Rumble!

The void surrounding them was trembling because of the attack. The True Dragon Palm transformed into an indestructible cage, instantly trapping Zhang Feng who was running for his life.



“What?!”

Zhang Feng cried out in shock as an extremely terrified expression emerged onto his face. Before he could unleash any strikes at the dragon claw, he immediately felt a powerful energy pressure bursting out from within the dragon claw, squeezing him from all directions like gigantic mountains.

Bam!

Even with his Early Combat Soul cultivation, there was no way he could withstand this tremendous force. He was instantly smashed down into the ground from about 30 meters into the air, causing him to throw up a mouthful of blood.

Crack! Crack!

The True Dragon Palm continued following Zhang Feng without disappearing, and soon covered his entire body once more and squeezed at him with a deadly force. Soon, his bones started producing cracking sounds, and his expression twisted.

Right at this moment, Zhang Feng could finally feel death breathing down his neck. He had never been so close to death before. In fact, this was the first time in his entire life he had truly feared death.

“No, don’t kill me!”

Zhang Feng was truly terrified, and immediately begged for his life. No one wanted to die, especially a mighty Combat Soul warrior like Zhang Feng. It hadn't been easy for him to cultivate to his current level.

Jiang Chen was a merciless man whenever he faced his enemies. Zhang Feng's words didn't touch him at all, he simply made the True Dragon Palm squeeze down tightly, and following the miserable shriek that came out of Zhang Feng's mouth, the old man was crushed into a blood mist, and died miserably.

After killing the two old men, Jiang Chen returned to his normal state. Or more correctly, his form hadn't changed at all. He fought with a hand placed behind his back and a faint smile covering his face. It was as if he had just killed two chickens, not humans. There were no fluctuations in his emotions.

“Little Chen, you're getting stronger with each passing day, I really want to thank you for helping me today! If not, your brother I would immediately upon arriving in the Southern Continent.”

Nangong Wentian said in a joking manner. However, it wasn't hard to tell how grateful he was from his words.

Nangong Wenyang on the other side was still immersed in extreme shock. Two Combat Soul warrior had just been killed in such an easy manner, what he thought to be a life threatening situation was nothing serious. This caused Nangong Wenyang to feel as if he was in a dream.

He kept staring at Jiang Chen who still wore a faint smile on his face. It was really difficult to imagine how this innocent looking young man could be so fierce and brutal when attacking.

Nangong Wenyang was not an idiot. From the calm expression Jiang Chen portrayed when killing the two men, he knew that this young man in his mid-teens had gotten used to slaughtering.

Nangong Wenyang took a deep breath and walked up to Jiang Chen. He cupped his fist and said, “Wenyang failed to recognize Mt. Tai, I’m sorry for offending brother Jiang with my harsh words just now. I hope brother Jiang can forgive me.”

Nangong Wenyang felt really sorry for what he had previously said, he even wished he could deliver himself a slap, as he had eyes but failed to see the mighty person standing in front of him. This young man was an amazing genius, but he had actually looked down on him. He was truly feeling ashamed for how he had behaved.

“Don’t mention it, brother Wenyang, we’re on the same team.”

Jiang Chen patted Nangong Wenyang on the shoulder.

Jiang Chen’s straightforward character made a bright smile blossom onto Nangong Wenyang’s face. His impression toward Jiang Chen once again changed tremendously, it had now changed from a negative impression to an extremely positive one. Jiang Chen not only saved Nangong Wentian’s life, he saved his as well. If not for Jiang Chen, those two old men would definitely kill him,

as well as the white eagle after killing Nangong Wentian.

However, although Jiang Chen had showed his incredible strength, Nangong Wenyang still didn't think he was fit to represent the Nangong family in the third fight, because the mighty warrior Nangong Yunzheng had hired would definitely be much stronger than Zhang Feng.

Of course, Nangong Wenyang didn't reject the idea either. He was not a person who could make that decision. In the end, everything would be decided by the Nangong family's leaders.

After getting rid of the obstacle, the three men continued their journey toward the Nangong family at high speed. After an entire day and night of flying, they had finally returned to the Nangong family. This time, no one had stopped them.

Nangong City!

It was a huge and majestic city, and it covered a circumference of over 500 kilometers. Looking at it from the outside, the city was filled with tall towers and buildings, as well as beautifully decorated palaces that gave a touch of magnificence to the entire Nangong City. No doubt, this city could be considered one of the best cities in the Southern Continent.

Actually, a long time ago, the city's name wasn't the Nangong City. It was only renamed to Nangong City after the Nangong family gained power. Within the city, the Nangong Family was the ultimate ruler. Put it this way, if the Nangong family casually

farted, the entire city would be in turmoil for three days.

There were many powers residing within Nangong City, but all of them were under the Nangong family's control. As long as the Nangong family gave out an order, no one would dare disobey.

The three men quietly descended outside the Nangong family's north gate. The white eagle that had been following this group had gone its separate way upon entering the city.

“Little Chen, Nangong City is in a restless state right now. After the Nangong family was divided by my eldest uncle, the Nangong City was split into two parts. The people near the south gate are under his control, while the north gate is still under the Nangong family's control. However, since we are now in a critical period, for safety purposes, it's better to stay low profile and walk into the city. Our priority is to return home.”

Nangong Wentian explained.

“En.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. In fact, right as they arrived at the city, he had sensed a restless atmosphere lingering within the city. This grand and majestic city was not as peaceful as it seemed, the undercurrent was strong.

“You three, stop there! You have to pay the entrance fee.”

Six tall and muscular men stood on both sides of the north gate. When they saw Jiang Chen and the other two, they immediately stopped them.

“Are you blind?!”

Nangong Wenyang walked forward and shouted at the leader of the guards. Only now did the guard see who the man who shouted at him was. He was instantly frightened, and kneeled down onto the ground.

“I didn’t know it was young master Wenyang, please forgive me for my ignorance!”

The guard’s body was covered in sweat. He was just the leader of a small group of Nangong family guards. Compared to Nangong Wenyang who was one of the family geniuses; he was nothing!

“Hmph!”

Nangong Wenyang coldly harrumphed. After that, he made a welcoming gesture toward Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian, then led both men into the city. All the guards were kneeling down with heads lowered, so none of them were able to see that Nangong Wentian was one of the men that came. If not, they might even be terrified, because the Nangong family’s young master was an existence who could do anything he wanted in Nangong City.

“Little Chen, those are the Nangong family’s guards. You see, not

only is Nangong City a prosperous city, with our protection, it is also a really safe place to live. Those who live inside the city doesn't have to pay entrance fees, but for outsiders, they have to pay a certain amount if they wanted to visit the city.”

Nangong Wentian explained, in Nangong City, the Nangong family was the true emperor, no one could disobey their rules.

# Chapter 393 – Nangong Yunfan

---

“Your family is really rich!”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but comment. Putting aside all the other incomes, just the entrance fee they collect daily was a figure large enough to drop many jaws. Even if they collected just one Mortal Restoration Pill per person, the amount was still incredible.

As one of the most prosperous cities in the Southern Continent, countless people visited Nangong City on a daily basis, and those cultivators who could live in this city were all people with status and mighty strength. It was really difficult for normal people to find a place to stay in Nangong City.

The Nangong family's existence allowed Jiang Chen to witness what a local despot looked like. A humongous family like this was never short on resources. Because they had incredible strength, because they were the ultimate ruler of this region, they decided what worked here.

“Of course, no one dares refuse to pay the entrance fee. Let's hurry up and return to my home.”

Nangong Wentian sped up his pace. The three men were running with great speed through Nangong City's main street, bringing up strong wind wherever they passed. Many people could feel a strong wind blowing toward them, causing them to stagger. They were barely able to see some men passing by, but since they were so fast, no one could really see who they were.



The Nangong family's residence was located in the center of Nangong City. It was a huge manor that covered over 50 kilometers of land. Just this Nangong family manor alone occupied nearly ten percent of the entire Nangong City.

Within the Nangong family's residence, tall towers and finely built palaces could be seen everywhere. The entire place was filled with a luxurious and majestic atmosphere. This was a forbidden land within Nangong City, and no ordinary men were allowed to enter this place.

But now, the atmosphere within the biggest manor in Nangong City was pretty gloomy, because this Nangong family was no longer the same Nangong family. Since Nangong Yunzheng had left and divided the family, the overall strength had weakened, and there were constant internal conflicts every now and then. The upcoming conflict was even going to decide the future and survival of this huge family.

The news about the three duels proposed by Nangong Yunzheng had spread everywhere. Right now, the entire Nangong family was in low spirits. They were all waiting for their young master's return, because for this duel, their young master was going to participate in the most important match.

"Sigh... I wonder where the young master went, and it's taking him so long to return."

"Precisely! The duel is coming soon, and if young master can't

return in time, Nangong Yunzheng is going to seize the Family Chief position with a righteous reason.”

“Perhaps we’re still going to lose even with his return. The Nangong family is facing a real threat this time, Nangong Wenyen has even broken through to the Combat Soul realm. Unless young master has also broken through, he won’t be able to fight Nangong Wenyen.”

.....

Everyone within the Nangong family were talking about their young master. Many of them still had no idea that the Profound River Palace was involved in this internal conflict, but since Nangong Yunzheng had made so much noise this time, he was clearly prepared and committed to get what he wanted. This made them all worry about the future of the Nangong family.

“Look, I think it’s the young master!”

Suddenly, someone shouted out in surprise. Many people immediately raised their heads and looked into the sky above the Nangong family. What they saw was three men flying toward the Nangong family’s main palace. One of them was Nangong Wenyang, whom many of the people here were familiar with. The man in the center was a young man in green clothes, he had a handsome face and a majestic body. Even if this man had been away from their family for quite a long time, they could still recognize him in an instant, because he was their young man, whom everyone had been waiting for.

“It really is young master! He came here in time! But, who is that young man in white clothes next to him? Why have I never seen that guy before?”

“I’m sure he’s young master’s friend, he must have met this guy when he was out traveling. But, this guy’s cultivation isn’t really that strong.”

“True, but young master’s cultivation is only at the Peak Divine Core realm, he hasn’t broken through to the Combat Soul realm yet. We are only fourteen days away from the duel, and if young master can’t break through to the Combat Soul realm by then, he will be no match for Nangong Wenyan!”

“However, it’s really difficult to break through to the Combat Soul realm in such a short period of time. Sigh... I believe our hope is really small right now.”

.....

Nangong Wentian’s return raised the spirits of many people, but at the same time, his cultivation and strength made them downhearted. Even though they had expected this possibility, it still struck them with disappointment. Many of them had lost their hope in the match that was going to be fought in fourteen days.

Without being interrupted by anyone, Nangong Wentian arrived at the Nangong family’s main palace. Right now, there were

dozens of people gathered within the palace. All of them were the Nangong family's mighty warriors, and the weakest warriors qualified to participate were Early Combat Soul warriors.

“Dad, I’m back!”

Upon entering the palace, Nangong Wentian immediately called out to a man with a tall and muscular body who sat at the front. This man looked to be in his forties, and he wore an embroidered robe. His hair was thick and unruly, and his eyes were sharp, just like his face, giving him an overbearing look.

This overbearing man was none other than the current Family Chief, Nangong Yunfan!

“Wentian, you’re finally back!”

Nangong Yunfan's face lit up when he saw his son, while the tense expressions on the faces of the others became a little more relaxed. Regardless of matters, their young master had finally returned.

“Wentian, this is the Nangong family's most important place, how could you bring a stranger here?”

An old man at the Mid Combat Soul realm suddenly asked. This old man look about 80 years old, and although he had a thin body, the aura leaking out from his body was really terrifying. His name was Liang Zhui, he was an old man who had followed Nangong

Wentian's grandfather while he was building the Nangong family empire. Although his surname wasn't Nangong, he still had a really high position in the Nangong family. Even Nangong Yunfan had to give him face.

“Dad, uncles and elders, let me introduce you. This is my brother, I met him while I was traveling outside. His name is Jiang Chen, and he came here to help us.”

Nangong Wentian introduced Jiang Chen to them.

“Help us? Wentian, are you joking with me? Uncle Tu knows you've enjoyed joking around since you were young.”

Another old man said in a joking manner. This was an old man with grey hair and beard, and he sat there with a courtly appearance. His seat was parallel to Nangong Yunfan's seat, and from this, one could tell what kind of position he held in the Nangong family. Furthermore, this old man had a really strong cultivation, he was a Late Combat Soul warrior.

“His name is Tu Yi, and his nickname is Thousandhand Butcher. He's one of the old men who followed my grandfather when he was building his empire, this man has a very important position in our family.”

Nangong Wentian told Jiang Chen about this old man through his Divine Sense.

Jiang Chen quietly nodded his head. Although this man's surname wasn't Nangong, it was just like Nangong Wentian had said, his position in the family was really supreme.

“Wentian, you asked a Divine Core junior for help, don't you think this is too childish? We can easily find thousands of men like him in our family.”

Liang Zhui said. His words carried a sarcastic tone. Actually, it wasn't only him, all the other men at the scene were smiling at the same time. Clearly, they too felt that Nangong Wentian getting such a weak helper was a childish action.

Seeing what was happening, Jiang Chen couldn't help but let out a sigh, as he had immediately become the center of attention upon arriving. He had no clue why this group of old men were behaving like this, their young master had just returned, so they should at least ask their young master about his journey. Why would they simply point their fingers at an outsider?

“Family Chief, elders, please don't look down on brother Jiang Chen. During our way back, if not for brother Jiang Chen, brother Wentian and I would be dead meat by now.”

Nangong Wenyang quickly voiced out. Jiang Chen had saved his life, so he had to stand out and speak for him. Furthermore, Jiang Chen was a man with true abilities, not someone who possessed an unearned reputation.

“What happened?”

Nangong Yunfan's expression changed, and he turned to Nangong Wenyang and asked.

“Family Chief, I think you know Zhang Feng and Li Gai, they both work for eldest uncle. After I fetched brother Wentian, we were stopped by them on our way back, they were sent by eldest uncle to kill brother Wentian, because as long as he's dead, they can just cancel the duel.”

Nangong Wenyang dared not hide anything, and told them everything he knew.

“What?!”

His words caused everyone in the palace to cry out in surprise.

“Despicable! This Nangong Yunzheng is a truly despicable man! He is also from the Nangong family, so why does he use such despicable tactics?!”

“That bastard! We've already agreed to the duel, so why does he still want to deploy such an evil plot?! If Wentian is dead, we'd have to appoint a new young master, and only Nangong Wenyang is eligible to be the next young master. What a plan, what a vicious plan!”

“Looks like we were being too careless, we should have sent stronger warriors to fetch Wentian. But, we just didn't expect

Nangong Yunzheng to use such a despicable approach!”

.....

Everyone in the palace were really made, they were furious because of what Nangong Yunzheng had done. They had already agreed to the three matches, but he still wanted to assassinate their young master! This was an incredibly dirty trick!

“And then?”

Nangong Yunfan continued his question. At the same time, he threw his glance over at Jiang Chen, as if he had guessed something.

“It was brother Jiang Chen who saved us, he killed Zhang Feng and Li Gai.”

Nangong Wenyang told everyone what happened.

“What you’re saying is, with his Late Divine Core cultivation, he killed those two Early Combat Soul warrior?”

Two bright beams shot out from Liang Zhui’s eyes. He wasn’t alone, the way everyone looked at Jiang Chen changed as well. If Jiang Chen really killed both Combat Soul warriors with his mere Divine Core cultivation, it would be an amazing achievement! Because, he didn’t only just defeat them, he killed them!



After breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, even if they were no match for their opponent, they should still be able to run away with ease. However, Zhang Feng and Li Gai didn't have the chance to do so, and they were killed by a Divine Core junior. In fact, this didn't mean that they were weak, it simply meant that this young man was incredibly strong.

Nangong Yunfan waved his sleeve, and within a split second, three big chair appeared in the palace.

“Dear nephew Jiang Chen, please have a seat.”

Nangong Yunfan stretched his arm out and performed a welcoming gesture. In the Nangong family's main palace, being able to receive a seat given by the Family Chief himself was a great honor.

## Chapter 394 – Guidance

---

Nangong Yunfan's attitude toward Jiang Chen had changed, and he even gave Jiang Chen treatment reserved only for special guests. However, no one felt strange about this, because they had no doubts about Nangong Wentian and Nangong Wenyang's words. This man was a genius who had killed two Combat Soul warriors with just a Divine Core cultivation. Just this amazing talent alone made it worth it for the Nangong family to try and rope him in.

More importantly, for Nangong Yunfan, Jiang Chen had saved his son's life. Just this alone was more than enough for him to change his attitude.

“Thank you, Chief Nangong.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Nangong Yunfan, showing no signs of being nervous, then sat down on the chair together with Nangong Wentian and Wenyang with a calm look and a faint smile on his face.

Just this attitude alone made many people silently nod their heads. This place was the most important place within the Nangong family, and even the geniuses from their own family would be overawed when seeing so many leaders gathered together. However, Jiang Chen had a perfectly calm attitude, it was an indifferent behavior that came from his soul, one that was impossible to face.

“Jiang Chen, you’ve saved my son, and that means that I, Nangong Yunfan owe you a huge debt of gratitude. Wentian, I think Wenyang has told you about the situation we’re facing right now, we only have fourteen days left before the duel, and with your current cultivation you’re no match for Nangong Wenyen.”

Nangong Yunfan switched the conversation to the most important topic; the major situation the Nangong family was facing right now, the duel that was going to be held in fourteen days, as this duel would decide the survival of the Nangong family. It wasn’t only Nangong Yunfan, the hearts of everyone here was filled with worry, even more so upon finding out about Nangong Wentian’s current cultivation level.

“According to a trusted source, that bastard Nangong Yunzheng has roped in the Profound River Palace, and it’s highly possible that he has leaked the family secret to them, and used that as a bait to get the Profound River Palace involved.”

Thousandhand Butcher Tu Yi said with a frown on his face.

“In order to seize the Family Chief position, Nangong Yunzheng didn’t even hesitate to break the rule set down by brother Nangong, what a bloody fool!”

Liang Zhui was a hot tempered man. As one of the men who followed Nangong Wentian’s grandfather, he treated the Nangong family as his very own, just like Tu Yi. They both treated all descendants of the Nangong family as their own grandchildren, and they had even helped raised Nangong Wentian when he was young. They had given everything to this family, and their big

brother was now gone; they now had the responsibility to protect the Nangong family's empire, and they couldn't just let it crumble down in front of them.

“The hundred year old Nangong family, the glory left behind by my dad, I can never allow it to fall into the hands of some bad guys. Therefore, we must win this battle!”

Nangong Yunfan clenched his fist tightly. If the Nangong family empire was destroyed while in his hands, he would feel shameful toward his father even in death.

“We have agreed to the three matches with Nangong Yunzheng. Wentian will fight with Wenyan, Yunfan will fight with Yunzheng; these two matches have been confirmed. As for the third match, I'm sure Nangong Yunzheng will invite a great warrior from the Profound River Palace, but for us, we still haven't been able to find any suitable helper.”

Someone said.

“Dad, just let Little Chen represent our family in the third match.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Nonsense!”

Nangong Yunfan scolded.

“Wentian, this is a battle that will decide the survival of our Nangong family, and although Jiang Chen possesses some amazing abilities, I don’t think he’s fit to fight in the third match. With Nangong Yunzheng’s character, I’m sure will invite a Late Combat Soul warrior. Don’t you think it’s nonsense to make Jiang Chen represent us?”

Liang Zhui added as all the other men were shaking their heads. Their opinions regarding this was the same, Nangong Wentian’s suggestion was simply childish. Asking a young Divine Core warrior to represent the Nangong family in the duel, this would just make their opponents roll down on the floor in laughter.

But as Nangong Wentian was about to say something else, he heard Jiang Chen tell him via his Divine Sense, “Brother Nan, say no more.”

Hearing what Jiang Chen told him, although Nangong Wentian still had an unsatisfied expression on his face, he stopped speaking. The current situation was clear, with the cultivation Jiang Chen had now, it was impossible for him to convince these leaders to let Jiang Chen represent their family.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen decided to wait and see how things went, and only planned to make a decision before the last moment.

“Nangong Yunzheng said we can only invite an outsider to help us. In my opinion, we can let Elder Tu participate in this match. Although Elder Tu is a respectable Elder of our family, his surname

isn't Nangong, so I'm sure we won't be breaking any rules."

"That's right, Elder Tu is a formidable warrior with a Late Combat Soul cultivation, and if Elder Tu can represent us, I'm sure we'll have hope!"

Someone suggested, causing everyone to throw their glances at Elder Tu.

"I'm just an old man prepared to give everything I got to the Nangong family, but if we can come up with this idea, I'm sure Nangong Yunzheng has expected this as well. There are many mighty warriors in the Profound River Palace, and perhaps even I will have a difficult time defeating the man Nangong Yunzheng has invited."

Tu Yi shook his head. With the nickname 'Thousandhand Butcher', he was clearly a mighty and a brutal man. However, since this match concerned the Nangong family's survival, he too had to be very careful when making a decision.

Although Tu Yi was a formidable warrior, he hadn't reached the stage where he could defeat every single warrior under the Combat King realm. Compared to Nangong Yunfan, his overall combat strength was much lower. In fact, the Profound River Palace was a place full of mighty warriors, and there were many of them who could easily defeat him. If the Profound River Palace was truly committed to help Nangong Yunzheng, they might even send one of those warriors who could easily defeat Tu Yi.

“Uncle Tu, if we are unable to find any better candidates, I hope you can help us.”

Nangong Yunfan cupped his fist toward Tu Yi as he spoke. Judging from the current situation, Tu Yi was the best candidate for the third match. At least, he would fight with all his effort.

“Rest assured, Yunfan, I’ll protect the Nangong family even at the cost of my own life! However, if we can win the first two matches, which would be the best scenario, we’ll be able to skip the third.”

Tu Yi said.

“My eldest brother and I are about equal in strength, and it isn’t easy for us to defeat each other. However, for the sake of our foundation, I will fight with everything I got! And, it won’t be easy for him to defeat me either! The key lies with Wentian now.”

Nangong Yunfan said. At this moment, everyone threw their glances at Nangong Wentian. All three matches were equally important, but Nangong Wentian’s match was the key.

“It’s really difficult, although Wentian has amazing talent, he’s only at the Peak Divine Core realm. Both he and Nangong Wenyan grew up together and received similar amounts of resources, and their talents are nearly identical. Now, Nangong Wenyan has broken through to the Combat Soul realm, and unless Wentian can break through to the Combat Soul realm before the battle, he will already have lost without the need to fight.”

Liang Zhui let out a long sigh as he spoke. He wasn't looking down on Nangong Wentian, but it was a fact that there was a gap between the young men.

Breaking through to the Combat Soul realm from the Divine Core realm in fourteen days, it was something nearly impossible to do. Even if he was given precious pills, it would still be hard for him to break through this huge gap. Furthermore, breaking through with the help of an external factor would give Nangong Wentian's foundation a serious threat. Also, with the help of pills, his cultivation wouldn't be stable, and then he would definitely be no match for Nangong Wenyan.

“Wentian, how are you progressing with your Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill?”

Nangong Yunfan asked. Nangong Wentian had found this skill himself, it was not a skill that came from the Nangong family.

“I have reached a bottleneck, and I plan to enter secluded cultivation right away. Once I've broken through this bottleneck, I'll be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm with ease.”

Nangong Wentian answered.

“En, Wentian, don't push yourself too hard. The correct way to cultivate is to progress in an orderly way, step by step. Sometimes, it will be harder to break through the more you desire it. Just cultivate with peace of mind. You can leave now.”



Nangong Yunfan said with a soft voice. Although he had to face huge pressure right now, he didn't want to pass this pressure to his own son. His wish for Nangong Wentian to break through to the Combat Soul realm before the duel was stronger than that of anyone else, but he also knew pressuring his son would far from help him in breaking through.

“Dad, don't worry, I won't disappoint you.”

Nangong Wentian stood up and bowed toward everyone in the palace, then turned around and left.

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Nangong Yunfan, then quickly followed after Nangong Wentian.

Sigh!

A lot of sighs could be heard from the palace. Actually, all these leaders knew one thing; by having such strength at his age, Nangong Wentian was in fact one of the elite amongst the younger generation. However, it just wasn't enough for this situation.

Actually, Nangong Yunfan knew more than anyone else that the reason why Nangong Wentian still hadn't broken through to the Combat Soul realm was because of the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill. This was indeed a powerful skill, but at the same time, it was really difficult to cultivate. The further Nangong Wentian cultivated this skill, the tougher it became, and he could be stuck in a bottleneck for a long time.

If Nangong Wentian was cultivating those ordinary skills from the Nangong family, with his talent, he would already have broken through to the Combat Soul realm, and would be much stronger than Nangong Wenyan.

But both Nangong Wentian and Nangong Yunfan knew that when cultivating the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, Nangong Wentian's future achievements would be extremely amazing. It was a skill that could make him super strong in an advanced stage, and judging from the current situation, Nangong Yunfan could only hope that Nangong Wentian could break through during these couple of days.

A quiet courtyard filled with beautiful flowers, this was the place where Nangong Wentian lived. Although he hadn't been here for quite some time, the furniture and decorations were still the same. Every day, servants would come here to make sure the place stayed clean.

Sigh!

Nangong Wentian stood right in the middle of the courtyard and let out a heavy sigh. He knew what his problem was, but it wasn't easy for him to break through his current bottleneck.

“Brother Nan, circulate your Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, let me see your bottleneck.”

Jiang Chen suddenly said.

Jiang Chen's words caused Nangong Wentian's eyes to light up. Only now did he realize that this man next to him was a man who could achieve everything. Although the man was only about 17 years old, he was a man who was an expert at everything. Cultivation skills, combat skills, formations, alchemy, combat weapons... it seemed like there was nothing this man hadn't mastered.

This was a truly peerless monster. With Jiang Chen's experience, perhaps he could provide some help to Nangong Wentian.

# Chapter 395 – Giving A Helping Hand

---

“Alright.”

Nangong Wentian instantly nodded his head. He wouldn't hesitate to expose all his secrets to Jiang Chen, because he had absolute trust in Jiang Chen. He also knew that Jiang Chen wouldn't steal this skill from him, as the skill Jiang Chen was cultivating was much stronger than his.

In an instant, Nangong Wentian started adjusting his form, then he unleashed powerful Yuan energy from his body. His clothes and hair started fluttering, and a thin layer of golden light covered his body.

Following the appearance of the golden light, Nangong Wentian's energy started changing. Initially, the golden light was swift and fierce, but slowly, his aura started becoming heavy as a gigantic mountain. As his energy rose, the entire courtyard started shaking because of the tremendous energy.

After that, an ancient like aura started leaking out from his body. Jiang Chen looked at Nangong Wentian in an examining manner without blinking his eyes.

“What a mystical skill, it actually carries an ancient aura, as if it's inherited from the ancient era. Looks like Brother Nan has found something really amazing. This skill has a lot of power, and it can constantly increase his aptitude, giving him a limitless future!”

Jiang Chen kept praising this skill inwardly. Originally, he thought that Nangong Wentian's cultivation skill was just an ordinary skill in the Saint Origin Realm, and that it was at most a high ranked skill. However, judging from what he was sensing now, it was an extraordinary skill.

“Brother Nan, unleash your skill completely, don't hold anything back; show me all your energy!”

Jiang Chen shouted. His voice was like a loud clap of thunder hitting Nangong Wentian's ear, causing Nangong Wentian's body to instantly sway.

“Understood!”

Nangong Wentian dared not hesitate, and replied. He had no idea that what was happening to him right now was something that many people dreamt about; receiving guidance from the once greatest Saint underneath the Heavens. This was simply the luckiest day of his life so far.

Buzz...

Nangong Wentian's energy started trembling, and the golden light leaking out from his body had become thicker, as if it was made from pure gold and had completely solidified.

Aowuu!

Nangong Wentian finally unleashed his energy to the highest stage he possible could. A deep roar resounded from his body, and at the same time, a 30 meter tall golden elephant appeared behind his back. Although it was just an illusionary image, it seemed extremely mystical in Jiang Chen's eyes.

The body of this illusionary elephant was fully covered with golden scales, and sharp spikes could be found all over its long trunk. It had two long tusks that looked like a pair of mighty blades, and it looked extremely sharp and very ancient. The elephant's eyes were cloudy, yet dignified, and at the same time, it carried an aura of a supreme king, causing it to resemble a natural king and give anyone a desire to submit to its superiority.

“This is the Ancient Barbarian Elephant, the king of all elephants! I never thought Brother Nan's Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill could visualize this Ancient Barbaric Elephants, this is amazing!”

Jiang Chen's experience was incredibly vast, so he was able to recognize this Ancient Barbarian Elephant with a single look. It was a true king beast, a supreme existence.

“But too bad, Brother Nan has only comprehended the surface of this Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, and he can only visualize the Ancient Barbarian Elephant's image which only gives his strength a heavy feeling, but he hasn't focused on the Ancient Barbarian Elephant's king aura, this is where his bottleneck lies.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. With just one look, he had found what Nangong Wentian's bottleneck was.

“Brother Nan, you can retract your energy.”

Jiang Chen said.

Nangong Wentian’s body swayed a little. In an instant, he was like a leaking balloon as he retracted all his energy.

“Little Chen, when I’m cultivating the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, I feel as if my strength has reached its maximum level, and it’s really difficult for me to increase it. I am completely stuck at this bottleneck, and have no idea how I can break through it.”

Nangong Wentian said with a frown on his face.

“Brother Nan, your condition is perfectly normal, it’s because you haven’t found the true key to cultivating this Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill.”

Jiang Chen explained.

“The true key?”

Nangong Wentian was startled.

“That’s right. I saw the image of the elephant you visualized just now, it is actually the true Ancient Barbaric Elephant. This ancient

elephant is the king of all elephants, a born king beast. When you're cultivate this skill, you only focus on the strength of ten thousand elephants, but you've never tried to study the energy of the elephant. This energy is a kingly energy, an aura that comes from the source, and it is also the essence of the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill. Thus, when you continue cultivating this skill, you just can't focus on the strength that it gives you, you need to feel its inner source, try to feel the Ancient Barbaric Elephant's kingly energy. Once you find that energy, you will be able to completely visualize the image of the Ancient Barbaric Elephant, and with that, you will be able to break through this bottleneck. Once you've done so, this skill will evolve, and the benefits you'll receive are beyond your current imagination."

Jiang Chen continued his explanation.

"Focus on the source energy."

Nangong Wentian was startled for a moment. He had been cultivating the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill for so long, and all this time, he had only thought about it as a skill that gave him tremendous strength. He had never thought about the inner parts of this skill. Now, with Jiang Chen's guidance, he suddenly saw the light, and felt enlightened.

"Haha, I understand now! I never truly understood the essence of this Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, that's how it was! Little Chen, I never knew you had such good observation! What you told me just went straight to the heart of my bottleneck, I think I've found a way to break through now!"



Nangong Wentian heartily laughed out as immense excitement filled his face. The feeling of finding a way to break through a big bottleneck was really rare, so he couldn't control his excitement.

“I believe you can do it.”

Jiang Chen patted Nangong Wentian on the shoulder.

“Little Chen, there isn't much time left for us, I need to enter secluded cultivation right away and try my best to break through this bottleneck before the duel begins, and become a Combat Soul warrior. You can just rest in the Nangong family during this period of time. As the Nangong family's special guest, you can go anywhere you like within our family grounds.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“No, staying here will have no benefits for me, I need to go out and travel around. While you're here cultivating to break through to the Combat Soul realm, I too have to find a way to break through to this realm.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. The Southern Continent was a land filled with demon beasts, it was a wild land compared to the Eastern Continent. He could use these couple of days for training, and find a way to break through to the Combat Soul realm. He didn't come here for sightseeing, and putting aside the critical situation the Nangong family was now facing, he still had a bunch of problems back in the Eastern Continent he needed to solve, and those problems pressured Jiang Chen to improve his cultivation as

soon as possible.

“Alright. I know you’re a person who can’t sit quietly. Besides, with your strength, you can go anywhere in the Southern Continent without fear.”

Nangong Wentian nodded his head. He wasn’t surprise by Jiang Chen’s decision. If Jiang Chen truly decided to stay back in the Nangong family, he would be truly surprised.

“En, let’s delay no more, I’ll leave right now. Let’s see which of us will break through to the Combat Soul realm first.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile

“I think I’ll be the first. I now know the correct way to cultivate the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, and it won’t take long before I break through. You better break through to the Combat Soul realm as well, otherwise you won’t be able to help me with the duel.”

Nangong Wentian said. Although Jiang Chen had formidable strength, he still couldn’t represent the Nangong family in the third match unless he broke through to the Combat Soul realm.

After that, Jiang Chen simply started flying in a random direction, immediately leaving the Nangong family.

Jiang Chen was enjoying the Southern Continent’s scenery along

his way. Honestly, the land here was much more beautiful than the Eastern Continent's land. Soon, half a day passed by. Jiang Chen had approached a seemingly boundless stretch of magnificent mountains. It was a mountain range that covered more than 5,000 kilometers of land, and countless mountain peaks were in sight.

There were a few tribes residing in this mountain range. With Jiang Chen's Divine Sense, he could easily see the structure and buildings of the nearest tribe. It was a classical tribe.

“En? Something is happening there.”

With his sensitive Divine Sense, Jiang Chen looked over toward a tribe not far away from him. After that, he moved his body and flew toward that tribe.

Lianyun Castle was the name of this tribe. Right at this moment, sounds of crying and yelling resounded outside the tribe.

“No! We don't want to go to Demon Palace!”

“Tribe Chief, please save us, we don't want to accompany those demon beasts!”

“I'd rather die!”

Three young girls were crying their lungs out. All of them looked to be in their mid-teens, they had delicate faces and were considered beautiful. Right now, they were surrounded by a couple of

men dressed in black robes. Amongst these black robed men, three of them were tightly holding onto these girls, and no matter how hard these girls struggled, they were unable to escape from them.

Strong demonic aura was leaking out from these men. They were clearly not humans, but demon beasts who had transformed into human shape.

Right now, a group of men from Lianyun Castle stood opposite of these men in black. All of them were angrily gnashing their teeth. Furious expressions filled their faces, because they could only watch their people being brought away by these evil men with no ability whatsoever to stop them. It hard for ordinary people to understand how they felt right now.

“Demon Palace, don’t go too far! For the past two years, we have given you many resources, so why are you still taking our people away?”

A man standing at the forefront said. He was a fat man in his fifties, and the Lianyun Castle Tribe Chief. Right now, both his eyes had turned red, and he was clenching his fists tightly. As these peoples’ Tribe Chief, watching his people being taken away by these evil beasts brought him an unbearable feeling.

“Jiejie, old man, tomorrow is our third master’s birthday! Being able to sleep with him is these three girls’ honor, and if our third master is happy with their service, he might return some of the treasures you gave us last time! This is good news for you all, so why are you still crying here?!”

The leader of the men dressed in black said with an evil smile on his face.

“No! I don’t want to sleep with that demon, I would rather die!”

Hearing that she was going to sleep with their third master, one of the three girls immediately cried out.

“Shut up!”

That man in black gave the crying girl a slap.

“Bastard, let go of my sister!”

Right at this moment, a young man jumped out from the crowd of people from Lianyun Castle while carrying a longsword in his hand. Although he looked quite young, he was actually a Late Heavenly Core warrior.

This young man’s eyes had turned red, and it looked like he was about to lose his control and attack these men dressed in black.

# Chapter 396 – Demon Palace

---

“Lian Ming, come back!”

Seeing this, Tribe Chief Lian Haolong immediately shouted out loudly. Although Lian Ming was a Late Heavenly Core warrior, there were a few Divine Core warriors among their opponents. Jumping into the enemy group with intentions to attack them was not any different from courting death.

But too bad, Lian Ming had gone mad, so he didn't hear his Tribe Chief's words. Since his sister had been captured by them, he had completely lost his mind. The Demon Palace's third Palace Master was an infamous sex maniac, and if these three young girls were sent to him, their lives would end for sure, as this third master would definitely torture them, eventually killing them.

“What a reckless guy!”

The leader of the men in black waved his hand, unleashing an invisible force which crushed onto Lian Ming's body like a powerful hammer.

Bang!

Puh!

Lian Ming who was dashing forward was instantly knocked back by the force, and was forced to cough out a huge amount of blood

on his way back. Luckily, he was stopped by the Tribe Chief.

“Chief, I beg you, please save my sister!”

Lian Ming didn't pay any attention to his own injuries, he simply grabbed the Tribe Chief's arm tightly and begged him for help. He knew the strongest opponent here was only a Mid Divine Core warrior, whereas his Tribe Chief was a Late Divine Core warrior. His sister would be saved if his Tribe Chief could stand out and help.

“Lian Ming, I wish I could.”

Lian Haolong's body was trembling violently. His desire to kill these damn demon beasts was much stronger than that of anybody else, but he just couldn't do it. As the Tribe Chief, he had to consider all the people in Lianyun Castle, and if he killed these demon beasts, it wouldn't take long before the entire tribe was slaughtered by the Demon Palace.

“Old man, watch your own people! I was showing mercy by not killing him just now, but if Lianyun Castle continues disobeying the will of the Demon Palace, we will clean up your entire tribe, killing every single living being without any mercy!”

The leader of the men in black said in a vicious manner. In his eyes, he didn't need to take these humans in front of him seriously. For them, humans were just their prey, and these girls were the toys that they could use to release their lust. If they really wanted to do it, they could easily slaughter every single living human in

this mountain range.

“Let’s go.”

The leader waved his hand and prepared to leave. The three girls were still screaming and crying, and their faces were still filled with despair. On the other side, the people from Lianyun Castle couldn’t help but tremble. The feeling they got when witnessing their own people being taken away by these foul monsters was really ugly. After the Demon Palace took control of this mountain range, they were forced to become tame sheep just waiting to be slaughtered. There was no way they could resist this ill fate.

“Leave those three girls behind.”

A ghostly voice could suddenly be heard from the scene behind them. After that, a young man in white appeared and blocked those men in black.

The sudden appearance of the young man startled everyone for a moment, as he had appeared in an empty place. There was nothing there, and that meant that this young man had appeared out of nowhere. No one had seen how he did so.

“Young man, who are you?!”

The leader of the men in black shouted.

“Let me repeat myself, leave those three girls behind.”



The young man in white threw his gaze onto the ground and spoke with an indifferent voice. He didn't raise his head to look at those demon beasts who had transformed into human shapes, as if they weren't worth his glance at all.

“Where did this ignorant kid come from? You're courting death!”

A Heavenly Core demon unleashed his energy, then he stretched out his black claw and grabbed toward Jiang Chen.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. In an instant, the man in black who tried to attack Jiang Chen let out a miserable shriek and kneeled down onto the ground. After that, he was crushed into a pile of blood and flesh.

“What?!”

This sudden change truly frightened everyone, including those from Lianyun Castle. Everyone cried out in shock, and the way they looked at this young man in white had changed tremendously.

No one saw how this young man struck. With just a 'humph', he had killed a Heavenly Core demon. This was terrifying, if they hadn't seen it themselves, none of them would ever believe it.

“Who the hell are you?”

The leader of the men in black continued, “How dare you kill someone from the Demon Palace?! What a daring bastard!”

“Looks like you don’t understand what I said.”

Jiang Chen suddenly raised his head, causing two bright beams to shoot out from his eyes. These beams were so sharp that those men in black turned pale from fright.

Swoosh!

The young man in white who was in front of them had suddenly disappeared.

A split second later, the young man reappeared where he originally stood, as if he had never moved, as if he disappearing just now was just a mere illusion. However, what happened next truly shocked every single person from Lianyun Castle.

Plop... plop...

All the men in black fell onto the ground, blood pouring out from their bodies. In fact, they were all dead now, including those few Divine Core demons. None of them were able to escape this.

Haaa!

Witnessing this, the people from Lianyun Castle all gasped at the same time. No one knew where this young man in white came from, it was as if they were looking at a ghost.

Heavens! Just how strong was this young man? How did he do that? Why could none of them see what he did, even though they were standing so close to him?

Even more frightening was the fact that those men in black didn't even let out a single cry before this young man killed them, let alone fighting back. In just a split second, they had all died. This didn't mean that those cruel demon beasts were too weak, it simply meant that this young man was too strong.

The mouths of these three young girls were wide open, they were completely stunned. They had lost all hope just now and were getting ready to face death, but they had never thought that a handsome young man would suddenly come by and kill all the demon beasts, saving them from the ugly fate.

“Young master, thank you for saving our lives!”

A young girl finally responded. She quickly kneeled down before Jiang Chen and said.

“Young master, thank you for saving our lives!”

The other two young girls quickly kneeled down as well, and

started kowtowing at Jiang Chen. In just short amount of time, this young man whose name and origins was still unknown had left a deep everlasting impression in their hearts.

“Stand up.”

Jiang Chen casually said. Then, he unleashed a gentle force from his body and lifted all three girls up. Since he happened to pass by this area and saw demon beasts bullying humans, he had to give them a helping hand.

“Little sister!”

“Lian’er!”

The people of Lianyun Castle stormed up and surrounded all three girls.

“Thank you for saving my little sister, young master! Please accept my gratitude.”

The severely injured Lian Ming immediately kneeled down before Jiang Chen.

“Stand up. You’re a man with courage, take this pill and heal yourself.”

Jiang Chen simply threw a healing pill to Lian Ming. Lian Ming’s

knowledge was quite vast, so just by looking at the color of the pill, he immediately knew it was a priceless pill.

“Young master, this pill is too expensive, I can’t take it!”

Lian Ming couldn’t stay calm anymore.

“Just keep it.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Lian Ming and said. This young man was willing to sacrifice his own life to save his sister, Jiang Chen really liked people like this.

After that, Jiang Chen turned to Lian Haolong and asked, “You’re the Tribe Chief?”

“Yes, I’m Lian Haolong! Greetings, young master!”

Lian Haolong bowed deeply toward Jiang Chen. The formidable strength Jiang Chen portrayed just now caused him to not dare show any impoliteness. Furthermore, a man who could easily give out such a priceless pill must be someone extraordinary. At least, Lianyun Castle couldn’t afford to offend someone like this.

“You must be really worried now, because since I’ve killed those demon beasts, the Demon Palace will most likely come back for revenge.”

Jiang Chen could easily tell what Lian Haolong was thinking about. Of course, it was perfectly normal. As the Tribe Chief, this man had to constantly think about what was best for his tribe.

“Young master has killed men from the Demon Palace, they will not let this matter off easily. However, this matter was actually caused by Lianyun Castle. We’re really grateful for young master’s help, but this Demon Palace is really powerful, so I think young master should leave quickly.”

Lian Haolong let out a long sigh before he spoke. He knew that Lianyun Castle’s doomsday had finally come.

“I, Jiang Chen killed them to save people’s lives, not to harm you. Don’t worry, since I’ve involved myself in this, I’ll solve this problem once and for all. Tell me about the Demon Palace, I will help you eliminate them.”

Jiang Chen said. Jiang Chen’s purpose for coming out was to practice, and his target was to fight powerful demon beasts. Now, this Demon Palace that is bullying his fellow humans had become his target.

“What?!”

Many people cried out in shock. Eliminating the Demon Palace? Just hearing this made them all terrified.

“Young master Jiang, this Demon Palace is really powerful; you

can't afford to offend them!"

Lian Haolong said with a frown on his face.

"Looks like you guys don't need my help. Alright, I'll leave now then. Lianyun Castle can just face this alone."

Jiang Chen glared at Lian Haolong and said. After that, he just turned around and prepared to leave.

"Young master, don't go!"

All the people from Lianyun Castle immediately shouted, stopping Jiang Chen from leaving. If this young man really left, Lianyun Castle would certainly perish, and since this young man's cultivation was so frightening, he might really be able to eliminate the Demon Palace. At least, he was much stronger than anyone from Lianyun Castle. This young man was also their only hope.

"Young master Jiang, this Demon Palace is a power established by demon beasts, and it's really powerful! They have three masters, and all of them are Combat Soul demon beasts. The Lion King, the Wolf King, and the Hawk King. The Lion King is a Mid Combat Soul demon, a really terrifying being. The Demon Palace has been running wild in this mountain range, and all humans here has been badly bullied by them, and we've been unable to do anything to stop them. Tomorrow is the third master, the Hawk King's birthday. The Hawk King is a sex maniac, and we never thought he would actually send his men here to capture our girls. Luckily, young master saved them from this miserable fate!"

Lian Ming explained to Jiang Chen. When he mentioned the Demon Palace, fear and hatred could both be heard in his voice.

“Three Combat Soul demon beasts?”

Hearing that there were three Combat Soul demon beasts in charge of the Demon Palace, Jiang Chen’s eyes were immediately filled with excitement. He now only needed another 400 Dragon Marks to break through to the Combat Soul realm, and these three Combat Soul demon beasts were his key to the Combat Soul realm.



# Chapter 397 – Killing The Hawk King

---

After listening to Lian Haolong's explanation, Jiang Chen finally had some understanding of the Demon Palace; it wasn't just some weak demon power. There were three masters; the Lion King, the Wolf King, and the Hawk King.

The Demon Palace's existence allowed Jiang Chen to understand more about how wild the demon beasts in the Southern Continent were. Back in the Eastern Continent, although demon beasts could be found everywhere as well, it was rare to see a mature power established by them. In other words, the entire Eastern Continent was ruled by humans.

But in the Southern Continent, the demon beasts had a quite mature colony, and they were much more terrifying. The battle between humans and demon beasts had reached a stage where they were like fire and water. There must also be more than one demon power like the Demon Palace in the Southern Continent.

“Do you know where this Demon Palace is located?”

Jiang Chen turned to Lian Haolong and asked.

Jiang Chen's question surprised many of the people from Lianyun Castle. It looked like this young man was really going to destroy the Demon Palace, striking them all with both worry and joy. If Jiang Chen actually could eliminate the Demon Palace for them, that would be great news for all the human tribes in this mountain range.

Initially, the people from Lianyun Castle thought Jiang Chen was just making conversation with them, but judging from how he behaved now, it seemed like he was serious when he said he would destroy them, because after hearing about the strength of the Demon Palace's three masters, no signs of nervousness could be seen on his face, he still maintained the same calm expression, and they could tell he wasn't faking it. With that, they knew this young man had the ability to deal with the Demon Palace. Killing those men in black just now also helped them come to this conclusion.

Although the people from Lianyun Castle lived in a remote mountain range, they weren't concealed from the outside events; they still knew what was going on outside. The Southern Continent was a vast land that produced many geniuses. For example, the Nangong family or Profound River Palace, many geniuses came from these superpowers and who had extraordinary abilities. Although the Demon Palace was a strong power as well, these geniuses wouldn't take them seriously at all.

In the minds of these people, perhaps this young man whose origins were unknown was an incredible genius from one of those superpowers, and if this genius wanted to destroy the Demon Palace, it was highly possible that all those demon beasts in the Demon Palace would soon face their deaths.

“Young master Jiang, we don't know where exactly the Demon Palace is located. All this time, they've just come here to bully us.”

Tribe Chief Lian Haolong shook his head and said. Poor things, they had been bullied by the Demon Palace for two years, but they

still didn't know where they came from. This was such a sad fact.

“Never mind. Lian Ming, throw these dead bodies away, throw them to a distinct location where their friends can find them. I believe it won't be long before the Demon Palace comes here in a rage, so I'll just wait for them here.”

Jiang Chen told Lian Ming.

“Understood.”

Lian Ming replied. After witnessing Jiang Chen's strength and his sister being saved, Jiang Chen had become a mighty existence in his mind. He could only look up to Jiang Chen, and obey his orders sincerely.

Without hesitating, Lian Ming called for help from a few other people from Lianyun Castle, then carried all dead bodies out of the tribe.

Within Lianyun Castle, with great hospitality from Lian Haolong, Jiang Chen was given a quiet place to rest. Within the courtyard, Jiang Chen simply pulled over a chair and sat down with his legs crossed, his appearance very relaxed.

Compared to Jiang Chen's calm and relaxed appearance, no one from Lianyun Castle was able to remain calm, including their Tribe Chief, Lian Haolong. All of them were restless and uneasy, their minds troubled with all kinds of thoughts.

They knew what would come next for Lianyun Castle. They had become enemies of the Demon Palace, something that they never thought would happen even in their wildest dreams. For them, this was just insane.

Although they knew there was an incredible genius residing in their tribe right now, that wasn't enough to calm their minds, because the Demon Palace had cast a powerful shadow in their hearts during the past two years. It was impossible for them to get rid of that dark shadow in such a short amount of time.

An hour later.

In the distant horizon, a thick black smoke suddenly appeared. It was moving quickly, and it was getting closer and closer to Lianyun Castle with each passing second. While flying toward its destination, it unleashed explosive sounds.

“They’re fast.”

Jiang Chen casually threw his glance over to the black smoke. He could sense a powerful demonic aura hidden within. With that, Jiang Chen couldn't help but sneer. It only took the Demon Palace an hour to react, much faster than Jiang Chen had expected.

“Look! Demon Palace is here!”

“Oh heavens, what a powerful energy! Is that pressure coming

from a Combat Soul existence? Don't tell me the master of the Demon Palace came here personally?"

"Where is that genius, Jiang Chen? Only he can defend us from the Demon Palace!"

.....

Lianyun Castle was quickly struck with panic. Everyone watched the approaching black smoke, their breaths becoming increasingly heavier. The gap between their strength was too huge, and not only that, all demon beasts were cruel and brutal. The people of Lianyun Castle who had been bullied by them for two years just didn't have any way to fight them; they hadn't even thought about fighting back.

Boom!

Finally, following an ear-splitting explosive sound, the black smoke had finally arrived above Lianyun Castle. After that, it exploded, revealing several hundred men dressed in black. All these men were in human form, meaning that the weakest among them were at least at the Heavenly Core realm.

Hundreds of demon beasts who could transform into human form and the weakest were at least in the Heavenly Core realm. There were many Divine Core demon beasts as well. The leading man was a thin man with an aquiline nose, and he had a pair of sharp eyes, making him seem very ruthless.

Just by standing there, he caused the people from Lianyun Castle to breath heavily. The beastly energy overflowing from his body was incredibly terrifying. This man with an aquiline nose looked like a thirty-year-old man, and he was none other than the Demon Palace's third master, the Hawk King!

The Hawk King looked over at the people of Lianyun Castle with a cold gaze, then with a fierce voice, he said, "People of Lianyun Castle, you're a bunch of daring bastards! How dare you kill men from the Demon Palace?! It looks like you're all tired of living in this world! Since that is the case, I will grant your wish today; I will personally kill every single man and woman here; I will leave no human alive!"

"Haha, kill all these men, but don't kill the women! They can still be treats for third master's birthday celebration tomorrow!"

A man standing next to the Hawk King burst into laughter. He felt no shame in flattering the Hawk King.

"You savage beasts, who gave you the audacity to attack the home of humans?! You all deserve to die miserable deaths!"

Right at this moment, a mysterious voice sounded out from Lianyun Castle. After that, a handsome young man appeared in the middle of the sky and stood opposite of the Hawk King.

"Who are you? Are you the one who killed our men?"

The Hawk King was startled for a moment upon seeing Jiang Chen. With his senses, he quickly found out that this young man in front of him was no ordinary man. Furthermore, he knew very much about Lianyun Castle. Based on the way Lianyun Castle handled matters in the past, they just didn't have the courage to kill the Demon Palace's men. So, this young man in white was obviously the one who killed his people.

“Who I am is not what is important. The important thing is that I killed those demon beasts, and since you are here, I will kill you as well, just like how I killed them.”

Jiang Chen said in a most casual manner.

Such boastful words immediately startled the ones from the Demon Palace, but they quickly recovered and burst into laughter.

“Haha, this is hysterical, where did this stupid guy come from? I wonder if his hair has fully grown down there! He truly said he is going to kill all of us?! He just doesn't know what death is!”

“Brat, I'm sure there's something wrong with your brain. I can see you have amazing talent, but don't think you can look down on everything because of that! Our third master is a mighty warrior at the Early Combat Soul realm; he can easily kill with just a single hand!”

“Third master, let's not waste our breath on him. This guy has killed our men, that's a crime that can only be paid for with his death! Let's kill him before slaughtering the Lianyun Tribe; then

we'll bring all the women back!"

.....

All demon beasts from the Demon Palace were howling. No one took Jiang Chen seriously.

"Brat, if you kneel down before me and kowtow, then crawl underneath my legs, I might consider giving you a quick death."

The Hawk King pointed at Jiang Chen and spoke with a prideful expression.

"Is that so? Let me see if your crotch is tough enough."

Jiang Chen said with a sneer. Without seemingly moving, Jiang Chen disappeared from where he stood, and when he reappeared, he was standing right in front of the Hawk King.

"Not good!"

The Hawk King's expression immediately changed, but it was too late. All he could feel was a strong breeze sweeping toward his crotch.

Bam!



Jiang Chen had sent out a powerful kick right after reappearing. The kick was surrounded by waves of golden energy, and it struck the center of the Hawk King's crotch. It was a kick containing almost all of Jiang Chen's strength, and it could easily shatter a mountain peak.

Because of that, the Hawk King was like a kite with no string in the middle of a powerful storm. He was sent thousands of meters flying from this kick. He bent his body and held onto his crotch with both hands while letting out a miserable shriek.

Haa!

Every single person who saw this scene couldn't help but gasp. Many men felt a tight sensation in their crotch. A chill struck their bodies.

"He's done for."

Lian Cong shook his head. It looked like the sex maniac would have no more opportunities to release his lust.

"Fuck, that kick was truly fierce!"

Many people felt pain for the Hawk King. Regardless of human or demon beast, that body part was the most vulnerable, and having it suffer from such a severe blow; even the formidable Hawk King would be unable to take it.

“Bastard!”

The Hawk King let out a miserable shriek from the top of his lungs, then his body swayed, and he transformed into his original form, a huge Black Hawk over 30 meters tall. He flapped his wings and pounced toward Jiang Chen with tremendous power.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen simply remained standing where he had always stood. Right as the Hawk King was about to hit him, he forcefully unleashed the True Dragon Palm.

Boom!

The Hawk King was only at the Early Combat Soul realm, so he was no match for Jiang Chen, let alone Jiang Chen’s True Dragon Palm. Under this attack, the Hawk King’s enormous body exploded into an enormous bloody mist, and he died miserably with the chance to cry out.

# Chapter 398 – Wiping Out The Demon Palace

---

This was an extremely shocking scene! A single attack killed an early Combat Soul demon beast, the third master of the Demon Palace! Even more shocking, it was a young man!

“Oh heavens, what did I just see?”

“Dead? He killed the third master?”

“This is terrifying, just how strong is he? That’s a Combat Soul demon beast, but he just killed him with a single strike! This is too shocking, am I dreaming right now?”

.....

All the people of Lianyun Castle felt as if they were dreaming. A young man had just killed the third master who had been bullying them all this time!

Right at this moment, regardless of who it was, those from Lianyun Castle or those from the Demon Palace, they all looked at this young man with a graceful bearing in fear.

“You-, you-... You killed our third master?!”

A man dressed in black roared at Jiang Chen. His voice was

clearly trembling, as he was scared of Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen was obviously not bothered by these men in black. He stretched his arm forward and retrieved a golden demon soul from the Hawk King's dead body.

“An Early Combat Soul demon soul, I think it should be able to help me form another one hundred dragon marks. If I can kill all three masters of the Demon Palace, I'll be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm.”

A faint smile appeared on Jiang Chen's face. After that, he unleashed the True Dragon Flame from his palm and engulfed the golden demon soul. With the intense heat coming from the flame, the demon soul started melting and was being absorbed by Jiang Chen.

In just a few breaths time, Jiang Chen had completely absorbed the demon soul. Just as he expected, this demon soul had given him 100 new dragon marks.

Jiang Chen currently had a total of 4,700 Dragon Marks. He just needed another 300 to reach his target of 5,000 Dragon Marks. Now, his next target was clear; the two other masters of the Demon Palace!

Jiang Chen liked doing things like this, as it was a win-win situation. Not only could he get rid of these demons that bullied the humans, but he would also be able to get what he wanted.

“Boss, the third palace master was killed, what should we do now?”

A demon beast whispered to his leader.

“Let’s return and inform the palace master about this; I’m sure he’ll break all the bones in this guy’s body and then burn him to ashes.”

The leader of the demons gnashed his teeth in fury as he spoke.

After that, the several hundred demon beasts jumped into the sky and turned back into black smoke, leaving the place. All demon beasts were cruel and brutal beings by nature, but at the same time, they weren’t stupid. This young man who had suddenly appeared in Lianyun Castle had the ability to kill their third palace master, meaning they were no match for him. If they truly fought him, they would only meet certain death.”

“Haha, since you’re all here you might as well just give me your lives!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. Following that, he unleashed the True Dragon Palm. All these cruel demon beasts deserved to die, and since Jiang Chen had gotten himself involved in this matter, he might as well kill them all and annihilate the Demon Palace completely, helping this mountain range get rid of this disaster once and for all.

Rumble...

The gigantic blood-red dragon claw descended from the sky and grabbed onto the black smoke trying to leave.

Argh!

Miserable shrieks could immediately be heard from within the black smoke. In an instant, the sky was filled with a bloody mist and torn off body parts fell. In just a short amount of time, the sky had become a living hell.

These demon beasts were too weak compared to Jiang Chen. With just a single strike, more than seventy of them were killed, while the rest were all severely injured.

“Hmph! All of you must die!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he simply waved his hand, unleashing countless dazzling golden beams. Each beam looked like a sharp sword, and they weaved together to form a gigantic golden net. After that, he simply threw it forward.

Puchi...

Ahhh!!

None of the demon beasts who survived the first attack could

defend themselves from this one. Their bodies were sliced by the net and were instantly killed. In their eyes, Jiang Chen was like a gigantic mammoth while they were just some poor little ants.

If a mammoth desired to step on a couple of ants and kill them, regardless of how many ants there were, nothing would be able to change their ill fate. It was all because of the gigantic gap between their strength.

“Come over here!”

Jiang Chen stretched his arm forward and pulled the leader of the men in black to him. This was the only survivor, but his face was extremely pale and looked awful.

This black-clothed man’s face was covered with fear, as the scene he faced was extremely terrifying. The Demon Palace had been running wild in this area and had never suffered any heavy blows. In his mind, this young man wasn’t a human, but a devil. In just less than one minute, this young man had killed every single demon beast, and he was the last survivor.

“Spare... please spare my life...”

The black-clothed man started begging for his life. Under the pressure of Jiang Chen’s energy, this was the first time he felt like such a tiny existence.

“Bring me to the Demon Palace.

Jiang Chen grabbed the black-clothed man's neck, then they both simply disappeared from the scene.

The people from Lianyun Castle didn't wake up from their shock until long after Jiang Chen left. They couldn't stop thinking about the scene they just saw; it felt as if they were dreaming. If not for those piles of body parts in front of them, none of them would believe that this was real.

“What a formidable young man, he must be a peerless genius from some superpower.”

“I'm sure he's a genius from the Profound River Palace who is on a journey to gain experience. We're lucky the Profound River Palace and the Demon King Palace are long-time enemies, as the Demon Palace is a power ruled by the Demon King Palace. Perhaps this young man truly is from the Profound River Palace.”

“Regardless of which superpower he came from, they're all existences beyond our reach. I only hope he can eliminate the Demon Palace, wipe out our biggest threat.”

.....

The people from Lianyun Castle were unable to calm themselves down for a long time. Today's events were like something straight out of a fantasy; it was something that wouldn't even happen in their wildest dreams.



Jiang Chen was controlling the black-clothed man, so he dared not neglect his orders. He brought Jiang Chen straight to the Demon Palace.

The Demon Palace was located in a valley right in the depths of this remote mountain range. It was a valley that was with fog, and it was reeking of demonic energy. The landscape of the valley was dangerous, but the scenery was beautiful, and the valley was rich in natural Yuan energy. It was a perfect place for cultivation.

“Young master, the Demon Palace is here.”

The black-clothed man pointed at the valley in front of them and spoke in an obsequious manner. He feared that if his voice was any louder, he might provoke this malefic and die.

“En, good.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head with a satisfied expression.

The black-clothed man was thrilled upon seeing that Jiang Chen was satisfied. He said, “If that’s the case, can young master spare my life?”

“I’ll spare you a quick death.”

Jiang Chen squeezed his palm, breaking the black-clothed man’s

neck. After that, he simply threw the corpse down onto the ground.

Clang!

Jiang Chen waved his hand and retrieved the Heavenly Saint Sword. He swung the sword, causing it to produce sharp sounds. With a sneer on his face, Jiang Chen warmed up slightly, preparing for the grand slaughter.

Swoosh!

He then raised the Heavenly Saint Sword high up into the air and injected his Yuan energy into it, causing it to turn into a gigantic sword more than 30 meters long. As the Heavenly Saint Sword let out a joyful cry, Jiang Chen simply swung it with tremendous force, unleashing a huge sword beam toward the valley. It cut through the fog and continued down onto the Demon Palace.

Boom!

A world-shaking explosive sound broke out in the silent valley. With that, a devastating energy swept across the entire valley, sending terrifying black smoke into the sky. This powerful attack instantly caused rows of buildings to collapse and turn into dust.

Miserable blood-curdling shrieks sounded out from the valley. Someone obviously was unlucky enough to get killed by Jiang Chen's sword attack.

“Who did this?”

“Who dares attack the Demon Palace?!”

“Damn it; the Demon Palace is severely damaged!”

.....

The entire Demon Palace had become restless. Powerful existences started shooting out from the valley, and in the blink of an eye, the entire sky above the Demon Palace was filled with these powerful existences. Some of these powerful existences were demon beasts who had transformed into human shape, and some were in their original, gigantic shapes. It was a terrifying scene.

When the people of the Demon Palace came out from the valley, they immediately saw Jiang Chen. This uninvited young man dressed in white who had a longsword in his hand was obviously the culprit, the one who destroyed the Demon Palace.

“Who are you?! What a daring bastard!”

A Late Divine Core demon shouted at Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

He was answered with a sword strike. It was a strike he was

unable to dodge, this demon could only see a bright light shine in his eyes, and after that, there was nothing, as his head had already separated from his neck and fallen from the sky. He didn't even have the chance to respond, as he was instantly killed.

“Today I will destroy this place, and I will leave no survivors!”

Jiang Chen announced his purpose with a loud voice. Without showing any mercy, he charged into the center of the demons; then he started ferociously swinging his Heavenly Saint Sword around. With every swing of his sword, a huge amount of blood mist would splash into the sky. Many of those demons were killed instantly without any chance to fight back.

All by himself, Jiang Chen was going to wipe out this power established by demons. He wanted to kill all of them; that was his purpose today.

“Ahh!!”

“Someone is slaughtering all demons at the Demon Palace, hurry up and inform both masters!”

The Demon Palace was in havoc right now. For them, the arrival of Jiang Chen was their doomsday.

Bang...

The entire sky above the valley was filled with sword energies.

Blood splashed everywhere, and corpses fell from the sky. The pungent smell of blood filled every part of the air around here. The sword energies resembled the grim reaper's scythe as they mercilessly took the demons' lives.

“This is ridiculous!”

Right at this moment, a furious cry sounded out from the valley like a sudden clap of thunder. After that, two bright beams shot up into the sky and arrived in front of Jiang Chen. Two adult men with muscular bodies were revealed.

One of the men was wearing a golden armor; he had thick golden hair like that of a lion. As for the other man, he wore a black robe and had a pair of vicious eyes, causing him to look like a wolf.

Both of them possessed powerful strength. One was an Early Combat Soul demon, while the other was a Mid Combat Soul demon. Without even thinking about it, Jiang Chen already knew who they were. They couldn't be anyone other than the last two masters of the Demon Palace – The Lion King and the Wolf King.

# Chapter 399 – Annihilation

---

The sky was filled with rainbow colored lights as well as thick smoke. At the same time, the atmosphere surrounding them was saturated with the pungent smell of blood. The misty white fog that had always covered the valley had been completely dispersed. Right now, the entire valley resembled a fiery hell. Severed body parts could be seen everywhere, collapsed building smeared with fresh blood; this place had become a living hell!

All demons from the Demon Palace looked at this scene with ghastly expressions on their faces, and when they recalled the slaughter just now, they couldn't help but feel extremely frightened. The Lion King and the Wolf King were both trembling in fury as they looked at what had happened. They threw their vicious gazes onto Jiang Chen. This uninvited guest had nearly destroyed the Demon Palace's foundation with an irresistible force, killing countless demons.

This was a huge challenge to the Demon Palace! No, this couldn't be considered a challenge any longer; this was an insult! As the masters of the Demon Palace, the Lion King and the Wolf King both felt a strong desire to rip this mysterious young man into a thousand pieces, only then could they appease their fury.

“Did you do all this?”

The Lion King asked with a loud voice. His voice was so loud that it echoed through the entire valley, showing just how angry he was. He knew it was this young man who had done all this, but he still couldn't help but ask, because he wanted to know what this

young man was thinking; why he dared come to the Demon Palace and act so recklessly.

“What do you think?”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. With his senses, he was easily able to see how strong the Lion King and the Wolf King was. The Wolf King was only an Early Combat Soul demon like the Hawk King. An opponent like this was one Jiang Chen could defeat with just a single strike. On the other side, although the Lion King was a Mid Combat Soul demon, Jiang Chen had killed many existences at that level. Furthermore, after absorbing the Dimensional Purplesand Crystal and the Hawk King’s demon soul, Jiang Chen’s combat strength had increased by a lot. He was now at the peak of the Divine Core real. Even without using the Heavenly Saint Sword, he was still confident he could kill the Lion King. Today, he was going to wipe out this Demon Palace completely.

“Who are you? Who gave you the audacity to attack the Demon Palace?!”

Wolf King asked with a loud voice.

“As a power established by demons, your Demon Palace could easily live together with humans in a peaceful manner, but you did not want that. You have cruelly and brutally bullied us humans, and because of that, you are someone I must kill. Your third master, the Hawk King, is now dead, and I am the one who killed him. Next, I will kill you two.”

Jiang Chen said with a calm voice. There was only a cold and indifferent expression on his face.

“What?! You killed our third brother?!”

The Wolf King immediately cried out in shock upon hearing what Jiang Chen said. The Demon Palace had three masters, and it wasn't difficult to tell that they all had a good relationship. Now, when they heard that their third brother had died, they were naturally very angry.

“Don't be so impatient; you're both going to meet him soon.”

Jiang Chen slowly raised the Heavenly Saint Sword and pointed it at the Lion King and the Hawk King. The tip of the sword was blinking with dazzling energy, and it looked amazingly beautiful. However, underneath this beautiful look, there was an endless hell. In the eyes of Jiang Chen's enemies, the Heavenly Saint Sword was a hellish sword that only death.

“Hmph! All human geniuses just simply put on airs and looked down on others! You think you're so talented that you can disregard anything? I don't care which superpower you came from, since you're daring enough to intrude the Demon Palace, the only thing that awaits you is certain death! I will cut you a thousand times; then I'll pull your soul out and inflict pain you've never before experienced before finally sending you to hell! I will avenge my third brother!”



The Lion King coldly harrumphed. After that, he simply unleashed his energy, causing his golden armor to dazzle. In the following second, he stretched his arm forward and unleashed a gigantic golden lion claw toward Jiang Chen.

Facing this Lion King's powerful attack, Jiang Chen's expression remained calm. He casually waved his arm and unleashed a sword beam from the Heavenly Saint Sword. It was an extremely brilliant sword energy containing tremendous force, more than enough to slice through the void.

Puchi!

The gigantic lion claw was no match for the Heavenly Saint Sword's sword beam; it was instantly cut in half and disappeared.

“What?!”

The Lion King was incredibly shocked, and the way he looked at Jiang Chen changed. This young man with just a mere Divine Core cultivation base was far more frightening than he could imagine. A full force attack unleashed by him, a Mid Combat Soul existence, had just been destroyed by a casual sword strike from this young man!

“If that's all you got, your Demon Palace will perish this day.”

Jiang Chen said in a casual manner.

“Second brother, this guy is really strong, let’s turn back to our original form and attack him together!”

The Lion King shouted at the Wolf King. Without hesitation, he transformed into a huge lion. His body was over 40 meters tall, and his body was fully covered with golden scales. He looked incredibly mighty, and he gave off a powerful demonic energy.

Aowuu!

On the other side, the Wolf King had also completed his transformation. He had turned into a black wolf. After transforming into his original form, he howled toward the sky, dispersing all the black clouds hanging over their heads.

Po!

The Lion King opened his mouth and spat out a fireball toward Jiang Chen. The fireball immediately grew bigger as it left his mouth, and it reached Jiang Chen in the blink of an eye.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he threw out a punch. When his fist collided with the fireball, the fireball was shattered into several hundred tiny flames.

Swoosh!

With great speed, the Wolf King's claw cut toward Jiang Chen's face.

“Too weak.”

Jiang Chen simply shook his head. Just before the attack reached his face, he forcefully stretched out his palm and grabbed the Wolf King's claw tightly, and he held onto it like a strong metal clamp.

Jiang Chen stood still like Mt. Tai, the Wolf King's attack unable to make him move even a single inch. It wasn't until the Wolf King fought Jiang Chen face to face that he understood just how strong this young man was. However, it was too bad, after getting caught by Jiang Chen, he would no longer have the chance to escape.

Crack!

Jiang Chen squeezed his palm with tremendous force, instantly crushing the metal-like wolf claw.

Aowuu!

The Wolf King issued a miserable shriek. It unleashed all its Yuan energy and attempted to counter-attack, but in front of Jiang Chen, the attack was useless.

With an indifferent expression, using his other hand, Jiang Chen

stabbed the Heavenly Saint Sword upwards, impaling the Wolf King's throat. The sword didn't stop after impaling the throat; it continued until it came out from the Wolf King's head. With that, the Wolf King's gigantic body struggled violently before finally becoming motionless.

An extremely sharp sword energy shot out from the Heavenly Saint Sword, causing the Wolf King's corpse to explode, and its blood to splash all over the place, with the exception of where Jiang Chen stood. After that, a golden demon soul fell out and landed right in the center of Jiang Chen's palm.

“Second brother!”

Witnessing the death of the Wolf King, the Lion King immediately let out a furious roar.

All the demons from the Demon Palace were struck with great fear. No one had ever thought that this young man could be this formidable, not even the Lion King. The Early Combat Soul Wolf King had just been killed with such ease; he didn't even have the chance to resist.

Indeed, this was a frightening moment. The Lion King started hesitating, and the way he looked at Jiang Chen was now filled with fear. Even with his Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, he feared this mysterious young man.

Even if the Lion King didn't know much about Jiang Chen, he sure understood the Wolf King's strength. Even he was unable to

kill the Wolf King so easily. This young man had done something he was unable to do, and with such ease. That could only mean that this young man was stronger than him.

“It is your turn now.”

Jiang Chen dashed toward the Lion King. He didn't want to waste too much time with this Demon Palace, so he decided to wrap it up quickly.

Swoosh!

Fast! He was extremely fast! The Lion King could only see a flicker before a sword that would tear his life away approached his face.

Facing with such an incredibly fast attack, the Lion King was unable even to counter attack. All he could do was defend himself. As a demon beast, he was by nature very formidable in terms of strength and defense. With the addition of the Yuan energy barrier that surrounded his body, no ordinary man would be able to break through his defense.

It was too bad; this incredible defense was only effective in front of ordinary warriors. Jiang Chen was no ordinary warrior.

The Heavenly Saint Sword was an invincible weapon that could cut through anything. It simply cut through the Yuan energy barrier unleashed by the Lion King without even slowing down.

“No!”

The Lion King felt an extremely dangerous aura. He never thought his opponent's sword could be so powerful. Not only that, with its great speed, it was too late for him to do anything.

Puchi!

Without any doubts, the Lion King followed the Wolf King's footsteps. The Heavenly Saint Sword had impaled his body and taken his life away.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he forcefully sliced the Lion King's corpse in half and retrieved a demon soul with his hand.

All three masters of the Demon Palace were finally dead, and the infamous Demon Palace had been completely wiped out.

With the death of the two Combat Soul masters, all the demons lost their fighting spirit. They were now looking at Jiang Chen as if they were looking at a ghost.

“None of you shall remain alive!”

Jiang Chen had a heart of stone when facing demons like these;

he didn't want to spare any of them. He swung the Heavenly Saint Sword around, causing fresh blood to be sent everywhere.

A few minutes later, the entire valley was filled with flames as far as the eye could see. Jiang Chen had set fire to the Demon Palace. In just a few minutes, he had killed most of the demons here. Only a handful of them had managed to escape.

After the scorching flames had burned down the last building belonging to the Demon Palace, Jiang Chen turned around and left the place.

The Demon Palace was considered a pretty strong and famous demon power, but today, it had been annihilated by someone. Everyone and everything was gone, and news about this would soon spread out. It wasn't difficult to imagine how big of a storm would be created when news about this got out.

Half an hour after Jiang Chen left, many people arrived at the Demon Palace from all directions. All these men were from different human tribes that lived in this mountain range. They didn't know the exact location of the Demon Palace before this, but since the battle made so much noise, they were able to find this place with ease. When they saw the miserable scene in the valley, each and every single one of them was struck with great shock.

“The Demon Palace has been annihilated; it is now gone! Haha!”

An old man burst into laughter. He was so happy that tears started running down from his eyes. No words could describe how

happy he truly was. This old man was Lianyun Castle's Tribe Chief, Lian Haolong.



# Chapter 400 – Wonderhand Thousandtune – Wu Ningzhu

---

Realizing that it was the white-clothed young man who had saved their lives, Lian Haolong quickly kneeled down and kowtowed toward a random direction. Many people were curious about who this guy was kowtowing at, but Lian Haolong just ignored them and repeated the same process nine times before standing back up.

Lian Haolong wasn't the only person who was excited, all the people who lived in this mountain range felt the same kind of uncontrollable excitement. During the past two years, the Demon Palace had done all kinds of evil deeds and had been bullying them. When faced with these foul demons, the humans could only hide their anger and do absolutely nothing.

They had dreamt about the Demon Palace one day getting annihilated, but they never thought it would come true today.

“Who? Who did this? The Demon Palace has been destroyed!”

“That person is our savior, that person has done a great deed for this territory! Since the Demon Palace has been annihilated, we won't have to worry about them bullying us any longer!”

“We don't know who the hero who annihilated the Demon Palace is. If I find out who it was, I will certainly put up a statue of that person and worship it every day!”

“Could this be a sign of the humans in the Southern Continent declaring war with the demons? Although the Demon Palace wasn’t established long ago, they are a power that is directly ruled by the Demon King Palace. Since it has now been destroyed, I’m sure the Demon King Palace won’t let this matter go easily.”

.....

Everyone was excited, but some of them started worrying as well. The humans and demons of the Southern Continent had been enemies for a long time, and the different powers from both sides had never been able to get along well. Not only that, the demons of this land were powerful, the ones from the Eastern Continent can’t even compare.

On the human side, the Profound River Palace was the strongest power. On the demon beasts’ side, they were all led by the Demon King Palace. Because of these two supreme powers on both sides, true havoc had not once been wreaked in the Southern Continent.

However, no one knew that the annihilation of the Demon Palace would trigger an all-out war between the two species.

As for what kind of consequences this incident might bring, Jiang Chen wasn’t concerned about that. As of now, Jiang Chen had reached a place over 5,000 kilometers away from that mountain range.

Jiang Chan was sitting on a huge milky colored stone with his legs crossed within a quiet valley. After regulating his breathing,

he finally opened his eyes. At this point of time, Jiang Chen's aura was much stronger than before.

“I now have a total of 4,950 Dragon Marks after absorbing all three demons souls, it'll only take me another 50 Dragon Marks to break through to the Combat Soul realm, and if I wanted, I could have easily formed those fifty Dragon Marks and broken through to the next realm... but why am I feeling this oppressive aura now?”

Jiang Chen thought to himself with a frown on his face. His current journey of cultivation was similar to the one in his previous life. He didn't face those bottlenecks that other cultivators had to face, as long as he had sufficient energy, he would be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm immediately; he didn't need to learn anything new.

Initially, Jiang Chen was planning on breaking through to the next realm straight after absorbing all the demon souls, but he stopped at the last moment. The reason he stopped was that when he tried breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, he felt an oppressive aura in his body, and this oppressive aura stopped him from transforming his Divine Core into a Combat Soul.

What caused Jiang Chen to be even more shocked was that this oppressive aura was no stranger to him. It was an aura he felt when he broke through to the Minor Saint realm and Great Saint realm. It signified that a Heavenly Tribulation was coming!

“Damn it! Don't tell me daddy has to face Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm?! This is pure

bullshit!”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but curse. He didn't know whether he should laugh or cry at this situation.

Heavenly Tribulation was something far away from him; he didn't think he'd face it this quickly. In the entire Saint Origin realm, there were only a handful of people capable of facing Heavenly Tribulation, but at the same time, Heavenly Tribulation was something that every single peak Combat Emperor warrior dreamed about. This was because after passing the Heavenly Tribulation, they would be able to break through to the Minor Saint realm. However, Heavenly Tribulation terrified all Combat Emperor warriors at the same time, as the survival rate was extremely low. Only those who successfully survived the Heavenly Tribulation would become saints, and those who failed would perish.

Facing Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm was something that had never happened before. Jiang Chen did witness the Flood Dragon facing Heavenly Tribulation, but those circumstances were a bit different, as it faced Heavenly Tribulation because it was going to evolve from the source.

Heavenly Tribulation would only be attracted when an existence that could defy the Heavens' order appeared. It would send down its punishment, as the Heavens was the only existence that ruled over everything. It would never allow anything that could defy its order to exist.

In Jiang Chen's current life, since he had decided to cultivate the Dragon Transformation skill, the path he walked was destined to be a path that defied the Heavens. And now, when he was about to break through to the Combat Soul realm, the Heavens was finally alerted and decided to punish him.

“This aura is really strong; I think the Heavenly Tribulation will come within the next two days. Although it's bullshit that I have to face Heavenly Tribulation now, I still look forward to it.”

An excited expression emerged onto Jiang Chen's face. Although the Heavenly Tribulation was something terrifying, Jiang Chen was still looking forward to facing it. Even though he was the once greatest Saint underneath the Heavens, he had never faced the Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm in his past life.

After that, Jiang Chen left the valley and flew toward one of the nearest cities. He was soon going to face the Heavenly Tribulation, so he didn't want to put too much pressure on himself. He was going to relax now.

Dancing Sun City!

This city was considered famous in the Southern Continent, but compared to Nangong City, it was still far behind.

It was a lively day in Dancing Sun City today, and the city was packed with people. After leaving the valley, Jiang Chen came straight to this city.

A huge square was built right in the center of the Dancing Sun City. Today, a tall golden altar stood tall right in the center of this huge square, and numerous treasures were placed on top of this altar. All these treasure emitted bright golden lights, dazzling all those who stared at them.

It was an hour before noon, but the square was packed with people. It was bustling with noise and excitement.

Jiang Chen's curiosity brought him to the square, and he was trying to figure out what was going on.

“Brother, could you tell me what the purpose of that altar is?”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward a cultivator beside him and asked.

“Little brother, are you trying to make fun of me? This is the Dancing Sun City's greatest event, and you have no idea what is going on?”

The cultivator looked at Jiang Chen in awe, as if he was looking at something incredibly rare.

“I just arrived in this city, so I have no clue what this is.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“I see. Today is the ancestral worshipping ceremony for the Wu Family. The Wonderhand Thousandtune – Wu Ningzhu will come here personally and host this event, that’s why so many people are attracted here.”

The cultivator explained. When mentioned Wu Ningzhu’s name, an admiring look emerged in his eyes.

“Wonderhand Thousandtune Wu Ningzhu? Who’s that?”

Jiang Chen asked in a serious tone. His question immediately attracted countless glares, as if they were looking at an idiot.

“The fuck? Brother, are you here to waste my time? Do you really not know who Wonderhand Thousandtune Wu Ningzhu is? Are you really a human?”

The cultivator felt a strong desire to punch Jiang Chen. Let alone this Dancing Sun City, even in the Southern Continent; it was incredibly rare to find someone who doesn’t know about Wu Ningzhu.

Ugh...

Jiang Chen was astounded by the surrounding peoples’ reaction. He knew he was being despised. But, he truly had no idea who this Wu Ningzhu was...

“The holy maiden and number one genius of the Profound River Palace, the prettiest girl in the Southern Continent. With the title of Wonderhand Myriadtune, everyone in this land knows about her.”

Someone else showed Jiang Chen the lights. He spoke with an admiring look in his eyes. She was the most beautiful girl in the Southern Continent, a girl countless men dreamed about.

Jiang Chen finally understood. He never thought he would meet such a person when just passing by the Dancing Sun City. The holy maiden, the number one genius of the Profound River Palace, the prettiest girl in the Southern Continent; Wonderhand Thousandtune – Wu Ningzhu! Each one of these titles was enough to push a person to the top of the world, to be at the center of the land.

Furthermore, the Profound River Palace had attracted Jiang Chen’s attention. They were involved in the Nangong family’s internal conflict, and since he was here, he might as well stay back and witness the bearing of this holy maiden of the Profound River Palace.

“It’s really fortunate for the Wu family to give birth to such a genius. This city wasn’t named Dancing Sun City before, it only got that name because of the young lady, [Wu Ningzhu](#).”

[TL: Wu Ningzhu – The surname Wu (舞) means dance]

“That’s right, the Wu family’s young lady is brimming with talent. She was accepted into the Profound River Palace when she



was still just a young child. I heard that Wu Ningzhu broke through to the Late Combat Soul realm not long ago, that's why she purposely came back this time to worship her ancestors. For the Wu family, this is an ultimate glory.”

“Truly incredible! I think Wu Ningzhu is only twenty years old now, but she has broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm! Such insane talent, I can't even begin to imagine it!”

.....

Every part of the square was bustling with noise and excitement. When the Wu family was mentioned, everyone had the same admiring expression. The Wu family was just a small family in Dancing Sun City, but because of Wu Ningzhu, the current Wu family became number one in the Dancing Sun City, and even changed its name.

There was a saying that when a person reached the top, all friends and family would be there with that person. This was well portrayed by the Wu family.

As for Wu Ningzhu herself, she was the dream girl of many men. The reason why this ancestor worshipping ceremony was so lively was mostly because of Wu Ningzhu, as she was going to appear. Many people even came from far away just to witness this prettiest girl of the Southern Continent.

This was a chance that only happened once in a lifetime, and no one was willing to miss it.

“Wu Ningzhu, that’s a nice name. Since she has the title of the prettiest girl in the Southern Continent, I wonder what she looks like.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. Initially, he just wanted to rest in the city and prepare himself for the Heavenly Tribulation, but since there was such a grand event, he might as well stand among the crowd and wait for Wu Ningzhu to appear.

The minutes slowly ticked away. Waiting for someone was a long process. The square was packed with people, but no one ever showed any signs of impatience, because as long as they could witness Wu Ningzhu’s beauty, they were willing to wait for months, let alone a few minutes or hours.

An hour passed by in the blink of an eye. The sun had climbed to the middle of the sky, and it was now noon. That meant the Wu family’s ancestor worshipping ceremony was going to start.

Suddenly, some sounds could be heard from the sky above. After that, the entire sky was filled with golden lights. Some people in luxurious looking clothes then appeared following that.

“Look, the people of the Wu family are here, the ancestor worshipping ceremony is starting!”

“Where is Wu Ningzhu? Is she here?”

“Be patient, Wu Ningzhu is the finale; she won’t appear so early. Just stay calm and keep waiting.”